Style and its function: the poetics of argument of Plato's Phaedo

Davies, Tania Louise

The copyright of this thesis rests with the author and no quotation from it or information derived from it may be published without proper acknowledgement.

END USER LICENCE AGREEMENT

This work is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution-NonCommercial-NoDerivatives 4.0 International licence. https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/

You are free to:
- Share: to copy, distribute and transmit the work

Under the following conditions:
- Attribution: You must attribute the work in the manner specified by the author (but not in any way that suggests that they endorse you or your use of the work).
- Non Commercial: You may not use this work for commercial purposes.
- No Derivative Works - You may not alter, transform, or build upon this work.

Any of these conditions can be waived if you receive permission from the author. Your fair dealings and other rights are in no way affected by the above.

Take down policy

If you believe that this document breaches copyright please contact librarypure@kcl.ac.uk providing details, and we will remove access to the work immediately and investigate your claim.
Style and its function:
the poetics of argument
in Plato’s Phaedo

Tania Louise Gergel

Submitted for the award of PhD
King’s College London
March 2001
Abstract

My thesis aims to show that detailed stylistic analysis of Plato's Greek is a key element in understanding the construction of argument in the Phaedo. I argue that style is integrally connected to the semantic structure of a text and that this is true for all stylistic modes. Accordingly, style allows us both to approach all parts of the dialogue on equal terms and to escape the usual compartmentalisation of the text which occurs in conventional 'literary' and 'philosophical' readings.

In Part I, I propose a definition of 'style' and a detailed methodology for stylistic analysis, which I then use to analyse six short passages, chosen to reflect the Phaedo's varied stylistic modes. I consider the passages in themselves and also in terms of their stylistic affiliations to other (archaic and) classical Greek literature.

Part II comprises three 'case studies', offering interpretations of selected sections, heavily based on stylistic analysis, so revealing the significance of style for the construction of argument. My first study analyses the stylistic transition between the end of Socrates' 'apology' and the 'argument from opposites' (Phd. 66b1-72e2), looking at the contrasting stylistic modes and their relation to the status of the passages as philosophy. I then concentrate on allusion, exploring how Plato's allusions to Anaxagoras mount a complex critique, while also advancing Plato's own points. The third chapter deals with the 'second sailing', showing how style and language clarify Plato's position, and examining their relation to Socrates' description of the 'second sailing' as based on logos.

I demonstrate that stylistic analysis allows us a fuller understanding of Plato's argument, shedding new light both on old questions and on issues which have been relatively un- or under-explored. Moreover, it points us towards a more holistic and cohesive reading of the structure of the text.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table of Contents</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Editions and abbreviations</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acknowledgements</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Preface</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Introduction: towards a 'literary' reading of the Phaedo?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.1 The 'literary' movement in Platonic scholarship</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.2 Style and the literature/philosophy opposition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Part I: Stylistic Analysis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Style and its importance for Platonic interpretation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.1 What is style and why is it significant for philosophical analysis?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.2 Why discuss Plato's style?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.3 An alternative approach to stylistic analysis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Methodology: stylistic categories</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.1 Other works on style</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.2 Unit Organisation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.3 Parallel structures</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.4 Imagery</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.5 Lexis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.6 Final remarks</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.1 Tables of data</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.2 Passage I: 69a6-e4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.3 Passage II: 81c4-82c8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.4 Passage III: 97b8-98b6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.5 Passage IV: 105c8-106a11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.6 Passage V: 110b5-111c3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.7 Passage VI: 117c1-118a17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.8 Conclusion</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Chapter 5

Generic Affiliations and Innovation

5.1 Genre
5.2 Passage I.
5.3 Passage II
5.4 Passage III
5.5 Passage IV
5.6 Passage V
5.7 Passage VI: 117c3-118a17
5.8 Summary

Part II: Case Studies

Chapter 6

Stylistic transition: from Socrates ‘apology’ to the ‘argument from opposites’

6.1 Introduction
6.2 The end of Socrates’ ‘apology’ (66b1-69e5): argument and value through a ‘nexus of associations’.
6.3 The ‘argument from opposites’ (70c4-72e3): ‘verbal minimalism’
6.4 The relationship of the ‘apology and argument from opposites’
6.5 Conclusion

Chapter 7

‘Reading’ Anaxagoros

7.1 Introduction
7.2 Anaxagoras in the ‘argument from opposites’
7.3 The ‘Anaxagoras episode’
7.4 Style and voice-based reasoning
7.5 Beyond the ‘Anaxagoras episode’
7.6 Conclusion
Chapter 8
'Taking refuge in λόγος: language and style in the 'second sailing'

8.1 Preliminary points 227

8.2 'Synonymy' and 'Form-participation': the 'safe hypothesis' (100b1-102a9) as a single λόγος 231

8.3 The introduction of ἔνοντα (102a10-103a7): fixed and changing terminology 233

8.4 Non-opposites and 'essential' opposites: the 'onomy' relationship 239

8.5 Defining ἔνοντα: structure and ambiguity (104c11-105b4) 245

8.6 'The subtler answer': α-privative terms and the proof that the soul is δήλωστι (105b5-e10) 250

8.7 The soul as ἀνωλεθρος (105e11-107b10) 256

8.8 What is λόγος? 265

8.9 Teleology 269

Conclusion 272

Appendix I: Parallel structures in the six passages 274

Appendix II: The Use of Pairs and Lists 280

Bibliography 285
Editions and abbreviations

Editions

Throughout the thesis, unless otherwise stated, I have used the new Oxford Classical Text of the *Phaedo*, revised by Christopher Strachan in 1995 and, for other Platonic works and Greek literature, the Oxford Classical Texts.

For those works or authors not edited within the Oxford Classical Text series I have used the following editions for citations (although, the edition will be given *ad loc.* when an author/work is cited only once or twice):

Antiphon/Andocides: Maidment, 1953.
Comic fragments: Meineke, 1847.
Geographical fragments: Müller, 1882.
Historical fragments: Jacoby, 1923-58.
Isocrates: Benseler, 1895.
Theophrastus: Wimmer, 1854.

Abbreviations

OCT = Oxford Classical Text
All abbreviations of Greek authors and works are taken from Liddell and Scott, 1940.
Acknowledgements

This thesis stems from issues which have fascinated me ever since the beginning of my undergraduate study at Bristol University, where I was taught by, amongst others, Denis Feeney, Thomas Johansen, Duncan Kennedy, Charles Martindale, and Christopher Rowe. To Duncan and Charles I owe a special debt of gratitude, for helping me through a very difficult period. During my MA at University College London, with Bob Sharples as supervisor, I began my postgraduate research on Plato. For my PhD I then moved to King’s College London, to be supervised by Michael Silk and MM McCabe. Over the past four years they have both been an unfailing source of inspiration, rigorous and incisive criticism, encouragement, warmth, and humour. Finally, I must thank my husband Matthew and my family for their patience and support.
Preface

Style and its function: the poetics of argument in Plato's Phaedo

To a mind concerned with the beauties of language, what is trivial to the logician may seem to be just what is important.¹

Neither 'style' nor 'poetics' are terms usually found in close conjunction with 'argument'.² Conventionally, the type of verbal features focused on by poetics or stylistic analysis are seen as those very features which are at best, irrelevant, at worst, harmful, to the logic of the argumentative process.³ I intend to challenge this view by showing that style plays a significant role within philosophical argument.⁴

Frege, the 'founder' of analytic philosophy,⁵ makes a classic statement of this position in his seminal paper 'Thought' (Der Gedanke), where he proposes that non-scientific language contains elements without 'assertoric force', irrelevant to its content ('thought'). He appeals to one of the most common distinctions posited between scientific (prosaic)/philosophical and poetic/literary language - the view that the former prioritises content over language, and the latter vice versa.⁶ This view is accompanied, both here and elsewhere, by a chain of related ideas. Literary/poetic language is seen as relying on the evocation of emotion and indeterminacies of language, rendering it essentially untranslatable, whereas philosophical/scientific language is felt to avoid such features and to be plain and precise. Method of expression is effectively incidental to the context, facilitating paraphrase or

¹ Frege, 1918, 331.
² Cf. Most, 1999, 332, on the 'paradox or provocation' of talking about 'the poetics of early Greek philosophy'.
³ Following the preferred choice of Preminger and Brogan, 1993, 929-30, I take 'poetics' to denote 'theory of literary discourse' which 'is framed within theory of (verbal) discourse and...specifically retains the concept of the literary'.
⁴ Throughout the thesis I will only be dealing with argument as expressed in natural language, and not with formal logic.
⁵ By 'analytic philosophy' here and throughout, I refer, very generally, to the predominant c.20 Anglo-American model of philosophy, summarised by e.g. Audi, 1995, 22: "Analytic philosophy" is a very general term which covers the predominant schools of English-speaking philosophers in the twentieth century and emphasises the importance of logical "philosophical analysis". Although their positions are disparate 'analytic philosophy' can perhaps be characterised by 'an implicit respect for argument and clarity, an evolving through informal agreement as to what problems are and are not tractable, and a conviction that philosophy is in some sense continuous with science'.
⁶ E.g. Frege, 1918, 331: 'What is called mood, atmosphere, illumination in a poem, what is portrayed by intonation and rhythm, does not belong to the thought'.

Preface
translation.\footnote{Frege, 1918, 330-1: 'An assertoric sentence often contains, over and above a thought and assertion, a third component not covered by the assertion. This is often meant to act on the feelings and mood of the hearer, or to arouse his imagination. Words like 'regrettably' ['leider'] and 'fortunately' ['gottlob'] belong here. Such constituents of sentences are more strongly prominent in poetry, but are seldom wholly absent from prose. They occur more rarely in mathematical, physical, or chemical expositions than in historical ones. What are called the humanities are closer to poetry, and are therefore less scientific, than the exact sciences, which are drier in proportion to being more exact; for exact science is directed towards truth and truth alone. Therefore all constituents of sentences not covered by the assertoric force do not belong to scientific exposition; but they are sometimes hard to avoid, even for one who sees the danger connected with them. Where the main thing is to approach by way of intimation what cannot be conceptually grasped, these constituents are fully justified. The more rigorously scientific an exposition is, the less the nationality of its author will be discernible and the easier it will be to translate. On the other hand, the constituents of language to which I here want to call attention make the translation of poetry very difficult, indeed make perfect translation almost always impossible, for it is just in what largely makes the poetic value that languages most differ'. Such views are widespread and are also found in those whose primary concern is with 'poetic/literary' language. On the content/language distinction cf. e.g. Jakobson, 1960, 37: 'The set (Einstellung) towards the MESSAGE as such, focus on the message for its own sake, is the POETIC function of language'; Frye, 1957, 74. On its 'untranslatability' see Valéry, 1937, 1314. By contrast, see e.g. Lang, 1990, 12-13 on the 'neutralist' model of philosophy and its translatability.} As I will discuss in detail in my Introduction such ideas have been enormously influential, especially in philosophy. Philosophers have repeatedly aimed towards a 'scientific' style giving unambiguous access to content and free from the indeterminacies which they feel are present in more 'literary' forms of expression.

A philosophical reading of a text aims, presumably, to understand its argument. According to the 'Fregean' view such an investigation precludes the study of style. Nevertheless, working with a conception of 'argument' accepted within the analytic tradition itself, we find that there may, after all, be room to accommodate style within philosophical analysis.

In *Logical Forms* Sainsbury uses 'argument' to refer to 'any collection of propositions, one of which is singled out as the conclusion' and in which the premises provide the reasons for the conclusion.\footnote{Sainsbury, 1991, 19-20.} From this it can be inferred that arguments are *verbal* (constructed within language); *dynamic* (insofar as their constituent elements move towards a conclusion); and *structured* (the argument's construction depends upon the semantic structure connecting its elements). Sainsbury also adds that an argument expressed in natural language would include 'a word used to show that one has come to the conclusion which is being drawn from the previous propositions', showing that it is the verbal features of an argument
which reveal its logical structure. Of course, talk of 'propositions' or 'premises' and 'conclusions' may make us think, first and foremost, of the type of philosophical analysis found in contemporary analytic works. Nevertheless, what we actually have is a very broad conception of argument. While this points to necessary verbal and structural components, it does not prescribe a particular verbal form either for arguments or for their component premises and conclusions.\(^9\)

Such a conception of argument suggests that analysis depends on establishing the structures of the verbal features which connect its elements. Thus it opens the way for seeing style as integral to understanding the construction of argument, since style plays, as I will show, such an important role within the verbal structure of a text. There is no real reason why even the multivocity of some stylistic phenomena, often seen as a defining feature of non-philosophical language, could not be incorporated into such a scheme, providing that we can account for the way in which the semantic alternatives fit into the wider structure.

The aim of this thesis is not to propose a radically different understanding of argument or philosophy,\(^10\) but to show that the interconnection of verbal features which constitutes the stylistic structure of the *Phaedo* is itself part of the dynamic conclusion-orientated structure at the heart of philosophical argument. In so doing I will be expanding the scope of 'argument', to include certain stylistic features conventionally treated as immaterial, and also 'style', so as to incorporate a much fuller range of features than the group of verbal phenomena usually viewed as 'stylistic'.

I began this project with two main objectives: to understand the contribution of so-called 'literary' features to the construction of philosophical argument; and to demonstrate that a close reading of Plato's Greek will lead to a richer understanding

---

9 This is, of course, entirely different from formal logic.
10 In other treatments of similar questions alternative models are often proposed, so as to retrieve the philosophical import from discourse written in an 'unphilosophical' style or to 'save' philosophy from style altogether. Warner, 1989a, for example suggests the idea of philosophical 'finesse' as a type of philosophical method to be used instead of 'geometric' argumentation. Davey, 1995, proposes the notion of a 'meaningfulness' which is non-verbal 'philosophical awareness' (182), attempting to save philosophy from 'deconstruction's attempt to reduce all philosophical statements to a body of rhetorical idioms or stylistic strategems', which precludes philosophy because of the 'limitless potential for variant meanings within language' (177-8).
of his dialogues. In showing the importance of style in the *Phaedo*, now the main aim of my thesis, I address both these issues.

In the chapters which follow I investigate Platonic style and its function, showing both that its significance for the argument of the *Phaedo* is not restricted to particular types of discourse and that style is also important for establishing the holism of the dialogue. I will use stylistic analysis to look into certain old questions about the *Phaedo*, but also to consider some issues which remain relatively un- or under-explored. However, it is not my aim to offer a comprehensive reading of the dialogue, and only selected parts will be discussed.

**Outline of the thesis**

Following the Introduction, which briefly discusses the project in the context of current Platonic scholarship and ideas about the literature/philosophy relationship, the thesis falls into two main parts: Stylistic Analysis and Case Studies. Part I begins with a methodology for stylistic analysis, designed as suitable even for those type of stylistic features not considered within traditional methods of analysis, so that it can accommodate the whole range of the *Phaedo*'s discourse types. This methodology is then put into practice in Chapter 4 with a detailed analysis of six short passages, while Chapter 5 traces the generic affiliations of these passages' distinctive stylistic features within archaic and classical Greek texts.

Having drawn some general conclusions, in Part II I move on to three case studies, which take the earlier stylistic/generic analyses of three of the six passages and consider them in terms of their wider context. Here I explore how the distinctive stylistic features of these passages contribute to the dialogue's arguments and ways in which this might change our views on certain issues raised within scholarship on the *Phaedo*. It is through these case studies that I demonstrate the significance of style for the philosophy of the dialogue.
The selection of passages in Parts I and II

Given the limitations of space, only three of the six initial passages are considered as case studies, although these three passages do provide a fairly representative sample of the major general points about style which arose in Part I. In the case studies I look at not just the original passages, but also the larger sections of the Phaedo from which these passages are taken. For we need the wider context, in order to comment on the significance of the initial passages. Given that many key stylistic aspects of Part I's short passages are also relevant for their wider context we can, by comparing similarities and differences with these short passages, understand the style of the larger sections to a certain degree, even without carrying out an independent and detailed stylistic analysis.

Although three of the six passages analysed in Part I are not considered in Part II they are not in any way irrelevant. For Part I's conclusions about Platonic style provide the basis for the case studies' methodology and, for many reasons, these depend upon using a very broad sample of the Phaedo's stylistic types.

Since my aim is to develop a methodology for stylistic analysis applicable to all styles of discourse, Part I uses a wide selection of passages, giving a representative sample of the dialogue's major stylistic types. Furthermore, in order to ascertain the distinctiveness of individual features, we need to assess them against a fairly broad background of styles. Similarly, if we wish to demonstrate Plato's stylistic variety it will be beneficial to have as broad a sample as possible.

Nevertheless, it is not simply for assessing the distinctiveness of individual sections that a broad range is useful, but also for examining common traits. By bringing together a number of disparate passages it is possible to draw some general conclusions about style and generic affiliations. The larger the number of passages discussed, the more plausible it is to posit general tendencies, which would also have been less visible if considering a smaller range of passages. Thus, in many ways, Part I establishes a fairly broad understanding of similarities and differences in the Phaedo's use of style, and it is the diversity of stylistic types examined there which facilitates the approach used in the subsequent case studies of Part II.
Chapter 1

Introduction: towards a ‘literary’ reading of the Phaedo?

A project which focuses on Platonic style may well appear to fit into a contemporary trend towards ‘literary’ readings of Plato, given that style is more conventionally associated with literary than philosophical investigation. However, I am actually aiming to break away from this opposition and my approach differs from other ‘literary’ readings in ways I will explain below.

1.1 The ‘literary’ movement in Platonic scholarship

The past twenty years have seen a distinct trend towards ‘literary’ readings of Plato, so that what began as a reaction against the dominant ‘philosophical’ approach has now itself become an important part of mainstream Platonic scholarship.¹

1.1.1 The motivations behind this ‘literary’ approach

This ‘literary’ turn has been motivated primarily by a desire to depart from those ‘philosophical’ readings which dominated post-war Anglo-American Platonic scholarship and concentrated on establishing and assessing sequences of argumentation,² in order to explore aspects of the dialogues neglected by such

¹ On the growth of the ‘literary’ approach see e.g. Stokes, 1986, 1: ‘There is a steadily accumulating body of writing by scholars determined to do justice to Plato’s literary [italics mine] art no less than to the “wiry argument” of Plato’s Socrates’. Cf. Rutherford, 1988, 216. Critical works include: collections of essays, e.g. Griswold, 1988 and Press, 1993; individual works on particular dialogues, e.g. Ferrari, 1987, an influential study of Plato’s Phaedrus; and individual collections on a number of Platonic works, of which two of the more prominent recent examples are Nightingale, 1995 and Rutherford, 1995. On the Phaedo alone, specific works include books by e.g. Gilead, 1994; Ahrens, 1995; Bolotin, 1987. For further bibliography, see Gilead, 1994, 145-58. The general idea of taking Plato’s arguments in their full literary context can also be traced back further. See e.g. Press, 1993, 5, on Schleiermacher. Many recent works, including some listed above, have also focused on Platonic dialogue form: e.g. Griswold, 1988; Gill and McCabe, 1996; Klagge and Smith, 1992.

² Cf. e.g. Stokes, 1986, 1: ‘A host of philosophical papers and monographs...have illuminated the premises, inferences, and conclusions presented in Plato’s dialogues; Weingartner, 1973, 3ff.; McKim in Griswold, 1988, 34; Warner, 1989a, 69, n.3. Bostock, 1986, constitutes a paradigm example of this type of reading, stating that his commentary ‘concentrates entirely on the philosophical interest of the dialogue, and has nothing to say of its considerable literary merits and dramatic power’. Cf. e.g. commentaries by Gallop, 1975, and Hackforth, 1955; the comments of Warner, 1989a, 67-9, on Hackforth and Gallop; or articles by Vlastos, 1973; Keyt, 1963.
interpretations. In many ways it also reflects a more widespread scepticism about 'analytic' philosophy, and a growing interest in interdisciplinary approaches to literature and philosophy, for which 'hybrid' authors like Plato and Nietzsche, whose works defy easy classification into either category, provide useful examples.6

'Literary' interpretations of Plato focus on such questions as the dialogues' form and unity, the function of allusion, intertextuality, metaphor, characterisation and other 'dramatic' aspects.7 Significantly, they often claim to avoid the segmentation of the dialogues' which they see as resulting from the philosopher's tendency to analyse individual arguments, withdrawn from their context.8

1.1.2 Problems with these 'literary' readings

Given their preoccupation with unity and opposition to compartmentalisation, it is ironic that the majority of these 'literary' readings have simply arrived at an alternative form of segmentation: avoiding those parts of the dialogue most amenable to 'philosophical' analysis and making no substantial or rigorous contribution to the questions which have motivated 'philosophical' interpretations. Rather than unity, what we have are, effectively, two discontinuous branches of Platonic scholarship, whose views have little bearing on each other.9

---

3 Cf. e.g. Gilead, 1994, 1: 'Plato's art of writing has been well acknowledged. Yet many Plato scholars have not devoted much of their efforts to a meticulous and detailed analysis of his artistic achievements and their philosophical implications'. Cf. e.g. Warner, 1989a, 67; Rutherford, 1995, ix.

4 Among the most influential of these attacks on analytic-philosophy are e.g. the 'deconstructive' writings of Derrida (see e.g. Derrida, 1981); and Rorty, 1980.

5 See e.g. the journal Philosophy and Literature, first published in 1976 by the University of Michigan.

6 Cf. e.g. Most, 1999, 360, on the alternative 'discursive modes' of Nietzsche, Wittgenstein, and Heidegger. For analysis of such works see e.g. Warner, 1989a; Lang, 1990, 14ff. and passim.

7 Cf. e.g. Rutherford, 1988, 217, on Ferrari, 1987; Press, 1993, 5.

8 Cf. e.g. Stokes, 1986, 2: 'very few philosophers indeed have undertaken the task of interpreting a dialogue from start to finish, through passages overtly philosophical and manifestly literary alike in exploration of the relation between the parts and the whole'; McCabe, forthcoming; Bolotin, 1987, 39. For 'unity' readings see e.g. Rutherford, 1995, passim; Rowe, 1991b, 159, Weingartner, 1973, 7; Press, 1993, 4-5.

9 Even e.g. Warner, 1989a, 85 and 4-5, who talks about the 'balance' between different types of arguments in the Phaedo, draws a distinction between 'regular' (geometric) and 'irregular' means' of argument, and himself concentrates on the latter.
Rutherford quite explicitly dissociates himself from the 'philosophical' approach. Yet even those less blatant about stating such aims seem generally unconcerned with key 'philosophical' questions. On one level this is reflected in the dialogues studied, with 'literary' readings attached mainly to middle and early dialogues, whereas later works like the *Sophist*, *Philebus*, and *Parmenides* are left almost exclusively to 'philosophers'. On another, with respect to individual dialogues themselves, segmentation is also very marked in the selection of passages considered within the different approaches. This is very evident from recent works on the *Phaedo*, where philosophical readings revolve mainly around the four 'main arguments' for the immortality of the soul, whereas 'literary' readings branch out to consider other parts, but rarely contribute at all to philosophical debate on the four 'main arguments'.

So, typically, literary works look at so-called 'literary' aspects of the dialogues, while keeping away from philosophical rigour and the questions which traditionally provide the focus for philosophical analysis. By contrast, philosophers seek out

---


11 This is certainly true of some more notable recent 'literary' works. See e.g. Rutherford, 1995, who devotes only a short final chapter to some of the late dialogues; Nightingale, 1995, who avoids the late dialogues almost entirely, apart from briefly considering the *Theaetetus* definition of the philosopher (179) and one definition of the sophist in the *Sophist* (23); Kahn, 1996, barely mentions the later dialogues; Thesleff, 1993, 28. There are also many 'literary' readings of e.g. the *Phaedrus* and *Symposium*. Gill and McCabe, 1996, a collection of essays discussing dialogue form in the late dialogues, is a notable exception.

12 Except for the episodes concerning Simmias' objections to the 'affinity argument' and brief comments on the first part of the 'second sailing' most of the commentaries of e.g. Bostock, 1986, Gallop, 1975; and Bluck, 1955, focus on the four 'main arguments'. Cf. the number of articles on these sections: e.g. Rowe, 1991a and b; Fine, 1987; Frede, 1978; Gallop, 1982; Keyt, 1963; Schiller, 1967; Sedley, 1998; Vlastos, 1973; O'Brien, 1967-8; Kanayama, 2000. Cf. Warner, 1989a, 4 and 6, n.4.

13 By philosophical rigour I refer not solely to 'deductive' arguments (see Warner, 1989a, 17-18), but, more generally, to reason-conclusion sequences.

14 On Plato in general, cf. e.g. Nightingale, 1995. In the introduction to her fascinating study of Platonic intertextuality, she writes: 'I am not concerned then with Plato's methods and doctrines or, indeed, with his development and practice of analytic thinking'. On the *Phaedo* specifically, see e.g. Gilead, 1994, 2, who makes some interesting points about its relation to other literature but, despite claiming that 'in the *Phaedo* philosophy and poetry are harmoniously, flawlessly interwoven', concentrates on dramatic setting, motifs, and overall form, without incorporating these into arguments or ideas of any philosophical complexity. Cf. also Bolotin, 1987, whose 'dramatic' reading argues that Socrates' primary intention in the *Phaedo* is not to discuss the fate of the soul after death, but rather to persuade his friends that even despite the persecution of philosophers, the philosophic life remains the wisest and the best one' (43). He does little more than summarise certain parts of the *Phaedo*; simply accepts without debate others' views that the soul's immortality is not proven (46), and, without offering any substantial argumentation, discusses Socrates' justification for persuading his friends of beliefs he himself does not necessarily accept. Ahrensdorf, 1995, 3ff., follows Bolotin and makes the same unquestioned assumptions. Cf. Warner, 1989a, who aspires to a unified

---

*Chapter 1*
key ‘arguments’ and analyse them in terms of premise and conclusion. What we need, then, is an approach which shows the relevance of literary details for the philosophical analysis of argument. For it is only by bringing together these supposedly opposing pursuits that we can hope to arrive at a truly unified literary/philosophical reading of the dialogues, accounting for all parts and sacrificing neither philosophical rigour for literary analysis, nor vice versa.

A final point about existing ‘literary’ readings of Plato is that, despite claiming an interest in the style or literary features of the dialogues, they tend to pay little or no attention to the details of Plato’s Greek. ‘Close’ analysis goes only so close as translation or consideration of isolated Greek words allows, and many significant interpretation (70), but nevertheless skims over the cyclical and recollection arguments (91), and gives only the sketchiest summary of some of the ‘final argument’ (93). When such readings do venture into ‘philosophical’ territory there is little philosophical rigour. E.g. Ahrensford, 1995, 63-4, says of the ‘argument from opposites’ that ‘Socrates points to the possibility that the living and the dead are two fundamentally distinct kinds of beings’, although the argument actually hinges upon the necessity of a cyclical transformation between opposite conditions taking place in a continuous underlying being.

Concerning the Phaedo in particular, the gulf between ‘literary’ readings and traditional philosophical concerns could not be clearer. E.g. Thesleff, 1993, 26, on ‘opposites’ in the Phaedo: ‘The theme of opposites occurs throughout the dialogue but I would see here, basically, the unequal opposites of Plato’s two-level model: Socrates and his partners, soul and body, life and death, even pleasure and pain, are after all no dualistic contraries’. To see these simply as analogous parallel oppositions shows complete prioritisation of literary form over philosophical oppositions and is typical of the vague impressionistic method of such works. For although these pairs may all be presented as oppositional, each has an entirely different function, which can only be understood through analysing their place within the philosophical arguments (taken in the broadest sense) of the dialogue. For an analysis of different oppositions within the Phaedo and their correspondence to each other see Ch.6 above, on consideration of stylistic oppositions within their full argumentative context.

This tendency is widespread and accepted. So e.g. Rutherford, 1995, who sees himself as concerned with ‘rhetoric, irony, poetic style and imagery’, still considers no more than the occasional Greek term; Nightingale, 1995, who discusses only the significance of occasional words or phrases and is more interested in motifs than stylistic parallels as such. Cf. also Belfiore, 1997, 33-4, on Rutherford. Cf. also e.g. Warner, 1989a, 67-104.
points are ignored, while other points take on a significance derived more from English translation than from the nuances of the original language itself.

1.2 Style and the literature/philosophy opposition

Segmentation of the dialogues within the critical literature seems to result from the assumption, sometimes silent, sometimes voiced, of a literature/philosophy opposition, which leads literary and philosophical readings to focus on different aspects of the text and different concerns. Questions concerning the so-called literature/philosophy distinction, whether it exists and, if it does, in what it consists, have generated much interest over the last twenty or thirty years. There are various views about the grounds for this opposition, though a style-based distinction appears most significant in explaining why segmentation arises in readings of the Phaedo. Yet, especially when considering a work like the Phaedo, this oppositional formulation is problematic, no matter what its basis.

The basis and problems of the literature/philosophy opposition

In broad terms literature and philosophy are seen as oppositional on three main counts: world view; theme; style. The first implies that a ‘philosophical’ world view sees rationality as giving us access to an objective, supra-personal truth, to which all other human experiences are subordinated. Literature, by contrast, views such truth

17 Gilead, 1994, 66, commenting on the exchange between Socrates and Cebe in Phd.77d5-e8, talks of Cebe's "Freudian" insight and says 'Cebe employs childish language to get his emotional needs across to Socrates', while 'Socrates' amusement and irony do not affect Cebe's solemn frame of mind': 'the frightened child within Cebe is stronger than Cebe, and his fear...represents the frame of mind of the audience in a tragedy'. However, Cebe has actually responded to Socrates' first joke by laughing, καὶ δὲ τὴν ἔπιταλάσσα (77e4), and seems to be picking up on Socrates' ironic humour by asking Socrates to rid their 'inner child' of his fear of τὰ μορμολύκες, appearing to act more through self-effacement than intense emotion. Extant usage of μορμολύκες points towards possible humorous connotations, given that it only occurs three other times, all of which are in Aristophanes. Especially relevant is fr.958: ἃς οὖν καμάρικον μορμολύκες ἔγνω (Meineke). Cf. also fr.1001 and Th.417. Gilead does mention μορμολύκες, but seems to see it as implying real horror.

18 E.g. Ahrendorf, 1995, though insisting on the dramatic context's importance (1ff.), seems to stray from the text altogether with strange and entirely unsubstantiated points like 'Cebe's doubts [i.e. about the goodness of the philosophic life] have led him to think about committing suicide' (60), which he has somehow managed to infer, presumably from Cebe's statement that he has heard suicide is unlawful (61e5-9), although there is absolutely no implication of intention on Cebe's part.
as unattainable and aims towards 'humanly apprehended reality',\(^{19}\) to which we have access through the whole range of human responses, as opposed to reason alone. However, this position, which can roughly be summarised in terms of philosophical rationality versus literary holism,\(^{20}\) is based on a conception of philosophy which, though possibly plausible for the *Phaedo*, is in no way representative of philosophy in general; there are significant counter-examples in all periods.\(^{21}\)

The thematic literature/philosophy distinction is no less problematic. Based on the idea that themes essential to philosophy have a purely aesthetic function when included in literature,\(^{22}\) it hinges upon the controversial assumption that the stimulation of reflection and thought are secondary to the aesthetic aspects of literature. Moreover, the *Phaedo* itself clearly reveals this idea's flaws in a philosophical context. For, as in so many other 'philosophical' works, the dialogue's philosophical themes are inseparable from the dramatic situation and its literary evocation, making it impossible to give a separate assessment of their relative importance for the work as a whole.

These two formulations are not only flawed, but have no obvious relevance for the *Phaedo*. By contrast, the style-based literature/philosophy distinction seems to be at the heart of much of the divide which exists between so-called 'literary' and 'philosophical' readings of the dialogue. This distinction takes us back to the idea mentioned in the Preface that philosophy is written in plain and neutral quasi-formalisable prose, as opposed to the emotive, elaborate, indeterminate, poetic style of literature. From Aristotle's criticisms of Plato's Forms as 'empty speech

\(^{19}\) Falck, 1989, 32.

\(^{20}\) For a typical statement of this position see e.g. the post-post-modernist defence of literary truth in Falck, 1989, 32 ff.

\(^{21}\) From Protagoras' 'man is the measure' to Rorty's 'edificationism' (see e.g. Rorty, 1980, 373-9), there are many philosophers who see 'truth' as humanly-mediated, rather than being some external supra-personal reality. Contemporary epistemology is, like many of its predecessors, beset by scepticism about our capacity to attain any knowledge, while even Aristotle, far from being anti-holistic, attributed an important philosophical role to intuition (*NE* 1140b31ff.), emotion and imagination (see Nussbaum, 1990, 74-8).

\(^{22}\) E.g. Beardsmore, 1984, maintains that philosophical problems are essential to philosophy, but incidental to literature. 'Though works of literature', he says, 'may involve such problems, philosophy starts from them' (72). Cf. e.g. Olsen, 1984, 86, 91, and passim; Lamarque and Olsen, 1994, 391.

*Chapter 1*
and poetic metaphors (μεταφοράς ποιητικός)\textsuperscript{23} to Frege’s call for scientific language in philosophy, such ideas have been extremely influential within Western thought, manifesting themselves in terms of oppositions like the literary/philosophical, poetic/prosaic, literary/scientific, personal/abstract, rhetorical/non-rhetorical.\textsuperscript{24}

Nussbaum describes the ‘conventional style of Anglo-American philosophical prose’ as:

a style correct, scientific, abstract, hygienically pallid, a style that seemed to be regarded as a kind of all-purpose solvent in which philosophical issues of any kind at all could be efficiently disentangled, any and all conclusions neatly disengaged.\textsuperscript{25}

On one level, this provides a fitting summary of the ‘scientific prose’ which many philosophers have either used or advocated as correct. Models such as Melissus and Aristotle’s works or the typically dry academic prose of analytic philosophy are widespread, and the view that this type of style constitutes philosophical as opposed to literary writing has a long history, being echoed by philosophers and literary theorists alike.\textsuperscript{26}

In antiquity Epicurus advocated clear speech and prose rather than poetry for philosophy,\textsuperscript{27} while Sprat, in the seventeenth century, condemned the ‘ornaments of speech’ as inimical to reason:

They are in open defiance against Reason; professing, not to hold much correspondence with that; but with its Slaves, the Passions: they give the mind a motion too changeable and bewitching, to consist with right practice. Who can behold, without indignation, how many mists and uncertainties, these specious Tropes and Figures have brought on our Knowledge?\textsuperscript{28}

\textsuperscript{24} On the idea of rhetorical language being seen to preclude reasoning, see e.g. Gergel, 2000, 291ff.; Lang, 1990, 2.
\textsuperscript{25} Nussbaum, 1990, 19.
\textsuperscript{26} Cf. e.g. Warner, 1989a, 70 on the ‘separate canons of exact, rigorous, logically argued, and “non-poetic” style such as we have since learnt to associate with philosophy’.
\textsuperscript{27} See e.g. Asmis, 1991, 72, who also gives the relevant references to Epicurus. Cf. also Silk, 1974, 220.
\textsuperscript{28} Sprat, 1667, 112.
In calling then for ‘mathematical plainness’ he echoes the sentiments of ‘several of the leading figures of the seventeenth century revolution in philosophy, such as Descartes, Hobbes, Bacon, Spinoza, and Leibniz, who espoused a ‘geometrical’ model of reasoning. Such views became very influential in Western philosophy and also occur later, for example in Kant, or the analytic movement. Scientific/philosophical language is felt to avoid the indeterminacies present in literary language and to present its statements and arguments in the clearest and most unambiguous manner possible. So Richards distinguishes between ‘scientific’ language, in which ‘the connections and relations of references to one another must be of the kind which we call logical’ and must not ‘impede further reference’, and ‘emotive’, for which ‘logical arrangement is not necessary’.

However, these ideas about ‘scientific’, ‘zero-degree’, neutral, or plain style are based on a stereotype of a certain type of philosophical writing and in no way provide an accurate general picture of philosophical discourse. Counter-examples can be found, not only in ‘hybrid’ authors like Plato, Nietzsche, or Pascal, but even

---

29 Warner, 1989a, 1.
30 Sprat, 1667, 113 and xxviii. On Descartes and the ‘geometrical model’ see e.g. Warner, 1989a, 1 and 6ff.
31 See e.g. Van Eck, 1995, 11; Warner, Lang, 1990, 12ff.
32 See, e.g. Rorty, 1982, 220, on analytic philosophy as ‘scientific’: “Scientific” now means something like “argumentative”. The contrast between the old and the new is now no longer a contrast between an immature prescientific and a mature scientific stage of discussion of a common set of problems, but a contrast between styles – the “scientific” style and the “literary” style. The former style asks that premises be explicitly spelled out rather than guessed at, that terms be introduced by definitions rather than by allusion. The latter style may involve argumentation, but that is not essential; what is essential is telling a new story, suggesting a new language-game, in the hope of a new form of intellectual life’. See Richards, 1978,5-6, on the ‘Realm of Poetry’ as ‘Guessland’, while ‘Scientific Prose aims...at being unequivocal’. Cf. e.g. Wellek and Warren, 1963, 22-3: “the ideal scientific language is purely “denotative”: it aims at a one-to-one correspondence between sign and referent”...Thus scientific language tends towards such a system of signs as mathematics or symbolic logic. Its ideal is such a universal language as the characteristica universalis which Leibniz had begun to plan as early as the late seventeenth century. Compared to scientific language, literary language will appear in some ways deficient. It abounds in ambiguities; it is, like every other historical language, full of homonyms, arbitrary or irrational categories such as grammatical gender; it is permeated with historical accidents, memories, and associations. In a word, it is highly “connotative”. Cf. Ricoeur, 1975, 139ff., on Cohen. Some, like Frege, 1892, 157, have even gone so far as to suggest that it is only scientific/philosophical language which can have true reference, while literary/poetic language is interested purely in the ‘sense’, without concern about its correspondence to an underlying ‘reference’: ‘we are interested only in the sense of the sentences and the images and feelings thereby aroused. The question of truth would cause us to abandon aesthetic delight for an attitude of scientific investigation. Hence it is a matter of no concern to us whether the name ‘Odysseus’, for instance, has a Bedeutung, so long as we accept the poem as a work of art’. Cf. Preminger and Brogan, 1993, 1346.
33 Richards, 1934, 113.
34 See e.g. Van Eck, 1995, 11-13.
in those very writers who themselves espouse the 'geometrical' or 'scientific' method.\(^{35}\)

**Conclusion**

Despite its obvious flaws the style-based literature/philosophy distinction, is very significant for the literature/philosophy division within scholarship on the *Phaedo*. Conventionally, 'philosophical' interest in the dialogue focuses on the four 'main' arguments for the immortality of the soul (the 'argument from opposites', 'argument from recollection', 'affinity argument', and 'second-sailing') and especially on the first, second, and fourth of these.\(^{36}\) As I will explain in more detail below, these arguments are not only explicitly presented as 'proofs', but come closest to the so-called 'scientific' style favoured by contemporary analytic philosophers. Hence they provide rich pickings for the analytically-trained philosopher, but little scope for traditional literary interpretation. By contrast, the other aspects of the dialogue, on which literary readings tend to focus, more or less rule out conventional philosophical analysis through the 'literariness' of their style.

Underlying the whole issue are, apparently, the twin assumptions that an ostensibly literary style is incompatible with philosophy and that style is irrelevant, or even absent from, philosophical argument. Therefore, in order to escape this dichotomy, style must be shown to be present within and relevant to the construction of argument in all parts of the *Phaedo*. This requires a methodology equipped for dealing with a comprehensive range of discourse and not simply those types conventionally regarded as literary.\(^{37}\) Even if termed 'literary' because of its preoccupation with style, such an approach will nevertheless be a legitimate tool for philosophical analysis, in no way discontinuous with its aims or methods.\(^{38}\)

\(^{35}\) See e.g. the analysis of Descartes' style in Lang, 1990, ch.3; Van Eck, 1995, 13.

\(^{36}\) See n.12, above.

\(^{37}\) Cf. Lang, 1990, 2: 'the critical means that have been found relevant to more conventionally "literary" texts can be - ought to be - also applied to philosophical writing'. However, Lang does not go on to construct stylistic categories suitable for types of writing generally excluded from literary analysis.

\(^{38}\) Cf. Warner, 1989a, 71.

*Chapter 1* 21
Part I: Stylistic Analysis
A comprehensive methodology for stylistic analysis will allow us to consider all parts of the *Phaedo* and may facilitate a reading without segmentation. Nevertheless, we still need to show why stylistic analysis is of interest for the investigation of argument. To a certain extent, the results of the project as a whole should serve to justify an examination of Platonic style. However, there are also specific points, about the nature of style itself, as well as the study of Platonic style in particular, which give some initial indications as to the significance of style for the analysis of Platonic argument.

In my Preface, argument was defined as a verbal and dynamic structure, whose premises provide reasons for its conclusions. Accordingly, philosophical analysis should explicate the semantic connections between the verbal elements from which an argument is constructed. Traditional accounts define style in terms of 'form' as opposed to 'content', the 'how' as distinct from the 'what'. Yet, on this view, it would be difficult to see how style could possibly impinge on the semantic structure of the text. By contrast, I will argue that style is bound up with semantic structure on a microcontextual level and therefore has clear potential significance for the construction of argument.

2.1 What is style and why is it significant for philosophical analysis?

No general consensus has ever been reached as to the meaning of 'style', in spite of extensive debate.¹ Much twentieth-century discussion challenged the conventional 'form' as opposed to 'content' notion of style. Nevertheless, in practical terms, when it comes to analysis of texts, even the staunchest opponents of the 'style as form' idea seem to drift back towards this conception. What is responsible for so much

---

¹ The heyday of forms stylistics was the '60s and '70s, thought arguably the most productive discussions of style belong to the earlier decades of formalism and new criticism. Nevertheless, the questions about style discussed then still remain at issue. On the diversity of definitions of style see e.g. Gray, 1969, 12; Chatman, 1971, xiff.; Ohmann, 1971, 243.
confusion? Is there perhaps some truth in the traditional understanding of style after all?

### 2.1.1 The 'Aristotelian' form/content distinction and its problems

Aristotle's notion of style (λέξις) as 'how' rather than 'what' things are said has come to be probably its most widely accepted definition. Style is understood in terms of 'form' as opposed to 'content'; manner or appearance as distinct from underlying meaning, message, or substance. At first glance it seems that textual analysis presupposes just such a form/content distinction, apparently depending upon extracting meaning from form or showing how the latter reflects the former.

---

2 See Arist. Rh. 1403b6ff., although, strictly speaking, the δ side of the distinction also includes arrangement (τάξις), covering suitability of components and ordering of a speech. Cf. also 1404a10, where λέξις is ὡς ἐν ἔρεσιν. However, Aristotle was not the first to use this distinction. See e.g. PlRep. 601a-b where Plato talks about stripping away the adornments of poetic style (ἐπιεί γυμνωθέντα γε τῶν τῆς μουσικῆς χρώματων τὰ τῶν ποιητῶν, αὐτὰ δὲ αὐτῶν λεγόμενα) to reveal the lack of real content underneath, and therefore appears to have the same type of distinction in mind. For further references see notes ad loc. in Shorey, 1937. Cf. e.g. Dover, 1997, 1: 'It is generally, though not universally, agreed that if I am asked about the style of your performance of a certain act, I am being asked not what you did but how you did it'. Also see Dover, 1997, 16, for parallel formulations in ancient critics; and Barthes, 1971, 3, who traces this opposition through various ancient and modern formulations.

3 A notion of style as deviation from a linguistic norm/s has also been important in theories of style. This is especially so in the twentieth century (see Barthes, 1971, 4), although similar ideas are also found much earlier. See e.g. Arist. Po. 1458a21ff. on the use of ξενικος words in poetry. It has been influential for e.g.: formalism (e.g. Erlich, 1981, 172; Jakobson, 1960, 32; Shklovsky, 1917, 28) and stylistics (e.g. Widdowson, 1996, 144; Ullman, 1966, 154; Fowler, 1966, 15; Enkvist, 1971, 53-5). There are, however, many obvious objections. 'Linguistic' or 'literary' norms are not simple and stable objectively-established entities, easily obtainable for use in stylistic analysis. Theorists have criticised this notion's impracticability and irrelevance (E.g. Halliday, 1996, 65; Riffaterre, 1959, 168; Barthes, 1971, 6; Wellek and Warren, 1963, 181; Fish, 1980, 97-111). Nevertheless, as with the form/content opposition, even its staunchest opponents seem to assume some notion of 'style as deviation', so that this conception of style seems in some way an inescapable part of our reading practices (see e.g. Wellek and Warren, 1963, 181ff.) who dismiss the norm/deviation model although their descriptions of the style of particular authors or genres must depend upon establishing how their stylistic norms deviate from other literary types; Riffaterre, 1959, 167-71, who posits the 'irrelevance of the linguistic norm', but replaces it with the idea of stylistic context as a deviation from a normal linguistic context understood by the notional 'average reader'). Identification of stylistic features must always be largely based on picking out elements distinguished by their differences from features used elsewhere. However, none of these stylistic types constitute a particular norm. 'Norm' and 'deviation' are, nevertheless, of some relevance to the study of generic affiliations, which examines features in terms of similarities and differences to a notional generic norm. So, in this respect alone the norm/deviation model will be incorporated into my thesis. Yet, given that it is simply one aspect of how we identify stylistic features and not a potential definition of style itself, I will not explore it in any depth in the present section.

4 See even e.g. the structuralist Barthes, 1971, 4, on the form/content opposition: 'There is no doubt that it contains a certain irreducible grain of truth. The structural analysis of narrative...is based entirely on the conviction (and the practical proof) that one can transform a given text into a more schematic version, set it in a metalanguage which is no longer the language of the original text, without essentially changing its narrative character.' This assumption pervades critical
Yet, however intuitive such a notion of style might seem, it is still problematic:

If we want to distinguish style and work, form and content, structure and content, or any of the other familiar dualisms into which works of literature are divided, then we have to be able to say what the style, or the form, or the structure, as opposed to the work or the meaning is.5

If style is 'form' as opposed to 'content', its definition and analysis should only involve description of form and should avoid interpretation, given that this concerns meaning and content.6

However, a stylistic feature like metaphor reveals the limitations of this position, since its identification clearly depends on the perception of different levels of meaning. When, for example, Socrates says that wisdom (φρόνησις) is 'the only true coin' (μόνον τὸ νόημα ὧν), it is essential to recognise both the 'literal' meaning of the vehicle νόημα and of the suppressed tenor (say, 'thing of value') if this feature is be identified as metaphor.8 Therefore, even if the metaphor's contribution to its wider textual context remains unexplained the most basic analysis of this feature already involves semantics and is an interpretive act.

Yet it is not just in obvious examples like metaphor where semantics plays a necessary role, but in all stylistic features to some extent. To identify antithesis involves the recognition that components stand in a particular semantic relation. To identify pleonasm implies the recognition of synonymy, while even features like pairs and lists or parallel structures involving aural effects imply semantic connections between their elements. Even if the identification of such phenomena is

interpretations: e.g. Quinn, 1973, 422, on Catullus 85. ‘"odi et amo". It is the emotions and the fact that he feels both together that matter; a direct object is irrelevant. Note how word order and elision transfer the emphasis to amo: the hating is taken for granted...'.
5 Gray, 1969, 61.
6 For a typical formulation of style as separate from meaning see e.g. Ullman, 1966, 101, who describes style as 'expressiveness': 'a wide range of linguistic features which have one thing in common: they do not directly affect the meaning of the utterance, the actual information which it conveys'.
7 Phd. 69a9-10.
8 Using the terms to mean 'deviant-element' (vehicle) and 'non-deviant element' (tenor). See Silk, 1996, 967, and Silk 1974, 8ff. For a more detailed analysis of the structure of metaphor see 3.4, below.
not related to their wider context, it still relies upon understanding some aspect of the text's meaning, albeit on a microcontextual level.

2.1.2 Attacks on the form/content distinction

It is a preoccupation with the structuring rather than referential aspects of language which motivated probably the strongest attacks on the form/content distinction in the twentieth century, ranging from the formalists' prioritisation of literature's formal activity to the post-structuralist denial of the existence of fixed content.\(^9\)

The Russian formalists reacted against traditional literary criticism's predominant concern with content or message rather than style.\(^10\) Their attempts to define the special qualities of art or 'literariness' established new frameworks for understanding literary language, and significantly shifted the focus away from the form/content distinction.\(^11\) Notwithstanding individual differences between formalist positions, the formal side to literature was prioritised while content, the object of reference, lost its given significance.\(^12\)

---

\(^9\) See e.g. Lamarque and Olsen, 1994, 263: '...most prominent literary theories this century have assumed that the [form/content] distinction is somehow naïve and theoretically invalid...The formalist theories of the New Criticism, structuralism, and post-structuralism have had as a central tenet that in creating form, the author creates content'. I would, incidentally, question their omission of formalism. Cf. also Girard, 1989, 251.

\(^10\) Erlich, 1981, 19-32 (passim) and 31. Although Shklovsky and Jakobson's formalist theories do not centre explicitly on style, I think it is fair to discuss them here as relevant to the questions of style under consideration. Cf. Attridge, 1996, 37: 'Jakobson confidently defines 'poetics' as what most of us would now call 'stylistics'.

\(^11\) Cf. e.g. Lodge, 1988, 31; Erlich, 1981, 172 and 186ff., although see also ibid. 34 and 45 on formalism's debt to symbolism and futurism respectively.

\(^12\) The form/content distinction was, in general, replaced by a 'device/materials' distinction or interest in 'form' and 'defamiliarization' (see e.g. Erlich, 1981, 188ff.). The meaning of 'materials' was not unanimously agreed, but represented the 'raw stuff' of literature and incorporated e.g. 'content', 'ideas', 'emotions' and 'words'. 'Device' was the technique of 'making it strange', known as 'defamiliarization' and probably formalism's key term. E.g. Shklovsky, 1917, 20-27, focuses on 'defamiliarization', a technique of making the formal level strange to make us perceive afresh and extend the goal of art, perception: 'An image is not a permanent referent for those mutable complexities of life which are revealed through it; its purpose is not to make us perceive meaning, but to create a special perception of the object - it creates a 'vision' of the object instead of serving as a means for knowing it'. Jakobson, 1960, 35-7, concentrates on the autonomy of the literary text (see e.g. Erlich, 1981, 183-5) and sees the poetic function, whose prominence characterises 'poetic' or 'literary' language, as one of a complex schema of functions in language use, for which form (‘focus on the message for its own sake’) is all important. Poetic language is separated from non-poetic by the former's far greater degree of importance, so that both Shklovsky and Jakobson distinguish 'poetic' or 'literary' language from other types on the basis of qualitative formal differences and the downgrading of the referent (cf. Sturrock, 1993, 109-110). Certain formalists also seem to have anticipated structuralism by making 'content' an aspect of 'form' (Erlich, 1981, 186-7). Todorov,
Whereas the formalists acknowledge the existence of content, the referential aspect of language use, but advocate its strictly secondary importance for the analysis of literature, structuralism reduces content to form.\textsuperscript{13} In ‘Style and Its Image’, a paper characteristic of structuralism, Barthes claims:

\textit{...we can no longer see a text as a binary structure of Content and Form; the text is not double but multiple; within it there are only forms, or more exactly, the text in its entirety is only a multiplicity of forms without a content.}\textsuperscript{14}

For Barthes, the text is an interweaving of ‘codes’ (e.g. ‘symbolic’, ‘hermeneutic’ and ‘actional’) and forms. Stripping these away to reveal content or signified (\textit{signifié}) continues indefinitely because the signified underneath every signifier (\textit{signifiant}) is itself found to be a further signifier. Style, in terms of form as opposed to content becomes a ‘historic concept’, a code tending to ‘pigeonhole’ other textual codes, which gives an illusory continuity to the text’s discontinuous elements through creating a false impression of ‘surface’. Finally, he suggests that writing itself is always a structure of citations of preexisting, culturally acquired, modes of sentence and subsentential structure. No stage of writing or even thought precedes these. Style is then redefined as the ‘layeredness’ of interwoven semantic codes and citations of the preexisting structures constituting literary language, which have been called ‘style’.\textsuperscript{15}

Post-structuralism goes one step further, not only denying the possibility of determinate content or meaning, but also deconstructing the fixity and existence of the very underlying structures on which structuralism’s understanding of discourse was based.\textsuperscript{16} In denying the possibility of the signified, post-structuralism rejects the circular process of structuralism, where the signifier reveals a signified which is in

\textsuperscript{13} Although see n. 12, above, on formalist anticipations of this doctrine.
\textsuperscript{14} Barthes, 1971, 6. Although Barthes differs from other structuralists in certain ways (see Sturrock, 1993, 130), his approach here seems broadly characteristic of structuralism.
\textsuperscript{15} Barthes, 1971, 6-10.
\textsuperscript{16} See e.g. Derrida’s critique (Derrida, 1988) of Lévi-Strauss's anthropological method with its reification of underlying oppositions. Cf. Eagleton, 1983, 133.
itself always a further signifier. All discourse is therefore reduced to an endless chain of signifiers, constantly redefining themselves through differences with each other.\footnote{Eagleton, 1983, 128-9. See e.g. Derrida, 1988, 110: the 'rupture' of the 'concept of structure' took place at the 'moment when language invaded the universal problematic, the moment when, in the absence of a center of origin, everything became discourse ... that is to say, a system in which the central signified, the original or transcendental signified, is never absolutely present outside a system of differences.'}

Such theoretical positions may well seem rightly critical of the naïve idea of style as entirely separate from the meaning it conveys, which, as we have seen, fails to provide a framework accounting for the semantic aspect of verbal structures. By broadening 'form' they stress the semantic and structural implications of style and thereby escape some of the problems inherent in the Aristotelian dichotomy. However, when it comes to the discussion and analysis of style, there are serious problems with these positions too. For if content becomes either redundant or an aspect of form then style, as Barthes suggested, becomes an outmoded 'code' of reading or an umbrella term to describe the 'layeredness' of literary structure. Thus style is either discarded or becomes the entire focus of literary analysis. Similarly, from a post-structuralist viewpoint, style must be rejected or become all-embracing so that, if we see style as language, then style is all there is.

While the notion of style as all-embracing cannot perhaps be refuted \textit{per se}, there must surely be doubts as to its usefulness,\footnote{Cf. Erlich, 1981, 188, summarising Kridl: 'one may question... the practicability of treating "form" as a generic term for artistic creation - an interpretation so broad as to become well-nigh useless, if not misleading'.} and even those seeing 'form' or 'style' simply as umbrella terms for the mechanisms of a literary text actually devise further categorisations within 'style' to replace the roles which 'form' and 'content' played originally. Thus Barthes discusses 'literary language' and 'semantic levels or codes', while Eichenbaum talks about 'non-aesthetic forms [emphasis mine]'\footnote{Todorov, 1973, 10}.

\section*{2.1.3 Discrepancies between theory and practice}

In many ways such shifts back towards the form/content distinction, even amongst sceptics, are unsurprising. For the interpretation of texts depends upon our ability to distinguish their meaning, and there is a marked theory/practice discrepancy amongst...

\begin{flushright}
\textit{Chapter 2}
\end{flushright}
those critics who deny the significance or existence of content or meaning. It seems that, whatever the theoretical stance, textual interpretation ultimately comes down to meaning.\footnote{See e.g. Erlich, 1981, 185: 'Indeed, as the formalist spokesmen could not help but recognize, no poetry, however non-objective, can dispense with meaning; Sturrock, 1993, 107 on the structuralist approach to Finnegan’s Wake: 'What is “trans-sense” is never without sense'.}

For example, Jakobson, discussing Poe’s *The Raven*, comments on how ‘salient paranomasias interconnect both emblems of this everlasting despair’, clearly identifying a stylistic feature and its concomitant meaning.\footnote{Jakobson, 1988, 51.} Similarly Barthes, demonstrating the ‘symbolic code’ in Balzac, says that ‘the knife is a symbol of castration’, thereby pointing out the verbal form’s literal as well as symbolic significance - a double content, but content nevertheless.\footnote{Barthes, 1971, 5.} Even Derrida, the ‘arch-denier’ of stable meaning, hinges his reading of Plato’s *Phaedrus* on the multiple meanings of the word *pharmakon* - many signifieds, but signifieds nevertheless.\footnote{See e.g. Derrida, 1981, 97-98: ‘when a word inscribes itself as the citation of another sense of the same word, when the textual center-stage of the word *pharmakon*, even while it means remedy, cites, re-cites, and makes legible that which in the same word signifies, in another spot and on a different level of the stage, poison (for example, since this is not the only other thing *pharmakon* means’; and passim.}

Despite their denials of the importance of content, all these analyses use similar techniques of attributing meaning or content to certain aspects of style. For in order to show that structure is meaningful, it is necessary to attribute meaning to structure.

\subsection*{2.1.4 Towards a working definition of style}

So style presents us with a puzzle. On the one hand, there are obvious problems with the separation of form or style from content or meaning. On the other, such separation is an underlying part of textual interpretation. However, a way out of this impasse comes from recognising two very different stages in textual interpretation which have, no matter how closely interrelated, clear qualitative distinctions. They are: the identification of a stylistic feature; and the analysis of how this fits into its wider textual context.
These two separate stages are visible in some of my earlier examples. In claiming that a single sign, *pharmakon*, stands for numerous signifieds, Derrida is identifying a stylistic feature, ambiguity. From this he infers that the description of writing as a *pharmakon* in Plato’s *Phaedrus* is, at one point, positive, at another, negative, thus interpreting the feature’s significance. Another example was Quinn’s analysis of Catullus’ famous ‘odi et amo’:

“*odi et amo*”. It is the emotions and the fact that he feels both together that matter; a direct object is irrelevant. Note how word order and elision transfer the emphasis to *amo*: the hating is taken for granted...\(^2\)

The stylistic features identified by Quinn are the absence of direct object, and the way in which word order and elision lead to emphasis or prominence of *amo*. His comments on the irrelevance of a direct object and how ‘hating is taken for granted’ make sense of these stylistic features within the wider context. In both examples, we can clearly identify two distinct stages.

In identifying stylistic features one attributes some degree of semantic structure and significance to the microcontextual formal features of a text. Noticing that ‘odi et amo’ have no direct object, for example, suggests semantic parallelism between the two terms and establishes their intransitivity. To point out *pharmakon*’s ambiguity is to attribute alternative meanings to a single term. Neither of these examples describe purely formal aspects. Instead, they involve the semantic organisation of the text’s formal components. In this way, style can be defined as the *semantic structure of the microcontextual formal features of the text*. As soon as we recognise style, we recognise content.

The second stage of textual interpretation explores the implications of style and how stylistic points fit into a more macrocontextual level of meaning. Stylistic points are thus incorporated into the analysis of meaning, and this stage could be seen as the pure explication of content. As we have seen, it is normal for textual analysis to combine these two stages. However, because of people’s failure to recognise the necessary semantic aspects of style, the first is commonly seen as the identification

---

\(^2\) Quinn, 1973, 422.
of form alone. Taken to an extreme, one might almost see the form/content distinction as stemming from such a misunderstanding.

Even Aristotle, in the very same work where he proposes the 'ός as opposed to α' notion of style, inadvertently suggests the semantic aspect of style. In his discussion of ἐνθυμήματα ('rhetorical syllogisms'), Aristotle discusses how a phrase which is not a genuine ἐνθυμήμα might be considered to be one on account of its style. In 2.24.2 the fact that inferential conclusions (οὐκ ἀρα τὸ καὶ τὸ, ἀνάγκη ἀρα τὸ καὶ τὸ) or antithetical and 'enthumetic' statements can appear to be genuine ἐνθυμήματα, although unsupported by valid arguments, is attributed to the appearance of their style (παρὰ τὸ σχῆμα τῆς λέξεως). For certain stylistic features are associated with ἐνθυμήματα: ή γὰρ τοιαύτη λέξις χώρα ἐστιν ἐνθυμήματος. This implies that such stylistic features have a semantic force, since they are able to suggest particular logical relationships.

How something is written is integrally connected to its meaning on the most microcontextual level. From this we can infer that it is style which provides the initial components of semantic structure. If, then, philosophical argument depends upon the semantic structure between verbal elements, clearly the analysis of style must be important for understanding its construction.

---

25 Cf. Strawson, 1952, 52-53: 'Finally, we could speak...of a statement being made in a misleading verbal form, if the sentence in which the statement is made exemplifies a certain logical formula, but the constants occurring in the sentence, as used to make that statement, do not have the logical use which is standard for that system of rules'.
26 On the 'logic' of the ἐνθυμήμα and what Aristotle means by calling it τις συλλογισμός see Burnyeat, 1996, 95ff.
2.2 Why discuss Plato’s style?

In 1967 Thesleff wrote

Plato’s mastery of style has been recognized since antiquity. It is no exaggeration to state that he makes use of a stylistic register far wider and far more subtle than any other ancient prosaist. This mastery...seems to be...reflecting shifts in his thought. Thus the structure of Plato’s style can be expected to afford a clue to Plato, both as a writer and thinker... It is, however, surprising how little has been done for studying Plato’s stylistic practice systematically, except for the specific purpose of establishing a chronology for his writings. 27

Plato’s stylistic mastery and innovation is uncontroversial. Moreover, if we take style to be essential to the construction of argument on a microcontextual level, as I have argued above, the importance of stylistic analysis for interpreting the dialogues seems clear. However, in terms of scholarship, the state of affairs described by Thesleff has hardly changed. There remains a lack of work on Platonic style and, even within the so called ‘literary’ approaches to Plato, there is no substantial and detailed discussion of the Greek texts themselves.

2.2.1 Works on Platonic style, ancient and modern

There is little detailed analysis of Plato’s style in ancient rhetorical works and much of what exists is directed at broad evaluation rather than in-depth discussion of particular features. Walsdorff outlines the main critical opinions in Die Antiken Urteile über Platons Stil and explains that, although views on the value of Plato’s style varied dramatically, 28 certain key qualities were widely acknowledged, such as precision and particularity of diction; metaphor; and ‘figures’:

Vor allem findet die dichterische ἔλεγχος, die eigentümliche Wortwahl im engeren Sinne, der Metapherngebrauch, auch die Häufung der Figuren und das dithyrambische Pathos zu mal in den rednerischen Werkern allenthalben Beachtung, von Aristoteles bis zu den Neuplatonikern. 29

28 Walsdorff, 1927, 125 claims that in antiquity there were essentially two opinions: his stylistic peculiarities were either dismissed as inappropriate or treated with sympathetic reverence.
29 Walsdorff, 1927, 120.
However, antiquity’s praise of Plato was mainly confined to dialogues or parts of dialogues where short questions and answers predominated, as opposed to the longer speeches of his middle period, which were more often attacked.\(^{30}\)

Interesting though these judgements may be, they are too general and vague to be of much use for analysis of individual aspects of Plato’s style. Nevertheless, such is the force of antiquity’s criticism that, even in the twentieth century, Norden used the chapter on Plato in his seminal *Die Antike Kunstprosa* to offer a defence of Plato’s ‘poeticisms’.\(^{31}\) He includes useful catalogues of Gorgianic figures, ‘high poetic diction’, and creative use of rhythm,\(^{32}\) to show that Plato’s critics failed to notice that Plato employs these features mainly for parody, irony, or playfulness.\(^{33}\)

In general, modern works on Plato’s style tend to focus on a particular type of feature and provide descriptive catalogues of instances, rather than any substantial collation, classification, or analysis of usage.\(^{34}\) Campbell and Wilamowitz, seen by Thesleff as the ‘two good characterizations of Plato’s language and style in general’, treat Platonic style more extensively. However, Campbell, simply lists individual examples of varied phenomena,\(^{35}\) while Wilamowitz makes a few interesting generalisations and points out certain recurrent features.\(^{36}\) Neither considers how these examples fit their particular contexts nor, in any depth, the development and patterns of usage. In fact, until Thesleff’s *Studies in the Style of Plato*, it seems that stylistic features are only treated out of context, without any attempt at either a comprehensive analysis of a particular passage or work, or a detailed study of how Plato combines different stylistic features.

Thesleff sets out to ‘study the structure and function of style in Plato’s writing’.\(^{37}\) He distinguishes five different ‘types of exposition’, loosely based on Greek genres,\(^{38}\)

---

30 See e.g. D.H.Dem. 23 and See Norden, 1915, 104, for a summary of these views and references.


32 Norden, 1915, 106, 107, and 110 respectively.

33 Norden, 1915, 111; although this is less often the case with ‘high poetic diction’.

34 See e.g. Louis, 1945 or Amman, 1953. Thesleff, 1967, 10-11, lists such works and comments that ‘they only cover disparate parts of Plato’s linguistic and stylistic usage. And what is more serious, the majority are purely descriptive’.

35 Campbell, 1894, 165-340.

36 Von Wilamowitz-Moellendorff, 1920, 412-29.

37 Thesleff, 1967, 11.
and 'ten generic classes of style', all of which have particular 'style markers'. However, as might be expected with such a reductive schema, his categories and 'style markers' are too broad to allow anything but a vague impression of general trends. Though dissatisfied with existing discussions of 'those linguistic phenomena which have been traditionally regarded as "stylistic", e.g. imagery, sentence construction, antithesis...', he relies mainly on these as 'style markers', adding certain syntactical features. Moreover, he does not define them and gives no detailed examples to justify their classification.

The results of Thesleff's three page stylistic synopsis of a dialogue as complex and changeable as the *Phaedo* are predictably unsatisfactory. For example, he sees both 63e-69e (Socrates' 'apology') and 70c-72d (the 'argument from opposites') as primarily composed of the 'colloquial', 'semi-literary conversational', and 'intellectual' styles, with the only main difference between sections being a slight variation in how much each style is used. However, the 'apology' and 'argument from opposites' have major stylistic differences and, in Chapter 6, I will argue that the stylistic transition between them is not only striking and deliberate, but important for the dialogue as a whole.

When Thesleff comes to make 'observations on the relation of style to content', one of the main aims of his book, the functions assigned to particular styles are vague and simplistic. For instance, the 'ceremonious style' is 'mostly used...to add loftiness to myths and visions', while the 'semi-literary conversational style' is 'used with a serious undertone from the earliest dialogues'. Although Thesleff himself admits that 'the present work can give little aid in details' and hopes for further

---

38 Thesleff, 1967, 35ff. For example, he claims that the 'question and reply' type is based on 'the old Greek arts of elenctic and eristic', although producing no actual textual evidence for the existence or characteristics of these literary genres.
39 Thesleff, 1967, 63.
41 See Thesleff, 1967, 81ff. What, for example, are 'climax', 'solemnity', and 'gnomic expression'? Does 'pairs' include oppositional pairs and how does it relate to 'antithesis'? How would Thesleff define 'imagery, poetical'?
42 Thesleff, 1967, 133-5.
43 Thesleff, 1967, 165-6. His analysis of interlocutors' characters is no better. E.g. Gorgias, in *Gorg.*, is 'pompous and condescending'. He concludes with the highly unoriginal idea that 'to Plato, writing was play'. Cf. e.g. Norden, 1915, 111.
research,⁴⁴ if we wish to develop an account of how style is used within the
collection of Platonic argument, it is unlikely that his generalisations and vague
methodology can be of much use.⁴⁵

Along with such accounts of Platonic style, there is also stylometry, which uses
statistics for instances of particular features in various Platonic texts, in order to
establish their relative chronology. Without entering into a complex critique of this
practice, it is worth simply pointing out that such statistics are of little use for
determining the character and importance of style within a particular Platonic
passage.⁴⁶

So, in general, there seems to be, as yet, no satisfactory model for investigation of
Plato's style, if our aim is to understand in any depth the contribution of style to the
construction of argument in individual sections. Existing studies either concentrate
on particular types of features in isolation from their context and from other stylistic
phenomena or, in the case of Thesleff, sacrifice accuracy and depth for illusory
comprehensiveness. Although these works do contain certain valuable observations
it appears that we must, essentially, start from scratch.

2.3 An alternative approach to stylistic analysis

My aim has been to establish a methodological framework allowing us to investigate
how stylistic features work together within individual passages. This framework
needs to be comprehensive if it is to account for the entire range of stylistic
phenomena which occur in the Phaedo. However, I have not tried to give a full
analysis of the whole dialogue, an undertaking whose success would be highly
unlikely, given its stylistic diversity. My main intention has been to understand the
contribution of style to individual sections, as a starting point for the use of stylistic
analysis in philosophical interpretation. I have therefore opted for detail and have
chosen to concentrate on six very different short passages, so facilitating a relatively

---

⁴⁴ Thesleff, 1967, 173.
⁴⁵ For an interesting critique of Thesleff, see Dover, 1987, 74-5, who questions how he formulates his
stylistic categories and establishes their 'markers' without reference to other Greek genres.
⁴⁶ Cf. Thesleff, 1967, 8-9, especially n.1, for criticisms of stylometry and references for key
stylistic texts. For more criticisms of 'statistical' methods of stylistic analysis see 3.1.1, below.

Chapter 2 35
complete picture of style within these sections. In turn, my investigation also facilitates a sense of stylistic range within the dialogue and some more general thoughts on Platonic style. In Part II, three of these passages will form a basis for case studies which explore their contribution to the argument in a wider context.

2.3.1 Selection of passages

The six chosen passages are of sufficient length to allow a substantial account of stylistic structure within an extended section, but also short enough to permit a comprehensive study of their precise details. The six are very different and have been selected as reflecting the varied modes of discourse in the dialogue:

Passage I: 69a6-e4 - This long speech is the ‘peroration’ of Socrates’ defence of his willingness to die.

Passage II: 81c4-82c8 - Socrates discusses with Cebes about the fate of the soul after death and the principles of reincarnation

Passage III: 97b8-98b6 - Socrates explains the disappointment he felt in his youth when reading the works of Anaxagoras.

Passage IV: 105c8-106a11 - Part of the proof that the soul is ἄθρατος.

Passage V: 110b5-111c3 - The description of the ‘true’ earth from the myth.

Passage VI: 117c1-118a17 - The final moments of Socrates’ life and the end of the Phaedo.
Chapter 3
Methodology: stylistic categories

3.1 Other works on style

The analysis of style is a major facet of classical scholarship. Along with more general works such as Denniston's *Greek Prose Style*, Dover's *The Evolution of Greek Prose Style*, and Norden's *Die Antike Kunstprosa*, there are countless studies of particular authors or features. Nevertheless, no methodological framework can be extracted from these, either singly or collectively, which covers the full range of the *Phaedo* or other Platonic dialogues' stylistic features. Many use conventional classificatory categories derived from ancient rhetoric, such as period structure, antithesis, and metaphor. However, such categories, although useful, are by no means exhaustive and may involve methodological difficulties, as well as being suited exclusively for analysis of particular types of prose.\(^1\) Therefore a new methodology is needed, suitable for analysis of the entire dialogue. My scheme will take account of productive elements in existing studies, while offering a critique of some of their apparent weaknesses, which will help to explain the reasons for some of my own methodological choices.

3.1.1 The 'critical overview' versus 'statistical' approach

In very general terms, stylistic studies involve two main approaches, the 'critical overview' and the 'statistical', although a combination is used in some works. While both are used to classify, analyse, compare, and trace the development of style, they differ insofar as the latter relies upon statistics concerning instances of particular features as evidence for its claims. Each approach has its advantages and disadvantages. While a work of 'critical overview' like Denniston, 1952, provides examples of important aspects of style and makes some claims about distributions in

---

\(^1\) Cf. Thesleff, 1967, 26.
different authors, it relies solely upon the author's knowledge of and ability to compare the Greek texts that are judged to be relevant.

So it is easy to understand why critics should have turned to the 'statistical' approach, aiming to depart from what they have seen as the arbitrary and impressionistic nature of 'critical overview' analysis, by counting instances of particular phenomena, and so being able to back up points with numerical data. Nevertheless, this alternative involves its own problems. For a start, stylistic features are so varied that any system which simplifies them enough to see them as countable instances of a single phenomenon, risks compromising their distinctiveness, individuality, or development within a particular passage. In addition, 'statistical' analysis often gives broad characterisations of style in an author or group of authors based, for reasons of practicality, on the number of instances found in small, though supposedly representative, random samples of their works. Yet the majority of authors, and especially Plato, are so varied stylistically, that a general picture cannot possibly be attained from statistics based on a short sample alone. Finally, it often seems that the results obtained by the 'statistical' method could equally well be achieved through sharp observation without counting.

However, the 'statistical' method can be useful, especially when considering distributions of clearly distinguishable features such as particular lexemes or noun-forms. My own approach combines the 'statistical' and 'critical overview'. In line with the former I will consider short passages, broadly representative of the *Phaedo*’s different stylistic modes, although I do acknowledge the speculative nature of any general conclusions about Platonic style emerging from assessment of the passages’ similarities and differences. In general, however, my analysis tends towards the 'critical overview' and, allowing for obvious practical constraints, I try to give as

---

2 Cf. e.g. p. 43, below.
3 If we consider Webster, 1941, on the 'develompent of sentence construction between Homer and Dinarchus' the strength of these objections is clear. There are a number of difficulties in Webster's selection of passages. For example, how can the three short passages he chooses from Plato, *Rep.*401b-404d, 614b-621d, and *Leg.*624a-631b, be felt to be representative in any way of a corpus so stylistically diverse? He also fails to take account of several important works, such as the Hippocratic Corpus or any of the extant Presocratic fragments. Moreover, his final conclusion is that gradually sentences increased in length and complexity, with more sub-clauses. Yet surely that much could be gathered simply from glancing through a selection from the authors in question, rather than relying on numerical data.
broad an indication of the distinctive features and generic background of stylistic phenomena as possible. Many individual features are so diverse and inextricable from their wider stylistic context that the usefulness of reducing them to countable categories is limited. Nevertheless, I do occasionally employ statistics, especially for analysing lexis, where usage is more readily quantifiable.

3.1.2 Some preliminaries

- Much of my analysis relies on comparison of the passages not only with the Platonic corpus, but also with archaic and classical Greek literature in general. Accordingly, my discussions of the distribution of a particular feature will draw on extant pre-Hellenistic texts.4

- The relevance of my stylistic categories for the passages in question does vary. Nevertheless, given that I have tried to provide a framework for analysing as comprehensive a range of features as possible and intend my methodology to be applicable to a wide range of texts, I will explain fully the classification of even those features whose occurrence within the six passages is limited.

3.2 Unit Organisation

The classification 'unit organisation' replaces the conventional category of 'sentence structure' and incorporates aspects of style such as word order and interconnection of clauses.

---

4 In this, I follow Silk, 1974, 82: '[Evidence] will almost never be later than fourth century: Menander and Theophrastus are my effective limits. Hence 'complete' is always to be interpreted to mean 'complete as far as pre-Hellenistic Greek is concerned'; and such remarks as 'no extant parallel' mean 'no parallel sufficiently early to count'. When citing usages from a composite 'author' like Hippocrates, I shall not go into questions of authenticity or dating when the usage belongs to a work generally ascribed to the fourth century or earlier'.

Chapter 3 39
In considering the particularities of Greek unit organisation, it is useful to compare Greek to modern languages, which generally provide the framework for discussions of this topic. For convenience, I will use English in most cases, although other languages would also provide suitable models.

Since there are certain differences between the organisation of phrases in Greek texts and the sentence structure of a modern language like English, it is helpful to use the term ‘unit’ rather than ‘sentence’. In general, individual clauses within units can be distinguished, as in English sentences, on the basis of syntax. Units, however, are themselves often far more difficult to delimit than sentences. In English the written (orthographic) sentence is clearly demarcated by both grammar and punctuation, whereas classical Greek texts were written without punctuation.

Furthermore there are other differences which make it impractical to understand Greek in terms of the modern sentence. In Greek the same conjunctions are used to link both whole units and parts of units. For example, whereas formal English as a

---

5 This is especially true when a certain part of speech is inflected in Greek and therefore has a more varied grammatical function than in English. See e.g. n.12 on German participles.
6 Cf. Dover, 1997, 28: ‘I propose to replace “sentence” by “main-clause-finite-verb unit” (MCF for short)’. However, there are significant problems with Dover’s schema, which I will discuss below.
7 Greenbaum, 1996, 322ff. In grammatical terms, there are various exceptions to this rule: e.g. orthographic sentences which contain more than one grammatical sentence, separated by a colon or dash; elliptical sentences; and sentences deliberately flouting the conventions of sentence structure.
8 Punctuation is generally thought to have been introduced by Aristophanes of Byzantium in the third century B.C. (see e.g. Sandys, 1921, 126ff.), although there is controversy over whether some sort of punctuation existed earlier, on the basis of Isocr. 15.59; Arist. Rh. 1407b13 and 1409a21 (although see also Immerwahr, 1990, 168, on the ‘sporadic use of punctuation throughout the fifth century’, used ‘to separate words into groups’). Pfeiffer, 1968, 178ff. cites these passages as evidence for some sort of punctuation as early as Isocrates. However, Isocr.15.59 and Arist.Rh.1409a21, suggest that even if the paragraphos was being used, punctuation, in the modern sense, was not an essential part of the written Greek text. Cf. e.g. Thompson, 1893, 69-70, and Turner, 1987, 8-10. By contrast, Wake, 1957, 334, claims that periods were clearly marked by a paragraphos representing the author’s intentions. Yet, as Turner shows, it seems that the oldest papyri used the paragraphos only to indicate the end of major sections, changes of speaker (cf. Isocr. 15. 59), or quoted verse from surrounding prose. Cf. also e.g. Lamedica, 1992, 327, on the Derveni papyrus. Lamedica claims that the paragraphos functioned either to demarcate either a lemma or as the sole means of indicating quotation from other authors or works, both in the Derveni papyrus and other texts. Even the third passage, Arist.Rh.1407b13, provides no certain evidence for punctuation. While it uses διαστήματα, which later comes to be understood as ‘punctuate’, the term is only used three times in pre-Hellenistic Greek, all within this passage, and the final usage especially (1407b18) does not appear to denote ‘punctuation’ in the modern sense, raising serious questions about its meaning: διον γὰρ τὸ ἄει, πρὸς διηπότερο ἅπασθαμα.
rule only uses ‘and’ within sentences, Greek units regularly begin with the conjunctions καλ and δέ. Therefore, in terms of conjunctions as well as punctuation, Greek does not have formal markers to demarcate the division between units and individual clauses or groups of clauses within units, so that it is often difficult to identify the boundaries of an individual unit with any precision.

The peculiarity of Greek can also be seen in the role of specific parts of speech, such as participles. Verbless participial phrases or ‘clauses’ are a prevalent and multifunctional feature of Greek writing. Greek’s use of the future participle to denote purpose or a participle to express the verb in certain types of indirect speech has no counterpart in a language like English. Thus, analysis of Greek must take into account such differences in the range and function of the participial clause.

3.2.2 Approaches to unit organisation, ancient and modern.

Ancient rhetorical theories concerning the units of speech and their organisation are of limited use for my purposes, given that the extant works provide no consistent

---

9 The lack of clear division in written Greek can perhaps be seen to reflect the influence of orality on the structure of Greek prose. Cf. Greenbaum, 1996, 322ff. on the difficulties of dividing up spoken English, in which ‘neither intonation nor pauses signal unequivocally the ends of speech units that might be thought to correspond to orthographic sentences’. English grammarians use the term ‘clause-cluster’ to denote the approximate equivalent of the orthographic sentence in spoken English, acknowledging its indeterminacy. This may be a useful notion to keep in mind when considering Greek. Cf. e.g. Chantraine, 1950, 359, who talks about a phrase in the Republic as ‘pas de période, mais une phrase sinuëse qui reproduit le mouvement du style parlé’. On orality’s influence on the structure of Greek prose, see e.g.: Demetr.Eloc.1; and Arist.Rh.1409b15, on breathing as a factor in determining the length of cola and periods; Parkes, 1992, 1, on punctuation as ‘a phenomenon of the written language’; and Kühner-Gerth, 1955, I, 93, 353, on Greek and modern punctuation as similar in principle, but based on natural pauses as opposed to syntax respectively.

10 I follow e.g. Denniston, 1952, 69, in using the term ‘participial clause’. For although ‘clauses’ are generally understood in e.g. English to include finite verbs, Greek participles can fulfil many functions of a finite verb. Furthermore, even in English grammar, clauses with a participle as their verb are recognised as clauses (i.e. non-finite clauses). See e.g. Quirk, 1985, 49ff.

11 By comparison, the function of English participles is severely restricted. See e.g. Quirk, 1973, 311, on the ‘structural deficiencies’ of participial clauses. Since participles are uninflated, the subject of a verbless participle ‘clause’ must supposedly be the same as the subject of the main clause, although this rule is often broken in normal casual usage.

12 Even in German, which has inflected participles and participial verbless ‘clauses’, participles are restricted in terms of tense and voice, and ‘clauses’ are rare and restricted to ‘formal written registers’ (Durrell, 1996, 270-5).

13 The particularities of Greek can also be seen e.g. in the infinitives. For more on participles and infinitives see my critique of Dover’s ‘MCF’s’, p.43, below.
and clear definitions. Aristotle uses the terms περιοδος and κόλον to denote larger and smaller divisions, while Demetrius adds a yet smaller division, the κόμμα. They divide speech into λέξις ελανένη ('continuous' or 'strung together'), characteristic of the old historiographers, and λέξις καταστραμμένη, speech in periods. Whereas the period bears certain similarities to the modern period, as Dover points out, the kolon is clearly not equivalent to the modern syntactic clause. Kolon divisions appear to depend on a combination of syntax, semantics, and length, while the period was primarily delimited by completeness of sense. Numerous points, such as the two main types of λέξις, Aristotle's view of kola as either antithetical or divided, or Demetrius' description of the three different types of period, are of great stylistic interest. Overall, however, the definitions of these terms are too vague and varied to use as precise terminology for stylistic categorisation.

In spite of such difficulties, the unitary organisation of Greek texts is an important aspect of Greek style and has been widely discussed. I have concentrated specifically on the detailed treatments of this topic in Denniston, 1952, and Dover, 1997, which seem broadly representative of the major trends in modern works. Denniston takes into account the syntactic-stylistic differences between English and

---

14 Dover, 1997, 37-40, outlines the main differences between ancient theories and shows the difficulties of constructing firm definitions. See also Usher, 1973, 41, on the 'unresolved question' of period length.
15 Arist.Rh.1409b13ff.
16 Demetr.Eloc.9.
17 Although Demetrius uses the term διημένη.
18 See e.g. the first example at Arist.Rh.1409b34ff., which contains two kola, but would be seen as one clause, in terms of English grammar. Fowler, 1982, claims that the Aristotelian period was defined 'logically' as opposed to 'rhythmically', arguing convincingly against almost all of the main arguments in support of the latter. However, some care must be taken over using 'logical' to describe the Aristotelian/Demetrian period, especially in view of passages such as Demetr.Eloc.32 on the differences between the period and the enthumëma. See also Usher, 1973, 41.
19 Although the usefulness of this classification is limited, especially when dealing with the non-periodic style. See e.g. Fowler, 1987, 54-5, on Aristotle's discussion of λέξις ελανένη as 'a foil for the discussion of the periodic style'; Bakker, 1997, 36 and 38: 'it [λέξις ελανένη] is negatively defined with respect to the positive qualities of the periodic style'.
20 Rhet.1409b33.
21 Eloc.19-21.
22 Other works include e.g. Webster, 1941; Norden, 1915, passim; comments in Chantraine, 1951; Des Places, 1951, and Humbert, 1953, who both concentrate only on specific aspects of 'phrase' structure in Plato.

Chapter 3 42
Greek in his points about individual features like hendiadys.\textsuperscript{24} Discussing unit organisation, however, he uses the terms 'sentence', 'clause', 'period' and 'kolon' without definition,\textsuperscript{25} and his treatment is restricted to the categories and authors discussed in ancient rhetorical theory, as if these categories were clearly defined.\textsuperscript{26} Although he makes many interesting observations, he employs the term 'period' in contexts where it is neither clearly applicable nor, if applicable, the most profitable way for a passage to be classified. A passage such as Symposium 182d-183c, described as a 'period...almost too straggling to be called a period',\textsuperscript{27} would benefit from a different framework of reference. Furthermore, those prose 'sentences' which do not ostensibly conform to the restrictive ancient schemata find no place within his account.

Dover goes to the opposite extreme. To avoid the difficulties involved in the use of sentences and punctuation to divide the Greek text, he replaces the sentence as a unity of analysis with the 'MCF (main-clause-finite-verb unit)'.\textsuperscript{28} However, while the 'MCF' avoids problems associated with certain modern terminology, it is far too dependent on modern linguistic frameworks to be an adequate way of understanding the organisation of Greek. Dover himself considers the difficulties occasioned by constructions such as \(\mu\nu\varepsilon\nu\) and \(\delta\varepsilon\) clauses, which comprise two 'MCFs', but cannot be seen as entirely independent clauses.\textsuperscript{29} Yet many other problems are passed over in silence and his schema often seems arbitrary. For example, 'causal \(\varepsilon\tau\varepsilon\ell\)', with a finite verb, is seen as an 'MCF', while participial clauses with a definite causal force are not included amongst the list of 'MCFs'.\textsuperscript{30} Thus, two semantically equivalent\textsuperscript{31} constructions are treated as having radically different linguistic functions, without any stated reason. Similarly, when more than one infinitive follows a verb such as \(\varphi\alpha\varphi\iota\) in indirect discourse, all but the first infinitive are said to be 'MCFs', 'in order not to posit MCFs of extreme and unrealistic complexity'.\textsuperscript{32} Rather than considering

\textsuperscript{24} Denniston, 1952, 61-5.
\textsuperscript{25} Cf. Webster, 1941, on Greek 'sentence-construction'.
\textsuperscript{26} See Denniston, 1952, 60-75, on 'Sentence-structure and Antithesis'. See especially 66-74.
\textsuperscript{27} Denniston, 1952, 70.
\textsuperscript{28} Dover, 1997, 27-8.
\textsuperscript{29} Dover, 1997, 30-32.
\textsuperscript{30} Dover, 1996, 29.
\textsuperscript{31} The sense of 'equivalent' here is loose and not intended to denote absolute synonymy.
\textsuperscript{32} Dover, 1997, 29. Thus, in my Passage V, which is almost entirely in extended indirect discourse, all but the first infinitive, \(\varepsilon\lambda\varphi\alpha\nu\lambda\nu(110c2/ V.6)\), would, apparently, be considered as 'MCFs'.

\textit{Chapter 3} 43
the Greek linguistic feature *per se*, different syntactic status is being accorded to verbs with an identical syntactic function, without explanation, so as to fit a schema which is in effect imposed on the actual linguistic structure of the language. Dover's methodology takes priority over the data it has been set up to analyse and, even if the 'MCFs' could be identified with certainty, it seems unlikely that a unit ill-suited to so many aspects of Greek can shed much light upon the organisation of Greek texts.  

3.2.3 *Definition of the unit.*

It is not possible to distinguish individual units of the Greek text with absolute certainty and any system which claims to do so risks misrepresenting the structure of literary Greek. Units resemble modern sentences, insofar as they comprise a clause or clause cluster, which generally feature one or more main verb-clauses, often with additional subordinate clauses. Furthermore, they have both completeness and independence on a formal, syntactic, and semantic level. However, because this is not determinate, the decision as to what constitutes the unit must ultimately depend upon the level of completeness and independence in any given instance, so that there are no general criteria suitable for all cases. Thus the very identification of the unit is itself an element of stylistic analysis, dependent on the interpretation of each individual case.

The fact that a sequence of Greek words in context is sometimes difficult to divide should itself be seen as an aspect of style, so that a unit which eliminates these difficulties provides an inaccurate picture of Greek organisation. While it is perhaps desirable to have a schema more systematic and inclusive than Denniston's, this should be based around features of stylistic interest rather than spurious scientific determinacy. Significant features are likely to include the way in which clauses are

33 Cf. p.46, below.
34 Instances such as units featuring ellipse or exclamation, in which the verb is omitted, are exceptions to this.
35 Although the syntax and semantics of linguistic features are heavily interdependent and often inseparable. Consider how difficult it would be to distinguish the syntactic from the semantic aspects of e.g. hypotaxis and parataxis.

---

*Chapter 3*
connected, grouped and ordered; the extent to which discrete units can be identified; and whether both units and clauses are extended or concise.\footnote{36}

\subsection*{3.2.4 Categories for analysis}

I propose to consider unit organisation in terms of three main categories, which constitute a framework amenable to all its aspects and calculated to elucidate its significant features.

\textit{Structure}

'Structure' refers to the grouping and connection of clauses and units, both the extent to which units can be seen as discrete and the way in which individual clauses are linked. The relationship between clauses is categorised mainly in terms of parataxis, between clauses of equal status, and hypotaxis, between clauses of unequal status, where one clause is subordinate to another.\footnote{37} Hypotactic clauses will be classified within the functional grammatical categories: nominal; adverbial; relative; and comparative; as well as their subdivisions. Those participial clauses which fulfil these functions will be included as hypotactic. Apposition will be treated as a type of parataxis.\footnote{38}

\footnote{36} The categories used by Webster, 1941, for the analysis of 'Greek sentence construction', are based on such factors. However, while his overall results and many individual points are of some interest, his categories are generally too broad to be useful for detailed stylistic analysis.\footnote{37} Webster, 1941, also uses these as his main categories, although he has different notions of hypotaxis and parataxis (see also n.38). For definitions see Greenbaum, 1996, 320ff. As discussed by Fowler, 1987, 55, some modern scholars extend 'parataxis' to cover the organisation of the text as a whole, as opposed to individual units. However, unless stated, I will be taking 'parataxis' strictly in its grammatical sense. Cf. Bakker, 39ff. and 62.\footnote{38} Given that apposition links items of equivalent grammatical status, its syntactic function is more akin to parataxis than hypotaxis. Thus I will treat it as paratactic, \textit{contra} Webster, 1941, 389, who calls apposition hypotactic and 'dependent on the main sentence'. See e.g. Quirk, 1985, 1301, on the resemblance of apposition to coordination.
The length of units will be assessed on two separate grounds: a) do they comprise large groups of clauses? b) are the clauses themselves concise or expanded? For the assessment of b) we shall take into account the use of interjections, adjectives and devices such as ellipse, asyndeton, and polysyndeton. I have avoided attempting to analyse unit-length statistically in terms of numbers of components for various reasons. First, the importance of precise numerical data of sentence length for stylistic analysis is questionable, since length can generally be judged adequately without counting and raw data do not in themselves distinguish between different parts of speech, as is required for understanding the composition of the sentence. Then again, even if we accept that the comparisons which such data facilitate may be of use in determining differences between certain authors or periods, existing attempts at statistical analysis have been prone to methodological problems.

The fact is that quantification depends on distinct units whose length can be compared. However, as explained above, Greek units cannot be demarcated with certainty. Moreover, those who claim to have isolated distinct units have introduced dubious categories of inclusion and exclusion for counting components. Dover’s figures for ‘MCF’ lengths are only based on ‘mobile tokens’, so that large numbers of tokens are excluded from calculation. Effectively there would be no distinction in terms of length between items such as a polysyndetic and an asyndetic phrase. Thus, given the limitations of such methods, when considering unit length

39 Here there may be some overlap with ‘structure’, since that also concerns the grouping of clauses. For example, des Places, 1951, talks about an ‘extended’ (‘à rallonges’) construction, comprising chains of e.g. relative clauses, and this could be seen as relevant to both length and structure.
40 This is similar to the category ‘amplification’ in Webster, 1941, 388. ‘Amplification’ constitutes the number of elements added to a ‘grammatical term’ (e.g. adjectives added to a noun) and while this broad and countable category facilitates statistical analysis, it does not discriminate at all between different elements.
41 Cf. Janson, 1964, 27ff., who outlines the difficulties involved in trying to determine a certain and objective unit for analysis. He claims that the ‘shortest syntactic entity’ (i.e. the clause) can be used with a ‘degree of objectivity’, since only the quantification of pauses is controversial (31). However, even if this does give some degree of statistical legitimacy, his results would be of very limited interest, given that they would be unable to shed any light on the combination of clauses within units.
42 See e.g. Wake, 1957, 334, who makes the arbitrary claim that ancient periods, established by the authors themselves, can be identified within the text with certainty.
43 Dover, 1997, 51.
44 Cf. the criteria used by Webster, 1941, 386, which raise similar difficulties.
it is preferable to take into account not quantities alone, but a range of stylistic features.

*Word order and foregrounding*

Under this heading we shall consider unusual word order, hyperbaton, variation in order, and foregrounding of particular words or phrases.

### 3.3 Parallel structures

This category includes all types of microcontextual parallelisms within Greek writing and comprises small groups of individual words or collocations which form parallel structures on either a formal or semantic level, as well as structures such as antithesis, which affect the wider organisation of clauses or units.\(^{45}\)

We may distinguish four main classes: pairs and lists; repetition; pleonasm; and sound effects used as parallel structures. Each has various subdivisions, while certain examples, such as διψητοσ καλ ἀτέλεστοσ (69c5/1.18), may also fit into more than one main class. For this phrase is not only a pair, but is also pleonastic and exhibits significant aural parallelism, both rhythmically and through repetition of initial and final syllables.

It could be argued that some parallels discussed in this section are too uniform and prevalent a feature of Greek texts to be noteworthy. Yet the significant variance, for example, in the number and types of pairs which appear in different passages suggests that their variety and distribution is of stylistic interest.

---

\(^{45}\) On the distinction between these types cf. e.g. Arist.Rh.1409b33ff., who distinguishes between pairs of ἐναντια within clauses and ἡ ἀντικτιμή (antithetical) λέξεις; and Fehling, 1969, 295 and *passim*, who distinguishes between 'Antithese' ('Gegenüberstellungen mit (mindestens) zwei Paar Akzentstellen' and 'einfache Kontraste', in which 'nur ein Begriffspaar geneinandergesetzt ist'.

*Chapter 3* 47
3.3.1 Other views on parallel structures: ancient and modern.

Those features labelled here as 'parallel structures' are not generally treated as a single group by ancient or modern writers on style.\(^{46}\) Although many of them were included amongst ancient rhetorical figures (with the exception of certain pleonasms, word-plays, and forms of repetition), rhetoric tended to focus on the parallel structure of *kola*, comprising figures such as παράσωμα (*equality of kola*)\(^ {47}\) or ἀντιστροφή (the repetition of the same word at the close of successive *kola*).\(^ {48}\) Thus, while ancient rhetorical accounts provide interesting examples, they are of limited use for a more comprehensive treatment of parallel structures, and account for neither pairs and lists *per se*,\(^ {49}\) nor many of the types of repetition to be found in Greek texts.

Although modern analysis is not restricted to the ancient rhetorical categories, the wide-ranging types of parallel structures under consideration are, in general, treated separately. A partial exception to this is Fehling, who examines all kinds of parallel structure as 'Wiederholungsfiguren'. He expands the usual concept of repetition ('Wiederholung') to include structures based on parallel meaning,\(^ {50}\) so that it includes antithesis\(^ {51}\) and only discounts features such as alliteration, where he sees the words as connected purely by sound, not meaning.\(^ {52}\) However, since his primary interest is rhetorical figures, the range of pairs and lists included in his account is narrower than mine and, in general, he presents features mainly as a catalogue without explaining the essential differences between particular types.

---

\(^{46}\) Cf. Fehling, 1969, 7ff. Silk, 1974, from where I take the phrase 'parallel structures' and Silk, 2000, ch.3ff. are notable exceptions.

\(^{47}\) Arist.Rh.1404a24ff.; Demetr.Eloc.25.

\(^{48}\) Hermog.Id.2.36. This device was also known as ἐνορθοσύνετο or *conversio*. See Martin, 1974, 304.

\(^{49}\) Except insofar as these coincide with e.g. * homooteleuton* or * polysyndeton*.

\(^{50}\) Fehling, 1969, 16ff.: 'Der Begriff der Wiederholung ist dabei aber weiter als gewöhnlich gefaßt, da er Strukturerholungen und damit auch die Antithese einschließt.'

\(^{51}\) Although his discussion of antithesis is mainly concerned with gnomic antheses alone.

\(^{52}\) However, true alliteration creates a connection of meaning through sound.
3.3.2 Categories of Analysis.

The four main categories of analysis are as follows. Basic figures for the incidence of each type of feature will be given at the beginning of Chapter 4, and all instances of parallel structure are listed in Appendix I.

**Pairs and lists**

This category includes any instance of pairs and lists, most comprising components with the same syntactic function. Further differentiation between types will be, for example, the classification of pairs as either oppositional and non-oppositional. Pairs and lists coinciding in a particular phrase will be included in both categories. Thus, a phrase like ἄρνον ἀντίθεον καὶ λυπατος ἀντίθεον καὶ φόβου ἀντίθεον (69a7/L.2) would count as three separate pairs and one long list. Similarly, in καθαροὶ καὶ οὐ καταθεσμενοι οὐδὲ διεφθαρμένοι (110e3/V.23) all three terms form a list, and yet οὐ καταθεσμενοι οὐδὲ διεφθαρμένοι also seems to form a significant pair because of the aural resemblance of its two halves, achieved through homoeoteleuton and identical rhythm. This unusual coincidence of lists and pairs is perhaps the most noteworthy characteristic of these two examples.

The category overall has certain similarities to Dover’s ‘multiples’, although my classification is more broadly inclusive. It includes features excluded by Dover, like ‘multiples’ where ‘a single mobile is co-ordinated with an expression composed of two or more’ or ‘different forms of the same lexeme are co-ordinated’. An example of the former is ὁ διαφορομοῖον τε καὶ πάντων αἰτίος (97c2/III.3) and, of the latter, πίνοντά τε καὶ πεπώκοτα (117c7/VI.7).

---

53 It is in cases such as this that the limitations of a purely numerical analysis are especially apparent. For numerical analysis cannot take into account all the possible combinations of e.g. lists and pairs and so can provide only general indications as opposed to detailed characterisations of specific features.

54 Dover, 1996, 143: ‘multiples... all stand in exactly the same syntactical relation to what lies outside the sequence’.

55 Dover, 1996, 144 and 145.
This category includes any repetition of a lexeme and its cognates, including instances where the cognate provides the root of a compound lexeme. So, for example, καταλλάττεσθαι (69a8/I.3) and διαλαττόμενα (69b7/I.12) are taken to be repetitions of διαλαγή (69a7/I.2). Four main types of repetition are distinguished which, apart from the third category, ring composition, are based not upon rhetorical figures, but on the proximity of repeated words.

These four categories are:

a) **Juxtaposition** (j): repeated words are either juxtaposed or separated by no more than a preposition (vel sim.). E.g. ἡδονάς πρὸς ἡδονάς (69a7/I.2) or τὰ φυόμενα φύεσθαι (110d3/V.15).

b) **Successive clause or unit** (s): repeated words occur either in a successive clause or at least within the next unit. E.g. αἱ περὶ τὰ τοιαῦτα ἀναγκάζονται πλανᾶσθαι δίκην πίνουσαι τῆς προτέρας τροφῆς κακῆς οὕσης. καὶ μέχρι γε τούτου πλανῶνται ... (81d8-9/II.17-8).

c) **Ring composition** (r): a unit or sequence of units features the same lexeme or lexemes at its beginning and its close. E.g. ὁρατὸν 81c9/II.6 and ὁρῶνται (81d4/II.12). This category is similar to the ancient term κύκλος.

d) **Key word repetition** (k): a certain lexeme is repeated at various points throughout the passage or a long section of the passage. E.g. the use of ἡλπιστα in Passage III.

---

56 Ancient rhetoric also made distance-based distinctions between repetitions. However, these focused mainly on close repetition and repetition in significant places within κόλα. See Lausberg, 1998, 274ff.
58 In instances where exact unit boundaries are uncertain, this category will be subject to questions of stylistic interpretation.
59 See e.g. Denniston, 1952, 90.
60 The term 'key-word' is taken from Denniston, 1952, 4.
Overlaps, especially between categories b) and d), are very common, when a lexeme which is repeated periodically throughout the passage is also repeated one or more times within successive clauses or units.

Pleonasm

Pleonasm or semantic repetition comprises instances where a lexeme is conjoined with a synonym or near synonym. Also known as συνωνυμία, amplificatio, or disjunctio,\(^{61}\) it was one of the ancient rhetorical figures, where it mainly refers to the pairing of terms of very similar meaning rather than precise synonyms, thus including examples like ἄτυχον τε καὶ ἀδόξον (82c6/II.52). Although pleonasm is essentially very different from the other, formal, features classified as 'parallel structures', it is a phenomenon which establishes a parallelism between two or more terms, and is therefore included within this category.\(^{62}\)

Sound effects used as parallel structures

The sound effects which are included here are those which create or emphasise a sense of parallelism. These include relevant instances of word-play and assonance, with the latter comprising features such as homoeoteleuton, alliteration, and the repetition of prefixes.\(^{63}\)

3.4 Imagery\(^{64}\)

I will consider as imagery all tropes and figures, 'based on analogy or similarity',\(^{65}\) or else on contiguity or association, classifying them formally\(^{66}\) within five

---

61 Quintilian *Institutio Oratoria*, 9.3.45-47. For further references see also Martin, 1974, 306.
62 Moreover, examples of pleonasm almost always take the form of pairs or lists.
63 On sound effects as reinforcing parallel structures, see Silk, 1996, 193: function (d).
64 The definitions and classifications used here owe much to discussions with Michael Silk and to his treatment of imagery in Silk, 1974; 1996; and forthcoming.
65 See Silk, 1974, 5: 'based...refers to the logical basis'. Cf. Day Lewis, 1947, 18: an image is 'a figure of speech expressing some similarity or analogy'; Black, 1981, 70, on the general conception of metaphor. For the inclusion of metonymy (tropes based on 'contiguity') within imagery, see e.g. Ullmann, 1964, 177.
categories: metaphor; metonymy; simile and comparison; analogy; and aural imagery. Metaphor, metonymy, and aural imagery are also categoriseable as 'implicit' imagery, as opposed to simile, comparison, and analogy, which are 'explicit', insofar as they are designated by a formal marker. To distinguish between the verbal components of imagery I use the terms 'tenor' and 'vehicle'. The 'vehicle' is the 'deviant' and 'extraneous' element, applied to the 'tenor' ('non-deviant element') in a sense which deviates from its normal usage, and introduced for the purposes of comparison. So, for example, in τὰ ἐνθάδε εἶναι χρώματα ὀπερ δείγματα, ὥς ὁ γραφὴς καταχρώνται (110b8-c1), δείγματα is a vehicle term, while τὰ ἐνθάδε εἶναι χρώματα is the tenor. The types of imagery are defined as follows:

**Metaphor**

Those tropes based on analogy or similarity, including personification.

**Metonymy**

Those tropes based on contiguity or association, including synecdoche.

**Aural Imagery**

This comprises rhythmic or other sound effects which function like metaphor.

---

66 In order to distinguish between metaphor and metonymy and to define aural imagery, however, it will be necessary to appeal to semantic and functional aspects.


68 Definitions taken from Silk, 1996, 967.

69 'Tenor' and 'vehicle', introduced by Richards, 1936, 96, are widely used in discussions of metaphor. My own use of these terms follows Silk, 1974, 8-14, and passim, insofar as I apply them to imagery in general and resist seeing them in terms of a 'literal/figurative' opposition.

70 See Silk, 1996, 967. Cf. also Wellek and Warren, 1963, 194, on 'contiguity'.

71 To a certain extent sound effects used as parallel structures can be considered as aural imagery because of their 'associative function'.

72 See Silk, 1974, 177 n.1, on the lack of an 'adequate typology of the poetic functions of alliteration or of sound patterning generally'. He includes a detailed discussion of 'aural interaction', but is only concerned with those examples where aural effects coincide with semantic imagery.
Consider, for example, the first lines of Tennyson's *Tithonus*:

The woods decay, the woods decay and fall,
The vapours weep their burthen to the ground.

Here the falling cadence of the second line contributes to the impression of slow degeneration and melancholy decay evoked by this image and the poem as a whole. Gentle resignation is emphasised by the use of the soft archaic 'burthen' rather than burden.  

Various critics have worried about this phenomenon, having mistakenly understood aural imagery as supposedly relying on the fixed or independent semantic force of phonetic elements of language. Since phonetic elements clearly do not have such a force they infer that aural imagery itself cannot exist. However, given that this phenomenon obtains a semantic force in conjunction with the meaning of the words in which it occurs, it remains unaffected by such anxieties. The case for aural imagery is perhaps even more cogent in a classical context, in as much as aural effects are more readily appreciated within cultures accustomed to oral delivery.

Aural imagery is, moreover, not limited to straightforward reinforcement of the semantic by given factors on the phonological level, but can also be significant insofar as they diverge. The 'river' metaphor of Heraclitus fr. B49a -

\[
\text{ποταμῶς τοῖς ἀυτοῖς ἐμβαίνομεν τε καὶ οὐκ ἐμβαίνομεν, εἴμεν τε καὶ οὐκ εἴμεν.}
\]

- seems to indicate the ceaseless flux and lack of stable identity in the physical world. Yet the symmetry and regularity of the repetitive structure creates an aural

---

73 On aural imagery in general cf. e.g. Wellek and Warren, 1963, 162, who give three levels of 'sound-imitation', the third being 'the important level of sound-symbolism or sound-metaphor', which concerns the 'expressive effects' of certain sounds and is 'a sound-symbolism far more pervasive than onomatopoeia'.

74 E.g. Ransom, 1938, 93-4, objects to aural imagery for the reason that 'phonetic elements' have only a contingent semantic force, entirely dependent on the 'logical meanings' of the words.

75 Cf. Wellek and Warren, 1963, 161-2; Richards, 1936, 60;

impression of order and balance, which could be taken to suggest a more fundamental underlying principle of order, beneath the apparent disorder construed from the transience of the perceived physical phenomena.

**Simile and comparison**

Simile and comparison are figures based on analogy or similarity, which include a formal marker such as ὡς, ὡστε, or a 'comparative adjective and a noun in the genitive case'.

**Analogy**

'Analogy' here refers to 'paratactic analogy', an example being Virgil's

Triste lupus stabulis, maturis frugibus imbres,

arboribus venti, nobis Amaryllidis irae.

This is comparison which lacks a formal marker, but is still explicit imagery and formally distinctive, insofar as both tenor and vehicle are fully spelt out grammatically, unlike in the case of metaphor. It is important to distinguish between this '(paratactic) analogy' and 'analogy' in its broad sense, which can be defined, for example, as 'any mode of reasoning in which one object or complex of objects is likened or assimilated to another'. Although analogy in the broad sense provides the logical basis for metaphor, simile, and comparison, it is itself non-verbal and distinct from 'imagery proper', having no essential association with deviant usage of terminology.

---

77 Silk, 1974, 19. He also discusses the relationship between comparison and short simile.
78 See Silk, 1974, 14.
79 Eclogues 3.80-1.
80 Lloyd, 1966, 175. Cf. Soskice, 1985, 55, on analogy as 'describing a type of relationship' which is 'non-linguistic'.

*Chapter 3* 54
The points that follow are only a brief introduction to the numerous and significant difficulties involved in the identification of imagery.

The formal recognition of an image depends on our perception of deviant usage. For example, a phrase like χωριζόµενα δὲ φρονήσεως καὶ ἀλλαττόµενα ἀντὶ ἄλληλων μὴ σκιαγραφία τις ἢ ἡ τοιαύτη ἀρετή (69b6-7/1.11-12) is easily recognisable as imagery. σκιαγραφία is the deviant element (vehicle), since there is no sense in which virtue can really be a σκιαγραφία ('shadow-painting'). However, the case is not so clear in a phrase such as διπέρ ἡμῖν τὸ ὕδωρ τε καὶ ἐκλαττά ἐστι πρὸς τὴν ἡμετέραν χρέαν, τούτῳ ἐκεῖ τὸν ἄρα (111a8/V.35), which describes how for those living on the truth earth (ἐκεῖ) air has an equivalent use to that served by water and the sea for us (i.e. the inhabitants of our earth). Whether this phrase is to be construed as imagery depends on the extent to which the role of air 'there' (ἐκεῖ) can only be understood in different terms from the role of water and sea on our earth.

Moreover, the situation is not helped by the lack of any agreed use of the term 'imagery'. It sometimes denotes not only the literary tropes or figures under discussion here, but various other categories, which frequently influence and confuse definitions of the former. Particularly in the case of metaphor, which has always dominated discussion of imagery, there are numerous definitions, such as: the Aristotelian substitution model; metaphor as generating a new meaning through the

---

81 See p.52, above.
82 On the lack of adequate definition and the difficulties involved see e.g. Furbank, 1970, 68ff. and 60: 'The trouble with "imagery" is that it appears to refer to some technical feature in literature - like "rhythm" or "stanza" or "metaphor" - yet it is hard to discover what'.
83 These are, for example, the psychological phenomenon of mental imagery or associations with the image as presented in the visual arts. On the confusion of these ideas, see e.g. Furbank 1970, 21-3; and Ullmann, 1964, 176-7. See also Preminger and Brogan, 1993, 559-66, on 'mental imagery; figures of speech; cluster criticism; and symbol and myth; as the four main classes of imagery as understood in the twentieth century.
84 See e.g Arist.Po.1457b6ff., although, cf. Soskice, 1985, 8-11, who claims that the ‘crude’ substitution view actually belongs to the ‘empiricist critics’ of Aristotle and Quintilian.
combination of tenor and vehicle; or Davidson’s definition of metaphor as belonging to the ‘domain of use’ and contained in a sentence understood as literally false.

3.4.2 ‘Live’ and ‘dead’ imagery

As well as such general difficulties there is also a practical problem of identification which centers on the specific terminology used in an image, especially a metaphor. The characteristic question that arises is: can an image be considered ‘live,’ insofar as it represents a ‘deviation from the terminological norm’? For a spoken language, a sensible user’s sense of usage is adequate. For a dead language, however, the question can be decided only by surveying usage of the word in extant literature. For example, the use of ὁκοπείν (97d2) to suggest ‘intellectual enquiry’ would be taken as ‘dead’ metaphor since, although the earliest appearances of its root ὁκοπ- suggest a sense of visual observation, its intellectual sense had, by Plato’s time, become standard usage. By contrast, to assess whether a word such as βαρύνεται (81c9/II.7) constitutes live metaphor is less straightforward. It is important to establish which authors’ usage of terminology can be taken ‘as operationally adequate evidence of “normal Greek”.’ A detailed list of ‘reliable’ authors has been drawn up by Silk, and mainly comprises ‘prosaic prose authors’ of the ‘classical or pre-classical period’, although Homer, as a standard for later writers, is also included.

85 Soskice, 1985, 31ff. labels these as ‘incremental’ theories. See e.g. Black, 1981, 79 and passim on ‘interaction’.
87 See Silk, 1974, 27ff. Cf. e.g. Soskice, 1974, 83. Although there is a possibility that even a dead image may retain the force of both meanings simultaneously (see Silk, 1974, 27). It is not helpful to speak of a dead image being ‘revived’, contra Louis, 1945, 17, who talks about Plato’s ability to recapture the forgotten metaphorical sense of a word. Cf. Soskice, 1974, 74ff. on ideas about dead metaphor ‘shaping thought’, which have become highly influential in recent discussions of cognition.
88 Criteria should be assessed in terms of the quality, quantity, and period of usage (categories taken from Silk, 1974, 34). For chronological parameters of the survey see 3.1.2, above.
89 E.g. Hom.II.2.792; Od.4.524; h.Hom.2.62.
90 E.g. S. Ant. 41; Ar.Eq.264; Hdt 1.32; Th. 1.1.3; Isoc.18.38.
91 Silk, 1974, 43.
92 See Silk, 1974, 41-8 and Appendix III. The over-riding criterion for normal usage, as Silk makes clear, is an adequate spread of evidence, preferably across ‘reliable’ authors.

Chapter 3
3.5 Lexis

My category of lexis subsumes various types of lexeme and idiom. Lexical phenomena are in many ways the easiest to analyse, given that we are dealing with discrete data which can be quantified and whose distributions can be established with the help of lexica and data bases. Nevertheless, compared to other stylistic categories, there are considerable difficulties in devising categories of analysis which will select significant phenomena from large quantities of potentially relevant data. The categories which I will use build on the systems employed in other works on this topic, but also reflect my own sense of which lexemes, idioms, or word-types are of particular stylistic interest.93

3.5.1 Approaches to lexis, ancient and modern.

Treatment of lexis in ancient literary theory is of little use for my purposes. Though extant examples give valuable insight into ancient intuitions about word-classification and contain isolated points of interest like the loan words of Aristotle Poetics 22, ancient theory offers no systematic analysis of stylistic tendencies and also merges confusingly with discussion of linguistics and with quite different stylistic features such as imagery. Thus, the discussion of diction in Aristotle’s Poetics, which Halliwell reasonably calls ‘more linguistic than stylistic’,94 begins by classifying parts of speech and discussing phonology and types of statement.95 This is followed by definition of word-types, with reference to such miscellaneous considerations as register, morphology and imagery.96 Finally, there is a series of prescriptive stylistic points about what constitutes suitable diction, with respect to those aspects of diction dealt with in the previous chapter.97 Similar topics are considered by Quintilian under the heading of proprietas verborum,98 which covers diction, insofar as it involves aspects of register and avoidance of obsolete and

94 Halliwell, 1995b, 5.
95 Po.1456b20ff.
96 Po.1457a31ff.
97 Po.1458a18. Cf. Rh.1405a3ff.
98 Quintilian Institutio Oratoria 8.1ff.
therefore incomprehensible archaisms. Yet it is also the heading under which Quintilian recommends the avoidance of other stylistic features as diverse as excessive hyperbaton, brevity, and over-extended periods.99

There is by contrast an enormous range of relevant modern studies, varying greatly in both scope and aims. For example: Amman, 1953, traces the usage and background of -όκος adjectives in Plato; Long, 1968, considers the distribution and function of various types of abstract nouns in Sophocles; Lyons, 1963, is an attempt to understand the meaning of various members of a certain lexical field, in terms of the linguistic relationships between them; studies such as those by Peppler, 1910, or Handley, 1953, aim to show that certain morphological forms are characteristic of particular genres of writing. Such works are enormously useful, both as collections and analyses of data, as well as indicating profitable criteria for lexical investigation.

3.5.2 Categories of Analysis

I will group lexical phenomena within two main categories, according to whether lexemes and idioms are analysed individually or as members of given groups.

Distinctive individual lexemes and idioms

This category consists of lexemes or idioms, whose occurrences in extant literature are either rare or limited to specific authors or genres. It is necessary to consider individual lexemes in terms of their generic background and distribution, since their distinctiveness can only be established with respect to their usage elsewhere. Thus, they will be classified according to their distribution within Greek literature, although more detailed consideration of generic affiliations follows in Chapter 5.

Lexemes are grouped according to their attestation in:

a) particular genre(s)

99 8.1: 14; 19; and 17 respectively.
b) groups of specific authors
c) prose authors exclusively or predominantly

d) verse
e) a particular period

Unless otherwise stated, cognates and derivatives will not be taken into consideration. As well as classifying lexemes according to the genres in which they appear, in instances where they are rare or restricted to a very limited group of texts, usage may be further categorised in terms of: specific authors; numbers of instances in particular authors; specific works.

At various points I will outline the distribution of a particular lexeme (or idiom), listing the authors/genres in which it is found. When a lexeme is extremely rare I will list all instances, also stating the number of times it occurs in each author/genre. For more widespread lexemes, I will list authors/genres and cite a representative selection of instances. Finally, there are also several works which cannot be attributed to a particular author with absolute certainty and might come later than the period of literature I am considering. In many cases such texts only constitute a small sample of the works of an author in which a lexeme is found and have no real bearing on its spread, so that I will not comment on these specifically. However, when they contain one of only few instances of a particular lexeme I will indicate the problematic status of the text by starring and enclosing the reference within square brackets (e.g. [Arist.Col.*]).

*Lexical groups and variety*

This category incorporates different aspects of lexical variety and the distribution of lexemes from various formal, semantic and grammatical groups.

---

100 Examples in comedy or possibly even in tragedy (especially e.g. Euripidean dialogue), when outweighed by a broad prose usage, are not taken necessarily to affect a lexeme's 'prose' status.  
101 Cf. Silk, 1974, 30.
'Lexeme-token ratio'

The 'lexeme-token ratio' calculation is introduced by Dover in order to measure variety in vocabulary.\(^{102}\) It gives the number of different lexemes used in a passage as compared to the total number of tokens (lexemes), and is calculated by dividing the former by the latter.

*Variation and integration of 'lexical fields'.*

'Field-theory' is an area of linguistics developed by German scholars in the 1920s and '30s and based on the idea that the totality of a language's vocabulary may be seen as a number of interrelated 'lexical fields'.\(^{103}\) These are semantic groups, comprising individual lexemes which are defined and demarcated through their relationship to other members of the 'field'. In linguistics this theory is generally applied to testing diachronic, geographical, and cultural variations in language use and has been challenged on a number of grounds.\(^{104}\) Nevertheless, the idea of 'lexical fields' is useful in a stylistic context, insofar as it gives us a framework for considering the extent to which an author uses clusters of lexemes from particular semantic groups; combines lexemes from different groups; or intersperses his use of certain lexical fields with alien terms.

So, for example, in Passage I, lines 69c3-d1/16-22 feature a cluster of religious-mystery terms, including lexemes such as ἀμύητος, καθαλωμ, ἀτελεστος, and τελέω. By contrast, throughout much of Passage IV, different lexical fields are combined, as with the mixture of mathematical, ethical and educational/artistic terminology in 105d13-e1/16-21: τὸ ἀρτιον, τὸ δίκαιον, and μουσικός respectively.

\(^{102}\) I have followed Dover, 1997, 133, in taking into account the following categories of lexemes: 'nouns (excluding proper nouns), adjectives (excluding pronominal adjectives, πῶς and τῶς, and numerals), regular adverbs in -ως, -ῶς, ές, and verbs'; and excluding 'any part of the copula εἶναι...unless it comes immediately after a pause or is negated', 'the present indicative of φἀνει' and 'parenthetic έπη'. Dover further develops the calculation, by introducing an 'index of recurrence', designed to measure repetitiveness. However, for my purposes the simple 'lexeme-token ratio' is sufficient, since investigation of repetition is dealt with in 3.3.2, and with respect of lexis, I am simply assessing variety of vocabulary.

\(^{103}\) Lyons, 1977, 253ff. and 1963, 45ff.

\(^{104}\) E.g. Ullmann, 1962, 249; Öhman, 1953; 127; Lyons, 1977, 260.
Word-forms and 'parts of speech'

This category subsumes the distribution of certain word-forms, 'parts of speech', and sub-divisions of 'parts of speech'. It involves a wide range of formal, grammatical and semantic aspects of style, such as:

i) Morphology - Recurrent usage or distinctive individual examples of certain prefixes, suffixes and compound lexemes; such as the cluster of lexemes beginning with ἐλ- (82b10-c8/II.46-55) or the unusual compound συνεπακολουθεῖντος (81e1/II.18).

ii) Distribution and form of abstract nouns - Abstract nouns are 'those generalizing nouns which denote concepts, qualities, actions etc., in contrast with nouns which refer to physical objects'. Of primary concern are those nouns in -στσ, -μα, and -μός, and nominal formations which comprise τό + neuter adjective or participle; since these are considered to be characteristic of particular periods and styles. However, notable tendencies involving other noun-endings will also be included.

c) Quantity - Predominance or absence of particular parts of speech, such as the absence of adjectives in Passage VI.

3.6 Final remarks

Stylistic analysis examines the microcontextual features of the text. Within this 'microcontext' the different features can be loosely separated into three different categories of scale, ranging from those which involve whole units and phrases to those which involve single words. The widest level is, of course, unit organisation, including parallel structures such as antithesis, which affect the organisation of units

---

105 Because of their structural role, particles are not considered here, but under 'Unit Organisation' (above).
106 Long, 1968, 12-13. Although, as Long points out, such a definition does have certain limitations.
as a whole. Moving down the scale, there are those features involving small collocations, such as parallel structures like pairs and lists. Finally, some features consist only of individual words or idioms. Thus, unit organisation is restricted to the first of these and lexis to the third, while parallel structures appear on both the widest and the median level. The scope of imagery can really only be decided for each individual feature, since its form and scope are so variable. As part of the analysis it will be interesting to examine the interaction of these levels, as well as discussing the separate classes, like imagery or unit organisation, by themselves.
Chapter 4

Analysis of passages

4.1 Tables of data

4.1.1 Incidence of parallel structures

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

4.1.2 Lexeme-token ratio

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Passage</th>
<th>I</th>
<th>II</th>
<th>III</th>
<th>IV</th>
<th>V</th>
<th>VI</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ratio</td>
<td>0.73</td>
<td>0.68</td>
<td>0.52</td>
<td>0.69</td>
<td>0.73</td>
<td>0.79</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1 I give a full list of these parallel structures, classified by type, in Appendix I.
We can divide this passage into three stylistic sections (indicated in bold): ὁ μακάριε Σιμίλα...μὴ καθαρίσως τις ἤ (69a7-c3/1.1-16); καὶ κινδυνεύουσι καὶ...
βάκχοι δὲ τε παύρω (69c3-d1/1.16-22) and οὗτοι δὲ εἰσίν... ἐν αὐτέχνω (69d1-e4/1.22-33). The first two have many similarities, while the third is entirely distinct, although there is throughout a slight tendency towards prose lexis as well as many parallel structures, insofar as Passage I contains most pairs, ‘juxtaposed’ and ‘close’ repetition, pleonasm, and sound effects.
4.2.1 The first two sections

Parallel structures are one of the most marked features in these two initial sections, in terms of number and diversity. Repetition mainly occurs here, with unusually high quantities of both ‘juxtaposition’ and ‘successive clause or unit’ repetition, like οὐδὲ ἀληθὲς ἔχει, τὸ δ’ ἀληθὲς or the repeated ἄρετή in 69a7/I.2; b3/8; and b7/12. ἡδονᾶς πρὸς ἡδονᾶς καὶ λύπας πρὸς λύπας καὶ φόβου πρὸς φόβου καταλλάττεσθαι (69a7-8/I.2-3) is also noteworthy, being a striking sequence of three parallel repeated pairs with parallelism intensified by the repeated καὶ and πρὸς.

Overall this passage has more pairs than the others, with most pairs and all lists in its first two sections. Of these, all but two are reinforced by other parallel structures, ranging from the common homoeoteleuton, like οὕνωμενά τε καὶ πιπραςκόμενα (69b1/I.6), to pairs such as κεκαθαρμένος τε καὶ τετελεσμένος (69c6/I.19), which combine homoeoteleuton, rhythmical identity, and pleonasm. An unusually high number of the pairs are also oppositional, such as: μελζω πρός ἐλάττω (69a8/I.3); οὕνωμενά τε καὶ πιπραςκόμενα (69b1/I.6); and προσγιγνομένων καὶ ἀπογιγνομένων (69b4/I.9).

Parallelism and opposition also occur on a wider structural level, the first two sections being predominantly antithetical, although with certain differences. The second section’s two antitheses, unlike the first’s, have highly symmetrical word order and form, and only the slightest syntactic variation: δς δν ἀμύητος...μετὰ θεῶν οἰκήσει (69c5-c7/I.18-20) and ναρθηκοφόροι μὲν πολλοί, βακχοί δὲ τε παῦροι (69c8-d1/I.21-2).

By contrast the first section’s two antitheses, δ μακάριε Σιμιλα...φρόνησις (69a6-10/I.1-5) and καὶ τούτου μὲν πάντω... ο ὄδι ἀληθὲς ἔχει (69b1-8/I.6-13), are

---

2 Apart from προῳμιήθην (69d4/25; d5/26) and ὑβδώσ (69d2/I.24; d5/27).
3 Both these types of repetition are most frequent in Passage I (see Table 4.1.1), all the more significant given that these repetitions are almost entirely restricted to two thirds of the passage.
4 Cf. also οὐδὲν ἦγετο οὐδὲ ἀληθὲς (69b8/I.13) and ἀμύητος καὶ ἀτέλειτος (69c5/I.18).
5 The second of these is a misquotation of a hexameter (πολλοί and ναρθηκοφόροι have been reversed here): see Rowe, 1993a, 151.
unit and, to a certain degree, resembles the ancient period, because of antithetical structure and the strong syntactic and semantic completeness attained in their final words. Though shorter and not antithetical the final unit of the first section is also similarly complete: \( \text{τὸ δ' ἄληθες...μὴ καθαρμός τίς ἐν} \) (69b8-c3/I.13-16).

The first part is, as well, markedly paratactic and generally extended. Simple apposition links many clauses with, for example, the second unit comprising three participial clauses, two in ‘explanatory apposition’ to the subject. Additional and adversative particles are prevalent, like καὶ, δὲ, ἀλλά and μὲν/δὲ, while there is a general absence of inferential and confirmatory particles. This contributes to extension, along with the polysyndetic lists, appositional structure, features like pleonasm, and, in one case (69a7-8/I.2-3), the striking repetition discussed above.

The most outstanding features of the passage as a whole are aspects of word order and imagery:

\[
\text{μὴ γὰρ οὖχ αὖθι ἡ ὡς ὁρθὴ πρὸς ἀρετὴν ἄλλαγή, ἠδονᾶς πρὸς ἠδονᾶς καὶ λύπας πρὸς λύπας καὶ φόβον πρὸς φόβον καταλλάττεσθαι, μελζῶ πρὸς ἐλαττῶ ὁσπερ νομίσματα, ἀλλ' ἐκεῖνο}
\]

6 Arist. Rh. 1409b36ff. and Demetr. Eloc. 32.
7 E.g. Dover, 1997, 38-9, on the ancient period as ‘ended’; and Ch.3 p.42, above.
8 My division of the units in this passage differs from the OCT, which punctuates all three units as one continuous sentence. There are, admittedly, certain difficulties in positing a clear division between οὖν ἄληθες ἔχη and τὸ δ' ἄληθες, since the δὲ of the latter provides a strong formal link. Nevertheless, the μὲν/δὲ antithesis is complete at οὖν ἄληθες ἔχη; and τὸ δ' ἄληθες, although connected, introduces a new point.
9 This unit could perhaps be seen as an example of Aristotle’s ‘divided (διηρμενή)’ period (Rh. 1409b33).
10 Geddes, 1863, 36, says that χωρίζομεν ‘appears to be in the nominative, being in explanatory apposition to ή τοιαύτη ἄρετὴ’: cf. χωρίζομεν above. Burnet, 1911, 42, suggests that ὠφίζεμαι τε καὶ πιπρακοήμενα may be an interpolated scholium on καὶ μέτα τοῦτο because ὠνεῶ is not attested significantly elsewhere in the present passive, and even when appearing in the passive in other tenses, it has an active sense. Finally, excision would also mean that ‘the simile does not break down’. Yet contra Burnet there are examples of ὠνεῶ in the passive with a passive sense (e.g. Is.11.42; D.19.209) and its use here is in keeping with the structure of the passage, making this part of the antithesis parallel with the use of χωρίζομενα. Moreover, the tenor/vehicle discrepancies of this image are very significant within its context (see Ch.6) and should not be seen to imply its inauthenticity.
11 In the first sixteen lines of this passage (up to μὴ καθαρμός τίς ἐν), καὶ is found 21 times, as compared to 9 in Passage III, 1-16 (97b8-d7). γὰρ occurs just once, with an assertive rather than causal force, and οὖν; ἀν, ἐλ, and δὴ not at all, unlike in the more hypotactic and logically connected section from Passage III (particles are classified as according to Denniston, 1950, xlvi-xlii).
13 E.g. τὸ δ' ἄληθες τῷ δυτὶ.
There are two striking instances of foregrounding through word order, with extended clauses broken by the short clauses φρόνησις μέν πάντα καὶ μετὰ τοῦτού ὁνομενα τε καὶ πιπρασκόμενα τῷ ὠντι ἢ καὶ ἀνδρεία καὶ σωφροσύνη καὶ δικαιοσύνη καὶ συλληβδὴν ἀληθῆς ἀρετῆ, μετὰ φρονήσεως, καὶ προσγγυμομένων καὶ ἀπογγυμομένων καὶ ἡδονῶν καὶ φόβων καὶ τῶν ἄλλων πάντων τῶν τοιούτων· (69α6-b5/I.1-10)

This section begins with a simile, part of an antithesis, whose vehicle term νομίσματα functions as an analogue of the idea of virtue being attained by swapping pleasures, pains, or fears. τὸ νόμισμα is retained as the vehicle in the second part of the antithesis, although there is a formal change to metaphor, continuing in the next unit, where ὁνομενα τε καὶ πιπρασκόμενα acts as a vehicle for the implicit tenor of exchanging of pleasures and emotions. The initial statement of subject in both parts is further distinguished by the assonantal phrases αὕτη ἢ ἡ ὀρθή (πρὸς ἀρετὴν ἄλλαγη) καὶ ἐκεῖνο μόνον τὸ νόμισμα ὀρθὸν. Here the aural effect draws these two pivotal phrases together, suggesting both their importance and also

14 Silk, 1974, 68-9, points out that prominent positioning per se is not emphatic. However, here it is not just the fact that φρόνησις stands at the end of a unit, conventionally a position of prominence, but factors such as its isolation and contrast to the other clauses, as well as how it confers semantic completeness on the unit, which all ensure that it is emphatic. μετὰ φρονήσεως in the next unit is similar.

12 Another interesting example of word order, this time in the following section, is the quasi-chiasmus at the beginning and ending of... ἡ κάθαρος... (69c1-c3/I.14-16)... καθαριός... τε... ἡ.

16 Pearson, 1975, 144ff. has suggested that hiatus was sometimes used in Attic oratory to add weight to a particular phrase. One might see αὕτη ἢ ἡ ὀρθή as an instance of such usage. Although hiatus
connectedness. However, such aural similarities also conflict with structure, insofar as antithesis opposes rather than likens them. Overall the coin image is pervaded by significant discrepancies between the tenor and the vehicle, which I will discuss more fully in Chapter 6.

Moving on to a new metaphor, Socrates expresses the suspicion that virtue, when separated from wisdom μὴ σκιαγραφία τις ἦ (69b6/I.12). While this is the first extant literary appearance of σκιαγραφία, its established pre-Hellenistic usage appears to denote a form of painting. Here it can be construed as live metaphor, with implications of illusion and false imitation. It may then also be tempting to see the next words as imagery, where virtue without wisdom is described as ἀνθραποδώδης. Yet, although this adjective is fairly rare, with this apparently its first extant use, in the Phaedrus pleasures preceded by pains δικαίως ἀνθραποδώδες κέκληται, implying that, in an ethical context, ἀνθραποδώδης is dead metaphor, a view confirmed by its extant spread of instances.

The presence of imagery in the second section of this passage (69d1-e4/I.22-33) is controversial and depends on whether the language of purificatory ritual which itself is not uncommon in this part of the Phaedo, this example is particularly striking because of the successive hiatus and repetition of "ἡ".

17 Cf. Silk, 1974, 176ff. on the "expressive" and "associative" functions of alliteration.
18 Cf. Ch.3, p.53, on the divergence of the phonological and semantic level in aural imagery.
19 σκιαγραφία appears only 8 times in pre-Hellenistic literature: 4 in Plato and 4 in Aristotle. Of these the Phaedo example is the earliest, according to conventional Platonic chronology. Its other instances are Pl.Rep.365c4, 602d2; Criti.107d1; and Arist. (4): Metaph.1024b23; [Protr.*104.3]; Rh.1414a9; Fr.10a.
20 According to e.g. Meautis, 1939, 37 and Schuhl, 1933, 9-13, the term denotes a new art form, dependent on the interplay of light and shadow, introduced by Apollodorus 'the Skiagraphe' at the end of the fifth century, although the term is only found in later sources. See also e.g. σκιαγραφία in Arist.Rh.1414a9.
21 τις might possibly indicate neologism and live metaphor. See Silk, 1974, 52.
22 Cf. Louis, 1945, 72-3.
23 In our period there are only 26 extant examples of the adjective ἀνθραποδώδης. Dating is, once again, dependent on Platonic chronology and whether the Phaedo is seen as definitely prior to for e.g. Xenophon's Memorabilia.
24 Phdr.258e5.
25 Although it may retain some degree of its original literal implications, in view of the Phaedo's recurrent depiction of the soul as bound to and imprisoned by the body.
26 Along with Plato, the earliest examples are in Xenophon. 3 of Xenophon's 5 usages are in the Memorabilia (1.1.16 and 4.2.22) describing ignorance, suggesting that this was a commonplace of Socratic ethical discussion. If so, lack of extant Socratic literature might explain why so few instances of this adjective are found in fifth and early fourth century works. Xenophon's other examples are both philosophical, Hier.5.2.3 and 5.2.7. Apart from Aeschin.2.79, it only appears in ethical philosophy: Arist. (14): e.g. E.N.1128.21; Po.1334a39.
The presence of imagery in the second section of this passage (69d1-e4/I.22-33) is controversial and depends on whether the language of purificatory ritual which dominates it is taken as a metaphor for the processes of philosophical enlightenment, or as an accurate representation of what these processes involve. Does the acquisition of virtue through wisdom appeal to an existing concept of 'purification' or appropriate religious language, in order to express a radically new conception? Yet the question is difficult to answer for various reasons. In a section which appears to consist largely of proverbs, it would be plausible to claim that these proverbs themselves must be understood in a metaphorical sense, within which κάθαρσις and its cognates, which already cover a wide range of related conceptions, could be accommodated.

It is also in this section that the passage's two other distinctive lexemes are found: ναρθηκοφόρος (69c8/I.21) and ἀμύητος (69c5/I.18). Apart from this, there is little to remark on in terms of lexis. Use of abstract nouns is mainly limited to -η, -ος, and -σύν endings, with φρόνησις, κάθαρσις, and καθαρμός the only -σις and -μός nouns. The distinction drawn between κάθαρσις and καθαρμός appears to appeal to a semantic differentiation between these two endings: τὸ δ' ἀληθὲς τῷ ὑπὲρ ἡ κάθαρσις τῆς τῶν τοιούτων πάντων καὶ ἡ σωφροσύνη καὶ ἡ δικαιοσύνη καὶ ἡ ἀνδρεία, καὶ αὐτὴ ἡ φρόνησις μὴ καθαρμός τῆς (69b8ff/I.13ff.). Apart from τὸ σαφές, the few instances of the substantival neuter article and adjective or participle are either used adverbially, like τὸ δ'...

27 δὲν ἀμύητος ... μετὰ θεῶν οἰκήσει (69c3-5/I.18-20) and ναρθηκοφόροι μὲν πολλοί, βίγκοι δὲ τε παῦροι (69c6-7/I.21-22).
28 Any ideas as to the context or usual application of these proverbs are pure speculation, since their source cannot be identified from extant literature. It is possible that, in spite of being introduced as sayings in the passage, they are in fact Plato's own words, since Plato's attribution of ideas to nameless sources is rarely straightforward; contra Louis, 1945, 6, who excludes proverbs from his discussion of Plato's metaphors '... car ils n'ont, évidemment, rien de strictement platonicien'.
29 The terms and its cognates used within this passage are found in many authors of various genres, within a wide range of contexts, including purification from spiritual impurities (e.g. Hdt.I.35; And.1.95; Lys.12.5), religious rites (e.g. Hdt.2.37), and medical cleansing (H.P.14; Inter.18). The earliest uses suggest e.g. a religious context (so Hes.Op.337); or simply 'empty' (e.g. Hom.II.23.61); while the fact that Empedocles named his poem about the cycle of reincarnation and the possibility of escaping the cycle Καθαρμός places it close to the concerns of the Phaedo. Cf. Halliwell, 1986, 185ff. on the varied usage of the 'καθαρσις word-group' and, 187, on the difficulties of deciding whether its use in e.g. the Phaedo is metaphorical.
30 Their distributions are as follows: ναρθηκοφόρος - X. (2): Cyr.2.3.18; Cyr.2.3.20. Pl. (1); and ἀμύητος - And. (2): 1.11; 1.12. Lys. (1): 6.51. Pl. (4): Thk.155e3; Gorg.493a7, 493b5. Arist. (1): Rh.1405a20.
31 Occurring in prose and verse from the fifth century onwards, though with one example in Xenophan.B34.
These expressions reflect the general predominance of prose terminology throughout
the passage. τὸ δοτὶ, for example, only occurs in prose, not before the fifth century.
It is most common in Plato and Aristotle, although also found several times in, for
example, Thucydides, Xenophon, Gorgias, and Demosthenes, suggesting a broad
intergeneric prose usage.\textsuperscript{32} κατὰ ... τὸ δυνατὸν, though less common, has a
similar spread, appearing in Thucydides, Plato, and Demosthenes.\textsuperscript{33} Finally, this
sense of τὸ ἀληθὲς is more difficult to analyse, since the words are common and it is
not always clear whether specific examples represent adverbial usage. As far as I
can tell, adverbial usage is fairly rare, with the clearest two examples coming from
oratory, with τὸ ἀληθὲς opposed to πρόφασιν.\textsuperscript{34}

Various clusters of terms from distinct lexical fields are used here. Most of the first
main section (69a6-b8/I.1-13) combines lexemes of ethics and emotion like
δικαιοσύνη, ἀρετή, ηδονή, and λυπῆ with those concerning financial exchange, like
ἀλλαγή, νόμισμα, and ὠνέομαι. Only the ethical terms persist in the next part of the
passage (69b8/I.13ff.), now mixed with religious initiation terminology, which
continues throughout the middle section (69c3-d1/I.16-22).

\textbf{4.2.2 The final section}

There is comparatively little to say about the final section's style, εὐτοι δ' ἐστὶν...
eὖ δὲ ἔχοι (69d1-e4/I.22-33). Most notably, it completes the transition from
parataxis to hypotaxis which began in the middle section. Units and clauses are
shorter, more varied and more interconnected, semantically and syntactically, so that
discrete units become harder to delimit. Clause structure is dominated by hypotaxis
and especially conditionals. This forges stronger logical links, augmented by the
renewed use of a wider range of conjunctions and particles, including οἷον and δῆ.
The lengthening devices used earlier are absent here, although this section is

\textsuperscript{32} E.g. Th.4.28.2; 4.126.4; X.HG 6.2.25; Mem.4.2.8; Gorg.B3; D.58.31.
\textsuperscript{33} E.g. Th.2.89.9; D.3.6; Pl.Smp.207d1.
\textsuperscript{34} Th.6.33.2 (speech of Hermocrates); Lys.13.12
punctuated and extended by short parenthetical phrases: e.g. κατὰ τὴν ἐμὴν δόξαν (69d2/I.23); ἄν θέως ἔθελη (69d6/I.27); and ὡς ἐμὸι δοκεῖ (69d6/I.27).

There are no instances of imagery, no lists, and no unusual lexemes. Although there are seven pairs, making distribution of pairs fairly even throughout the passage, the final section’s pairs differ greatly from earlier ones and are not combined with other parallel structures, the only exceptions being three instances of pleonasm, for example οὐ χαλεπῶς φέρω οἷς ἀγανακτῶ (69e1/I.30). Furthermore, pairs in this section are also characteristically asymmetrical.

On the whole, therefore, Passage I’s most distinctive stylistic aspects are concentrated in the extended ‘coin’ imagery of its opening section and in the parallel structures which pervade all levels of stylistic structure in the earlier part. By contrast, the final part constitutes a rather understated conclusion.

---

4.3 Passage II: 81c4-82c8

81c4  'Αλλὰ διειλημμένην γε ἀλμα ὑπὸ τοῦ σωματοειδοῦς, ὁ
5 αὐτή ἡ ὁμίλια τε καὶ συννοια τοῦ σώματος διὰ τὸ ἀεὶ
συνεῖναι καὶ διὰ τὴν πολλὴν μελέτην ἐνεποίησε σύμφωνα:
Πάνω γε.

81c5 'Εμπροθές δὲ γε, ὃ φίλε, τοῦτο οἶδαν χρὴ εἶναι καὶ
10 βραζ καὶ γεώδεις καὶ ὁρατοὶ· ὁ δὲ καὶ έχουσα ἢ τοιαύτη
ψυχή βαρύνεται τε καὶ ἔλεκται, πάλιν εἰς τὸν ὁρατὸν τόπον
φθοῦ τοῦ άίδιος τε καὶ "Αἰδοῦ, ὥσπερ λέγεται, περὶ τὰ
μημιαματα τε καὶ τοὺς τάφους κυλινδομένη, περὶ τὸ δὲ καὶ
ώθη ἀττα ψυχῶν σκιοείδη ψυχάσματα, οὐ παρέχονται αὐτοὶ
tοιαύτα ψυχαὶ εἰδώλα, αἱ μὴ καθαροὶ ἀπολύειται ἀλλὰ
tὸν ὁρατὸν μετέχουσαι, διὸ καὶ ὀρνύται.

81c7 Εἰκός γε, ὡ Σύκρατες.

81c8 Εἰκός μέντοι, ὁ Κέβης· καὶ οὐ τι γε τάς τῶν ἁγάθων
5 αὐτᾶς εἶναι, ἀλλὰ τὰς τῶν φαύλων, αἱ περὶ τὰ τοιαύτα
ἀναγκαζόνται πλανάσθαι δίκην τίνουσι τῆς προτέρας
τροφῆς καθὶς ὁπόσης. καὶ μέχρι γε τοῦτο πλανᾶται, ἐξός
ἀν τῷ τοῦ συνεπακολουθοῦντος, τοῦ σωματοειδοῦς, ἐπι-
θυμία πάλιν ἐνδεδοθὲν εἰς σῶμα· ἐνδοῦτα δὲ, ὥσπερ
εἰκός, εἰς τοιαύτα ἢδη ὅποι' ἀττ' ἂν καὶ μεμελετηκύια
τύχουσιν ἐν τῷ βίῳ.

81c9 Τὰ ποία δὴ ταῦτα λέγεις, ὡ Σύκρατες;

81c10 Οἶνον τοὺς μὲν γαστριμαργίας τε καὶ βρείς καὶ φιλο-
81c11 ποσίας μεμελετηκότας καὶ μὴ διηρμαθήμενοι εἰς τὰ
81c12 τῶν ὁμών γένει καὶ τῶν τοιούτων θηρίων εἰκός ἐνδύεσθαι. ὡ
81c13 οὐκ ὦνει;

81c16 Πάνω μὲν οὖν εἰκός λέγεις.

82a Τοῖς δὲ γε ἄδικὰς τε καὶ τυραννίδας καὶ ἄρπαγας προ-

tετημικότας εἰς τὰ τῶν λύκων τε καὶ λεράκων καὶ λεκίνων
82b γένη· ἢ ποῖ ἂν ἄλλος φαμέν τάς τοιαύτας λέναι;

82c Αμέλει, ἐφ' ὃ Κέβης, εἰς τὰ τοιαύτα.

82d Οὐκοῦν, ἢ δ' ὅς, δήλα δὴ καὶ τάλλα ἢ ἂν ἐκάστα ἵνα κατά
82e τὰς αὐτῶν ὁμοίτητας τῆς μελέτης;

82f Δῆλον δὴ, ἐφ' ὃ Κέβης, πῶς δ' ὦν;

82g Οὐκοῦν εὐδαιμονεστάτοι, ἐφ' ὃ, καὶ τοιῶν εἰσὶ καὶ εἰς

82h βέλτιστον τόπον λύντες εἰς τὴν δημοτικὴν καὶ πολιτικὴν

82i ἀρέτην ἐπιτετθευκότες, ἢν δὴ καλὸντι σφοροούν τε καὶ
dικαιοσύνη, ἢκ ἔδοθε τε καὶ μελέτης γεγονοῦν ἄνευ

82k φιλοσοφίας τε καὶ νοῦ; πὴ δὴ ὡσ' εὐδαιμονεστάτοι;

82l "Οτι τοιῶν εἰκός ἔστων εἰς τοιούτων πάλιν ἀφικνεῖσθαι

82m πολιτικὸν καὶ ἠμερον γένος, ἢ ἂν μελίττων ἢ σφικών ἢ

82n μυρμήκων, ἢ καὶ εἰς ταῦτα γε πάλιν τὸ ἀνθρώπινον γένος,

82o καὶ γιγνεσθεὶ τοὺς αὐτῶν ἄνδρας μετρίους.

82p Εἰκός;

82q Εἰς δὲ γε τέων γένος μὴ φιλοσοφήσαντι καὶ παντελῶς
cαθαρῷ ἀπόλυτι οὐ θέμις ἀφικνεῖσθαι ἀλλ' ἢ τῷ φιλομαθεί.

82r ἀλλά τοιῶν ἔνεκα, ἢ ἐταίρε Σύμμα τε καὶ Κέβης, οἱ

82s ὁρόδος φιλόσοφοι ἀπέχουνται τῶν κατὰ τὸ σῶμα ἐπιθυμίων

82t ἀπασώλ καὶ καταρεοῦσαι καὶ οὐ παραπέθιδαν αὐταῖς

82u ἐστούν, οὐ τι οἰκοθορίαν τε καὶ πεναν φοβοῦμενι,

82v ὥσπερ οἱ πολλοὶ καὶ φιλοχριματοί· οὐδὲ αὐτοὶ ἀτίμαν τε καὶ

82w ἀδοξίαν μυχηρίας δεδιότες, ὥσπερ οἱ φιλαρχοί τε καὶ

82x φιλότιμοι, ἐπειτα ἀπέχουται αὐτῶν.
This passage comprises long units spoken by Socrates, punctuated either by occasional questions eliciting brief replies from Cebes or by Cebes’ short unprompted remarks. Cebes contributes only short affirmations or requests for clarification. The bulk of the passage has some degree of stylistic homogeneity, consisting of long continuous sequences of clauses, and featuring some interesting hyperbata. This continuity is broken by a middle section whose style differs considerably from the surrounding parts: ὁλον τοὺς μὲν γαστρομαργίας...ἀνδρας μετρίους (81e6-82b8/II.23-44). Its units exhibit striking parallelism and are, structurally, both shorter and simpler than those in the main section.

Some notable aspects of the passage, like certain lexical features, are common to both sections. For example, as a whole this passage contains the greatest number of distinctive lexemes. Their usage ranges between those whose extant instances are exclusive to Plato, such as οἰκοφθόρα and several lexemes only appearing in prose or comedy. Many of the distinctive lexemes are compound nouns and adjectives.

**Lexemes appearing in Plato alone**

φιλαρχός - Pl. (2): *Phd.* 82c7; *Rep.* 549a3.36

**Other rare lexemes**

φιλοσοφία - X.: *Mem.* 1.2.22, *Mem.* 2.6.1; Pl. (1); [Arist. (1): *Pr.* 872a6];

---

36 In both examples φιλαρχός is paired with the adjective φιλότιμος.
37 Interestingly, there are certain similarities between the context of the Aristophanic and Platonic example.
38 See Chapter 3 p.59, above.
Prose lexemes and idiom

γεώδης - History and philosophy: X. (1): An.6.5.4/ Pl. (8): e.g. Phd.81c9; Ti.66b1; Hp. (1) VM 24/ Arist.: e.g. PA 651a1, GA 735b36/ Theophr.: e.g. HP 5.9.1, CP 1.14.1/ Timaeus (1) Fr.164.

φιλοχρήματος - Oratory and philosophy: Is. (1): 2.21/ Pl.: e.g. Phd.82c6; Rep.485e3, Leg.832d2/ X. (1) Smp.4.45/ Andoc. (1): Alc.32./ Arist.: e.g. Rh.1389.a14; Pol.1315a18.


ἀνθρώπινος - All prose genres and comedy, starting from the fifth century: e.g. Hdt.1.86/ Th.1.22.4/ And.1.139/ Hp.VM 7/ Pl.Phdl.82b7, Ap.31b1/ Isoc.10.59, 4.60/ Ar.V 1179.

δημοτικός - History, oratory, philosophy and comedy, starting from the fifth century: e.g. Th.6.29.1/ And.2.26/ Lys.20.13/ Isoc.7.16/ Pl.Phdl. 82a12/ Arist.Pol.1266b22/ Ar.Nu.205.

πολιτικός - All prose genres, starting from the fifth century: e.g. Hdt.7.103/ Th.6.15.2/ Isoc.4.113/ Pl.Phdl.82a12, Ap.22a8/ Arist.EE 1215a36.

μοχθηρία - All prose genres and comedy, starting from the fifth century: e.g. X.Ap.31.1; D.19.186; Pl.Phdl.82c7, Leg.655c7; Ar. Lys.1160; Ra.421.

ἀδοξία - All prose genres and comedy, starting from the fifth century: e.g. Isoc.1.43/ D.1.12/ X. HG 7.5.9/ [Hp.Lex*1]/ Pl.82c7/ Arist.EN 1115a10. There is also one instance in Euripides: Fr.362.16 (Nauck).
Clearly, there is a marked tendency towards prose lexemes, while the prevalence of compound nouns and adjectives, both unusual and otherwise, also stands out and is not matched in the other passages. These compounds have varied prefixes, although there are seven φιλ- compounds, with five in the final paragraph, as well as the verb φιλοσοφεῖν. While the passage’s abstract nouns have a very varied range of suffixes, endings in -τά are most common, in accordance with the predominance of compounds.

The passage also incorporates terminology from a wide range of lexical fields, slipping from one field to another throughout. So, for example, in ἥ τοιαύτη ψυχή βαρύνεται τε καὶ ἐκεῖ τάλιν ἐλς τὸν δρατὸν τόπον φόβῳ τοῦ αἰδοῦς τε καὶ Ἀιδοῦ (81c9-11/II.6-11) there is a sudden switch from terms associated with the physical world like ἐμπυρεῖς, γεώδες, and βαρύνεται to the vocabulary of death and the afterlife: μνήματα, φαντάσματα, and εἰδωλα. While ‘ethical’ terminology appears throughout, especially in the second half of the passage, this is then interspersed with other fields, such as animal names and political terms like τυραννίδας and πολιτικήν. A final point is the absence of clear instances of verbal imagery.

4.3.1 The main section

The three longer parts of the main section, ἐμπυρεῖς δὲ γε...διὸ καὶ ὄρωνται (81c8-d4/II.5-12), εἰκός μέντοι...τύχωσιν ἐν τῷ βίῳ (81d6-e4/II.14-21), and ἐλς δὲ γε θεῶν γένος...ἐπείτα ἀπέχουται αὐτῶν (82b10-c8/II.46-54), form long, continuous, and loose sequences, not easily grouped into discrete units. 'Ἐμπυρεῖς δὲ γε...διὸ καὶ ὄρωνται (81c8-d4/II.5-12) constitutes one long unit, being a loose

---

39 It contains 11 compound nouns and 6 adjectives.
40 On -τά as a standard ending for compound nouns, see Chantraine, 1933, 79.
41 82b10-c1 is an exception and seems to form a self-standing unit, linked more closely, formally and semantically to the preceding section than to the unit which follows.
hypotactic sequence of mainly relative clauses, without strong logical interconnection. Des Places suggests that this type of construction, which accumulates a number of clauses or phrases linked by the same device, is a common Platonic feature. He names it ‘à rallonges’ (‘extended’), evoking the manner in which structure, as opposed to any particularly long clauses, is responsible for a general feeling of extension. Εἰκός μέντοι...τύχωσιν ἐν τῷ βλέψ (81d6-e4/II.14-21) is similar, though comprising a wider mixture of different paratactic and hypotactic clauses. While it could be taken as a series of three paratactic units (Εἰκός μέντοι...κακῆς οὖσας (81d6-9/II.14-17); καὶ μέχρι...Εἰς σῶμα (81d9-e2/II.17-19), and ἐνδοῦνται δε...ἐν τῷ βλέψ, (81e2-4/II.19-21), the strong link between these makes the division less unambiguous. Likewise there are no strong divisions in Εἰς δέ γε θεόν γένος...ἐπείτα ἄπεχονται αὐτῶν (82b10-c8/II.46-54).

Clear division of units comes only from Cebes’ occasional remarks and from an element of ring composition, which seems to signify a conclusion in all three parts and is exclusive to this passage. ὁρατῶν (81c9/II.6) is picked up by τοῦ ὁρατοῦ and ὁρώντας (81d4/II.12) at the end of its unit. Similarly, Εἰκός (81d5/II.13 and d6/14) is echoed by Εἰκός (81e3/II.20), and ἀπόντι (81c1/II.47) and ἄπεχονται (82c3/II.49) by ἄπεχονται (c8/II.54). There is, in general, a relatively large amount of repetition, found almost entirely in the main section and made up predominantly of ‘successive clause or unit’ repetition, such as ὁρατῶν (81c9/II.6 and c10/7).

Along with repetition, there are also many pairs, most of them in the main section. Over half are reinforced by full or partial homoeoteleuton, while two are also combined with repetition of a prefix: ἀτιμίαν τε καὶ ἀδοξίαν (82c6/I.52) and φλαρχοὶ τε καὶ φιλότιμοι (82c7/53). The sole instance here of sound effects used as parallel structures (excluding homoeoteleuton) is an interesting etymology: τοῦ ἀδικοῦς τε καὶ "Αἰδοῦ (81c11/I.8).

42 There are also two participial ‘clauses’ (81c11-d1/II.8-9 and d3-4/II.11-12), although these fulfil a relative function.
44 For example, there seems to be no reason why the passage should have been punctuated with a full-stop in d9, but only a semi-colon in e2, as in the OCT.
45 With the exception of the ‘key words’ Εἰκός in 82a1/II.25 and b5/41 and μεμελετηκότας in 81e7/II.24.
46 E.g. τῆς ὁμιλίᾳ τε καὶ συνουσίᾳ (81c5/I.2) and οἰκοφοροῖς τε καὶ πενίαν (82c5/I.51).
Finally, one of the most distinctive features is a pervasive use of hyperbaton. So αὐτῇ is separated from σύμφυτον (81c5-6/II.2-3); ἐμβραθές from syntactic equivalents βαρὺ καὶ γεώδες καὶ ὅρατόν (81c8-9/II.5-6); ἐπιθυμία from its article in τῇ τοῦ συνεπακολουθοῦντος, τοῦ σωματοειδοῦς, ἐπιθυμία (81e1/II.18).

4.3.2 The middle section

The units of the middle section, ὅσον τοὺς μὲν γαστριμαργίας...ἀνδρας μετρίους (81e6-82b8/II.23-44), are stylistically distinct from the surrounding passage, insofar as they are shorter, have fairly simple clause organisation, and are parallel to each other in structure. τοὺς δὲ γε ἄδικιας...καὶ ἱκτίνων γένη (82a4-6/II.28-30) replicates the structure of ὅσον τοὺς μὲν γαστριμαργίας...ἐλκὸς ἐνδύσεθαι (81e6-82a1/II.23-6), and the organisation of the final passage in the middle section is once again similar: ὅτι τούτους ἐλκὸς ἐστιν...ἀνδρας μετρίους (82b5-82b8/II.41-44).

The parallelism of this section is intensified by four lists which, unlike the two lists in the main section, all exhibit full or partial homoeoteleuton: ἄδικιας τε καὶ τυραννίδας καὶ ἀρπαγάς (82a4/II.28); εἰς τὰ τῶν λύκων τε καὶ λεράκων καὶ ἱκτίνων γένη (82a5-6/II.29-30); ἢ ποὺ μελιττῶν ἢ σφηκῶν ἢ μυριμίκων (82b6/II.42); and γαστριμαργίας τε καὶ ἱβρεῖς καὶ φιλοσοφίας (81e6/II.23). This repeated use of lists, together with polysyndeton, generates an impression of extension.

---

48 Furthermore, ἐμβραθές is also foregrounded by occupying a prominent position at the beginning of its unit.
49 Exceptions are the omission of εἰκὸς ἐνδύσεθαι and the replacement of the collective τῶν τολούτων θηρίων (82a1/II.25) with three kinds of animals (82a5/II.29).
50 οὐκοῦν, ἢ δὲ ὅ...καὶ νοῦ (82a11-82b3/II.35-39) is an exception and resembles parts of the main section.
51 καὶ βαρὺ καὶ γεώδες καὶ ὅρατόν (81c8/II.5) and ἰδέαν τῶν κατὰ τὸ σῶμα ἐπιθυμίων ἀπασῶν καὶ καρπεροῦσι καὶ οὐ παραδίδοσιν αὐτᾶς ἑαυτοῖς (82c3/II.50) have little aural parallelism and, in the latter case, no ostensible formal parallelism.
52 The first (because of differing syllable lengths and pitch accents) and last of these examples have only partial homoeoteleuton.
To sum up, in both the main and middle sections, the passage's most striking aspects are structural, involving elements of unit organisation as well as parallel structures. Although there is a clear stylistic divide between the two sections, the passage is united by a tendency towards unusual prose lexemes, the variety of intermingled lexical fields, and devices which contribute towards evoking extension. Thus both Passages I and II, in spite of their differences, contain separate stylistic sections and are mainly characterised by repetition and other distinctive structural aspects.
This passage forms a stylistic continuum, especially in terms of unit organisation, with syntactic continuity conferred by the fact that it is written almost entirely within indirect discourse. It appears to fall into three major units, while further division into discrete units is difficult because of the strong logical connection and structural repetition between clauses.

The three main units are: ἄλλ ἄκούσας μὲν ...ἐπιστήμην περὶ αὐτῶν (97b8/III.1-97d5/III.1-4); ταῦτα δὴ λογιζόμενος ...πάσχειν ἃ πάσχει (97d6-98a6/III.15-27);
and ὄν γὰρ ἄν ποτε αὐτῶν ψηφιν...καὶ το ὕειρον (98a7-98b6/III.28-36). In spite of overall logical continuity, there are various reasons to posit major breaks. First, the unit transitions mark the stages at which the argument develops into significantly new points, so that there appear to be semantic pauses. In addition, it is only at the beginning of each unit that the verbs which govern the dependent clauses are explicitly restated and thereby provide an explicit formal marker for a new unit: ἡγησάμην (97c4/III.5); ψηφιν (97d6/III.15); and ψηφιν (98a7/III.28).

Throughout the passage clause structure is semantically, syntactically and formally repetitive. There is a repeated pattern of a given condition or cause followed by reasoned inference, with two γὰρ clauses being the sole exception to this pattern. As a whole the passage mainly consists of conditionals, such as εἰ τοῦθ οὐτως ἔχει...βελτιστα ἔχει (97c4-6/III.5-7), εἰ οὖν τις...πάσχειν ἦ πολεῖν (97c6-d1/III.2-7), καὶ εἰ ἐν μέσῳ...ἐν μέσῳ εἶναι (97e3-98a1/III.20-2), and καὶ εἰ μοι...ἄλλο εἴδοσ (98a1-a2/III.22-3), or simple reported thought, preceded by a short phrase denoting cause: ταύτη δὲ τῇ αἰτίᾳ ἡσθην (97c2-3/III.3-4); ἐκ δὲ δὴ τοῦ λόγου...τὸ βελτιστὸν (97d1-4/III.10-13); καὶ ταύτα δὴ λογιζόμενος...ἡ στρογγύλη (97d6-e/III.15-18). The way in which reason or condition precedes inference throughout the passage leads to a straightforwardly deductive and repetitive overall impression, heightened by the frequency of particles and inferential and causal conjunctions.

Along with unit organisation this passage's most striking aspect is the exceptional amount of 'key-word' repetition, with six clear instances. Moreover, three of the repeated lexemes, νοῆς, διακοσμῶν, and αἰτίος, also appear to be closely interconnected themselves. In most cases where one appears it is in close proximity to at least one of the other two terms. Often πᾶς, another lexeme of which there is 'key-word' repetition, occurs in conjunction with these terms as well. These phenomenon can be seen in the following example:

---

53 97d5/14 and 98a7/23ff. 54 In addition the temporal clause and clause which follows, ἐπείδη δὲ φράσειν...τοιαύτην εἶναι (97e1-3/III.18-20), function like conditionals, both syntactically and semantically.
Apart from a reasonably large number of 'successive clause or unit' repetitions, other parallel structures are unremarkable and distributed fairly uniformly throughout. The number of pairs is average, with few sound effects or instances of pleonasm. Of the four sound effects, three are homoeoteleuta. Two of these are almost identical and could perhaps be seen as examples of 'dead' alliteration, since the opposition which they present was clearly a platitude by Plato's time: πάςχειν ἡ ποιεῖν (97d1/III.10) and καί ποιεῖν καὶ πάςχειν ἄ πάςχει (98a6/III.26). The final sound effect is an example of word-play: Ἀναξαγόρου ἀναγινώσκοντος (97b8/III.1).

Clauses are neither exceptionally long nor short and the word order is likewise unremarkable, mainly seeming to reproduce the logical order of the train of thought. Imagery is absent and there is little unusual vocabulary, with the only distinctive lexeme being the compound verbs ἐπεκδηγέομαι, used three times here, but appearing nowhere else in classical Greek.

The passage also contains little lexical variation, having a 'lexeme: token ratio', 0.52, noticeably lower than in the other passages. Most terminology is not specific to any particular lexical field, with the exception of a series of cosmological terms. There are no compound nouns, adjectives, or adverbs, and comparatively few adjectives and adverbs altogether. The number of abstract nouns is also relatively small, amongst which the only outstanding point is eight examples of τό + χείρον or various degrees of ἀγαθὸς.
In general the lack of variation and austerity of lexis corresponds to the general character of this passage, as reflected in the repetitiveness of structure and absence of imagery and sound effects. Once again, as with the other passages, it is structure, from unit organisation down to the prevalence of a particular noun-form, which stands out as the most distinctive feature.
This passage consists of short questions and answers, making analysis of organisation seemingly difficult, since it cannot be based on the same classifications of unit organisation as used for the others. Nevertheless, its structural patterns and
parallelisms are still very interesting. The most striking feature is its conciseness, in part achieved through pervasive ellipse, and also reinforced by the absence of lists and of large numbers of pairs, which are characteristic of the other passages. While these types of parallel structures are missing, there is much parallelism on a wider structural level which, together with ellipse, is a key feature of the passage.

Sequences of units are varied, with some becoming increasingly elliptical: ἐπιγραφὴ...καθάρσις (105d3-9/IV.6-12)\(^{60}\) and οὐκοῦν ἐπιγραφὴ...καθάρσις (105d10-105e7/IV.14-27). Their length decreases as components of the previous units are omitted. Finally, all that remains is the solitary noun καθάρσις (105d9/IV.12) or adjective καθάρσις (105e7/IV.27), marking the end of the sequences and foregrounded by their isolation and final position. To some degree this is similar to the way in which φρόνησις (69a10/I.5) is positioned alone in a clause and at the very end of a unit.\(^{61}\)

This condensation of structure in the first and second units, probably the most interesting aspect of organisation in Passage IV, is not created by 'rhetorical' devices such as asyndeton, but by a subtle increase in ellipse, which works in the following way. The stages of the second sequence appear parallel and symmetrical, an impression strengthened through lexemic repetition and word order. However, first of all τὴν τοῦ δρόμου ἱδεῖν (105d13/IV.16) is replaced by τὸ δίκαιον (105d16/IV.19), rather than a corresponding τὴν τοῦ δίκαιου ἱδεῖν, and then, by μοισμοῦ (105d16/IV.19), which even omits the article. In addition, ἐφη accompanies all of Cebes' replies, except the final two, οὐ (105e5/IV.25) and καθάρσις (105e7/IV.27). Similarly, in the first sequence ἐφη occurs with every reply, apart from the final and climactic καθάρσις (105d9/IV.12).

Conversely, the other long sequence of units, τὸ οὖν...ἀνάγκη (105e11-106a11/31-42), expands on the initial point made in the question τὸ οὖν...ἀνάληθρα λέει ἦν (105e11-106a1/IV.31-2), so that the two units which then echo this question serve to develop the point further. There is much continuity and repetition between this first

\(^{60}\) Although this sequence could be seen as a continuation of earlier points.

\(^{61}\) See above, p67.
question and the next two main units, οἶκοιν εἰ...τὴν θερμότητα (106a3-6/IV.34-7) and ὡς δ' αὐτῶς...ἀν ἀπελθοῦν ὑχετο (106a8-10/IV.39-40), on all levels. Notwithstanding different subjects and other minor omissions or syntactic differences, the first clause of each of these units, a conditional protasis, is almost identical. Structural and lexemic repetition persist throughout the second and, to a lesser degree, the final clauses of the two longer units, while parallelism is also enhanced by the repeated ἀ-privatives:

Τι οὖν, ἣ δ' οὔ, ὡ Κέβης; εἰ τῷ ἀναρτίῳ ἀναγκαίον ἤν ἀνωμέθρω εἶναι, ἀλλο τι τὰ τρία ἦ ἀνωμέθρα ἢν ἦν; 
Πῶς γὰρ οὖ; 
Οἶκοιν εἰ καὶ τὸ ἀθρημὸν ἀναγκαίον ἤν ἀνωμέθρου εἶναι, ὡπότε τις ἐπὶ χιώνα θερμὸν ἐπάγω, ὑπεξῆς οὖν ἦ ἡ χιών ὀνα ὀος καὶ ἀπηκτοσ; οὐ γὰρ ἦν ἀπώλετο γε, οὐδ' αὖ ὑπομένουσα ἐδέξατο ἢν τὴν θερμότητα.
'Αληθῆ, ἐφη, λέγεις.
'Ας δ' αὐτῶς οἷμαι καὶ εἰ τὸ ἀψικτὸν ἀνωμέθρου ἤν, ὡπότε ἐπὶ τὸ πῦρ ψυχρὸν τι ἐπηγεί, οὐποτ' ἦν ἀπεσβέννυτο οὔδ' ἀπώλυτο, ἀλλὰ σῶν ἄν ἀπελθοῦν ὑχετο.
(105e11-106a10/IV.31-41)

In other parts of the passage there are, with one exception, no sound effects or pleonasm. Here by contrast, as well as α-privatives, there are also three pleonastic phrases, the second of which comprises a pair sharing a common prefix and homoeoteleuton: οὖς καὶ ἀπηκτοσ (106a5/IV.36); οὐποτ' ἦν ἀπεσβέννυτο οὔδ' ἀπώλυτο (106a9/IV.40); and ἀπελθοῦν ὑχετο (106a10/IV.41).

In addition to these clusters of α-privatives there is an abundance of α-privative nouns and adjectives throughout the passage, making this noun-form the most distinctive lexical feature. While almost all the terminology appears fairly standard and generically widespread, a few of the α-privatives are very rare, some found only in Plato:

62 ἀδεινον, ἐφη, τό δὲ ἀδεικν (105e1/IV.21).

Chapter 4 85
Concordant with its tight internal unit parallelism, the passage is highly repetitive throughout. There is significant repetition of only a few lexemes, ψυχή, θάνατος, δέχομαι, and ἀνώλεθρος, all four of which appear a number of times throughout and function as both ‘successive clause or unit’ and ‘key-word’ repetition. For example, while there are scattered occurrences of ψυχή in the earlier part (105c10/IV.3; d3/6; d10/13), it then appears twice in close succession at the climax of a unit:

Οἷκοιν ψυχή οὐ δέχεται θάνατον;
Οὐ.
 Ἀθάνατον ἀρα ψυχή.
(105ε4/IV.24-ε6/26)

Similarly, ἀνώλεθρος, as shown above, appears three times in close proximity in 106a1-3/IV.32-4 and is repeated once again in 106a8/IV.39.

Another point about unit organisation is that the vast majority of clauses are conditional, such as those in the sequence just discussed. However, there are occasional breaks from the conditional, notably in the middle sequence, where there is a final change to a definite sense in the climax of the sequence: οἷκοιν ψυχή οὐ δέχεται θάνατον (105ε4/IV.24).

---

63 Of which 12 are in the Phd., with 10 found in 106a1-107a1. The others are Ti.52a2; Leg.904a8; [Epin.*981e7]
64 Although Phys.203b14 attributes this term to Anaximander it is generally acknowledged that only Anaximander.B1 is genuine. See e.g. Kahn, 1960, 11; KRS, 117.
65 In fact, other types of subordinate clause are absent from this passage.
Finally, there are two other distinctive aspects of lexis: large numbers of varied neuter substantives comprising τό + an adjective or participle,\textsuperscript{66} and a mixture of distinct lexical fields, as in 105d13-ε1/IV.16-21 -

\begin{quote}
Τί οὖν; τὸ μὴ δεχόμενον τὴν τοῦ ἄρτιον ιδέαν τὸ νυνῇ

ἐνομαζόμεν;

'Ανάρτιον, ἔφη.

Τὸ δὲ δίκαιον μὴ δεχόμενον καὶ ὁ ἄν μουσικὸν μὴ
dέχεται;

'Ἀμουσον, ἔφη, τὸ δὲ ἀδικον.
\end{quote}

- which combines mathematical, educational/cultural and ethical lexemes. Similarly, in 106e9-106a6/IV.31-37, while the structure of the question is repeated, there is a transition from mathematical terms like τὸ ἄρτιο and τὰ τρία to those describing physical properties, such as τὸ ἀθέρμον and θερμότητα.

Repeated structure emerges once again as the key stylistic feature in this passage, with the conciseness and lexemic and structural repetition causing the structure itself to be foregrounded.

\textsuperscript{66} This passage contains 7, as opposed to Passages I, II, V and VI, which contain 4, 3, 1 and 0 examples respectively.

\textit{Chapter 4}
110b5 Λέγεται τοινυν, ἕφη, ὦ ἑταῖρε, πρῶτον μὲν ἐναὶ τοιαῦτη ἤ γὰρ αὐτὴ ἦδεν, εἰ τίς ἀνώθεν θέετο, ὅπερ αἱ διωθεκά-

σκυτοὶ σφαῖρας κοιλίης, ἤρμασιν διειλημμένη, ὅν καὶ τὰ ἐνθάδε ἐναὶ ὄραματα ὅπερ δείγματα, ὅς ἦν οἱ
gραφῆς καταχρῶνται. ἔκει δὲ πᾶσαν τὴν γῆν ἐκ τοιούτων ἐ

5 εἶναι, καὶ πολὺ ἐτὶ ἐκ λαμπροτέρων καὶ καθαρωτέρων ἢ
tοιῶν τὴν μὲν γάρ ἄλογον ἐναὶ καὶ θαναμπτὴν τὸ κάλλος, τὴν δὲ 

χρυσοείδη, τὴν δὲ ὑστερικὴ γυάζου ἢ ἐχονος λευκότεραν, καὶ ἐκ τῶν ἄλλων ἤρματων συγκει-

μένην ὄσσας, καὶ ἐτὶ πλειόνων καὶ καλλίτερων ἢ 

ἡμεῖς ἑωράκαμεν. καὶ γὰρ αὕτη ταύτα τὰ κόσμα αὐτῆς,

θάτος τε καὶ ἄερος ἐκπέλεν ὄντα, ἤρματος τί εἶδος

d παρέεχεσθαι στλῖβοντα ἐν τῇ 

τῶν ἄλλων ἤρματων ποι-

κυλίσ, ὡστε ἐν τῇ αὐτῆς ἔλοδος συνεχές ποικίλον 

φαντάζεσθαι. ἐν δὲ ταύτῃ οὔσῃ τοιαύτῃ ἀνὰ λόγου τὰ 

φύσει οὕτω ταχαροὶ καὶ οὕτως ἀρκοῦν 

5 δὲ ψαυτῶς καὶ τοὺς λίθους ἔσχεν ἀνά 

tήν τε λειτύτητα καὶ τὴν διαφάνειαν καὶ τὰ ἤρματα καλ-

λώς ὑμν καὶ τὰ ἐνθάδε λιβίδια εἶναι ταύτα τὰ ἀγαπώμενα μόρια, σάρδια τε καὶ λάσπιδας καὶ σιμαράγγους καὶ 

tὰ τοιαῦτα. ἔκει δὲ ὀδύν ὅτι οὐ τοιοῦτον ἐναὶ καὶ ἐτὶ 

tοιῶν καλλίως, τὸ δ' αἰτίων τοιούτον ἔτι ὅτι εἰκοῖν οἱ 

λίθοι εἰλικρινεῖ καὶ οὐ κατεδημεῖσθήν οὕτω διεκδημε-

νοι ὅπερ οἱ ἐνθάδε ἐπὶ σηπεδῶνος καὶ ἀλίθη ἐπὶ τῶν 

βέθρο συνερρούσατος, η καὶ λίθος καὶ γῆ καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις 

ζώοις τε καὶ φυτοῖς ἀλοχή τε καὶ νόσοις παρέγει. τὴν δὲ 

γῆν αὐτὴν κεκοσμήσατο 

tοιοῦτος τα ἅπασα καὶ ἓτι χρυση 

tε καὶ ἀργύρῳ καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις αὐτοῖς τοῖς τοιούτοις. ἐκφάνη γὰρ 

αὐτὰ περικέναι, ὡντα πολλά πληθεὶ καὶ μεγάλα καὶ παν-

ταχοῦ τῆς γῆς, ὡστε αὐτὴν ἦδεν ἐναὶ θέαμα εὐδαιμονῶν 

θεσίων. ὧν δ' ἤπτ' αὐτὴ ἐναὶ ἄλλα τε πολλὰ καὶ ἄνθρω-

ποὺς, τοὺς μὲν ἐν μεσογαλα ὀλκοῦτας, τοὺς δὲ περὶ τῶν 

άερα ὅπερ ἡμέτ' περὶ τὴν βάλαταν, τοὺς δ' ἐν νησίς ἀς 

περιμετρεῖ τῶν αέρα πρὸς τῇ ἡπείρῳ ὀσφας· καὶ ἐν 

lόγῳ, δὴ ἢμιν τὸ ὕδωρ τε καὶ ἡ βάλατα ἐστὶ πρὸς τὴν 

5 ἡμε-

τέραν χρέως, τούτῳ ἐκεῖ τῶν ἀερά, δ' ἢ δ' ἢμιν ἄρη, ἐκεῖνοι 

τοῖς ἀνθέρας. τὰς δὲ όρας αὐτώς κράσιν ἔσχε αὐτοῦτη ὡστε 

ἐκείνους ἄνοισα εἶναι καὶ χρόνον τε ζῆν πολὺ πλέον τῶν 

ἐνθάδε, καὶ ὅψει καὶ ἄκοη καὶ φρονήσει καὶ πᾶσα τοῖς 

τοιούτοις ἡμῶν ἀφέσταναι τῇ αὐτῇ ἀποστάσει ἤπερ ἄρη τε 

ἐβάτος ἄφεστηκε καὶ ἀλήθη διόλου πρὸς καθαρότητα. καὶ 

δὴ καὶ θεῶν ἄλητε τε καὶ λεπά αὐτοῖς εἶναι, ἐν ὅς τούτο 

οἰκητάς θεοῦ εἶναι, καὶ φήμας τε καὶ μαντείας καὶ αἰσθη-

σεῖς τῶν θεῶν καὶ τοιαῦτα συνοφίας γίγνεσθαι αὐτοῖς 

πρὸς αὐτοὺς· καὶ τὸν γε θύλου καὶ σιμλήμαν καὶ ἄστρα ὅρα-

σθαὶ ὑπ' αὐτῶν οὐ τυγχάνει ὄντα, καὶ τὴν ἄλλην εὐδαιμο-

νίαν τοιῶν ἀκόλουθον εἶναι.
This passage is in extended indirect discourse, within which the organisation is fairly loose and broadly descriptive as opposed to explanatory. This effect is strengthened by the slightly arbitrary connections between the main units. As a whole, the composition of the passage could perhaps best be characterised as a catalogue and is loosely paratactic, emphasised by a general absence of particles other than δέ, τε and the prevalent καί, and also reflected in its other stylistic features. As in Passage III, it is possible to identify individual groups of clauses which appear to form units, such as τὰς δὲ ὁρᾶσ...πρὸς καθαρότητα (111b2-6/V.37-41), but which cannot always be clearly divided from preceding and subsequent units.

Within the indirect discourse construction, the syntax of the passage is fairly simple, and mainly involves coordination, apposition such as δὲνδρα τὲ καὶ ἄνθη καὶ τῶς καρποὺς (110d4/V.16) and σάρκια τὲ καὶ ἱάσπιδας καὶ σμαράγδους καὶ πάντα τὰ τοιαῦτα (110d8/V.20), and relative clauses, although there are several consecutive clauses: ὡστε ἐν τ...φαντάζεσθαι (110d2/V.14); ὡστε αὐτὴν ἱδεῖν...θεατῶν (111a3-4/V.30-3); and ὡστε ἐκείνους...τῶν ἐνθάδε (111b2-4/V.37-39). Simplicity is also reflected in the word order, which is straightforward and unremarkable. The presence of a large number of lists, together with the mainly paratactic structure, also creates a certain feeling of extension. καὶ ὡς καὶ ἀκοῇ καὶ φρουρήσει καὶ πᾶσι τοῖς τοιοῦτοις (111b4/V.39) is a good example of polysyndeton, while the prevalence of καί, together with the lists, makes the passage generally polysyndetic, notwithstanding one notable asyndeton at 110b7/V.3.

Numerous lists, along with very little repetition, enhance the impression of this passage as catalogue and description. There is also a comparative lack of pleonasm and sound effects, which seems to be in keeping with the simple paratactic

69 For example, although the OCT has punctuated with only a colon after ἣ τοῦτων (110c2/V.7), but a full-stop after ἣμεῖς ἐφόρακεν (110c7/V.11), there seems to be no clear reason for advocating a different length of pause. Cf. e.g. 110e2, where it is not entirely clear that a full-stop is needed after τοῦτων καλλίω.
70 Cf. Des Places, 1951, on the accumulated καί's in 111b4-c4.
71 There are 11 lists; almost double the largest number in any of the other passages. See Table 4.1.1, above.
arrangement of the units as a whole. For example, there is a marked absence of homoeoteleuton amongst the pairs and lists. Only three of the twelve pairs show this feature: λαμπροτέρων καλ καθαρωτέρων (110c2/V.6); κατεδηθεσμένοι οδέ διεφθαρμένοι (110e3/V.23); and χρυσό τε καλ ἄργυρο (110e7/V.27).72 The single homoeoteleuton amongst the ten lists is only partial, since the phrase καλ λίθοις ...καλ τοῖς ἄλλοις ζώοις τε καλ φυτοῖς (110e5/V.25) is interrupted by the discordant γη and also includes different final pitches. This is very different to lists in other passages. In Passage I, for example, three out of four lists have homoeoteleuta; in Passage II, four out of six.

Lexis also varies widely, with no particular outstanding features. Most lexemes have a very wide usage, although a few can be narrowed down to certain author groups, mostly in fifth and fourth century prose:

μεσόγαλα - Various historians: e.g. Hdt.1.175/ 4.101; X.HG 7.1.8/ Scyl.98/ and Pl. (1): 111a5.
στίλβω - Verse and philosophy: Epic: e.g. Hom.II.3.392, Od.6.237, h.Hom.32.5/ Lyric: e.g. Bacch.18.55 (Snell)/ Tragedy: e.g. E.Phdr.194/ Comedy: e.g. Ar.Av.697; Philosophy: e.g. Pl.Phd.110d1/ Arist.APo.78a.34/ Theophr.Sens.26.3.

The range of compound nouns and adjectives is varied, as is the large range of abstract nouns. Apart from a small cluster of four -σις nouns in the lines 110b2-

---

72 Homoeoteleuton in this last example is only partial, because of the different pitch accents.  
5/V.37-40, there are no prominent morphological forms. There is also a diverse mixture of lexical fields, with a number of terms from fields concerning physical features and appearance; such as colour, geography, and cosmology.

A general absence of logical connections, such as causal or inferential, between the units also deepens the ‘catalogue’ impression. However, another prominent aspect, an emphasis on contrast (of the ‘true’ earth to our own), adds some degree of structure and is achieved in a variety of ways, like parallel structures. In 110b8-c1/V.3-5, 110d7-e1/V.19-21, and 110e2-e4/V.22-24, for example, there is a loosely structured ἐκεῖ/ἐνθάδε antithesis, of which the first two are combined with similarly structured relative clauses expressing comparison (ὡν καὶ τὰ ἐνθάδε... and ὡν καὶ τὰ ἐνθάδε...). A further double instance of antithesis sets up a similar contrast: καὶ ἐνλ λόγω, διπερ ἡμῖν τὸ ὑδωρ τε καὶ ἡ βαλαντα ἐστὶ πρὸς τὴν ἡμετέραν χρείαν, τούτο ἐκεῖ τὸν ἄερα, δὲ ἡμῖν ἀηδ, ἐκείνοις τὸν αἰθέρα (111a7-b2/V.34-37). Its parallelism is, however, the exception within this passage, in which antithesis is in general loosely structured and where there is a lack of the pairs and symmetry characteristic of the other passages.75 In addition, comparison using comparatives and ἤ is found in the two similarly structured phrases καὶ πολὺ ἔτι εκ λαμπροτέρων... (110c2/V.6) and καὶ ἔτι πλειόνων... (110c6/V.10).

Imagery also contributes to this effect, with ὁσπερ expressing comparison in 110b6/V.2 and 110b8/V.4. In these two short similes, the true earth is said to be ὁσπερ αἱ δωδεκάσκυποι σφαῖραι, while its colours are described as ὁσπερ δείγματα. ὁς δὴ ὁ γραφὴς καταχωρεῖται, in which δείγματα and γραφῆς are usually translated as ‘samples’ and ‘painters’ respectively. The second of these similes requires a little discussion. Instances of δείγμα in classical prose and verse are quite common and usually convey the idea of accurate ‘representation’, ‘testimony’, or ‘outline’, within a variety of contexts.76 Here, however, unlike its other usages, the context dictates that δείγματα must indicate some type of ‘sketch’

---

74 The last of these is actually expressed as an ἐκεῖνοι ὁ/οἱ ἐνθάδε antithesis, although the semantic force of the contrast is still the same.
75 The only striking exception is found within one clause, οὐ καταδεσμένοι οὔδὲ διεφαρμένοι (110e3), where there is a great degree of phonological, formal, and rhythmical resemblance between the two parts.
76 E.g. E.Supp.354; Isoc.1.11; Ar.Ach.988; Arist.Rh.1415a12.

Chapter 4
used by γραφῆς, and the image as a whole implies that our earth is a pale imitation of the true earth, conveying a fundamental idea of inadequacy. 77

The comparison τὴν [πᾶσαν γῆν] δὲ ὅστις λευκὴ γύψου ἤ χλόνος λευκότεραν (110c4-5/V.8-9) also seems to be another example of imagery, fitting in with the general tendency towards comparison of the true earth to our own. However, it is uncertain whether the comparison could be seen to constitute live imagery, given that examples in both early verse and prose, such as Homer’s description of Rhesus’ horses as λευκότεροι χλόνος, suggest that this ‘imagery’ is clichéd. 78 There are no similar instances of γύψος found in conjunction with λευκός, so that it is possible that this is ‘live’. Yet, neither this comparison nor the preceding similes are particularly striking, and seem to do little more than help to stress the contrast between the ‘true’ earth and our own.

The difference between the true earth and our own is also expressed by an analogy:

Here, in order to convey the difference in ‘purity’ between the faculties of those on the true earth and ourselves, an analogy is drawn with the respective differences between air and water and aether and air. While these terms function as a vehicle and are, in that sense, extraneous to their immediate context, such boundaries are blurred by their role in the part which precedes this analogy. Here the uses of air and aether for the true earth dwellers are compared to those of water and air for ourselves (111a8-b2/V.35-7).

As a general comment this passage could be called an extended description, in which structure is fairly loose, but with a clear tendency to (almost exclusively asymmetrical) features expressing contrast.

77 It may be of interest when compared to other similar uses of ‘art’ imagery in Plato. Cf. on σκιαγραφία, p.68 above, and Louis, 1945, 27-3.
78 I.10.437 and see Lloyd, 1966, 184, on other ‘white as’ expressions. Cf. e.g. S.Ant.114; A.Fr.193c (Mette).
4.7 Passage VI: 117c1-118a17

One of the passage's most noteworthy characteristics is actually the absence of outstanding features. For example, there are no instances of imagery and there is a moderately, though not exceptionally, low incidence of sounds effects and pleonasm. With the possible exception of the final words, φρονιμωτάτου καὶ δικαιοτάτου (118a17/VI.40), the three other sound effects used as parallel structures are fairly
weak homoeoteleuta such as ψύχοιτό τε καὶ πῆγγυτο (118a2/VI.25). The passage also differs from others insofar as it contains no compound nouns or adjectives and an exceptionally low number of adjectives and adverbs.

Most of the passage is narrative, although this is interspersed with three short passages of direct speech. The narrative parts form a loose continuum, in which there is temporal sequentiality, but no strong logical connection between clauses, nor any sense of enclosing structure. In general, they seem close to the ancient definitions of the ‘continuous’ or ‘strung-together’ style, λέξεις εἰρομένη, which Aristotle describes as ‘united by connecting particles’ and having ‘no end in itself’.\(^{79}\) The passage presents Phaedo’s narration of the final events of Socrates’ life and, through its structure, seems almost to achieve a ‘stream of consciousness’ effect, in which narration is apparently artless and takes its form from the way in which the recollections stream into the narrator’s mind.

Although the passage could be divided into units, throughout the narrative sections a strong degree of continuity between phrases on all levels makes any strong divisions debatable.\(^{80}\) Links between clauses are mostly paratactic and even examples of hypotaxis are loose in terms of logical connection. Moreover, there is a marked absence of genitive absolutes and complex constructions such as conditionals, while many of those hypotactic clauses which are present appear to function as explanatory parentheses: e.g. ἐπειδὴ οὐχ οἶδας τῇ ἡμέρᾳ κατέχειν τὰ δάκρυα (117d2/VI.9). Parentheses themselves are common,\(^{81}\) as are ‘interrupting quotatives’; words or phrases which interrupt a phrase to indicate the use of direct quotation.\(^{82}\)

Individual clauses provide a minimal account of events, and are stark and concise, with a striking absence of adverbs and adjectives in much of the narrative, apart from occasional temporal descriptions. There is a small cluster of adverbs in 117c4-

\(^{79}\) Arist. Rh. 1409a24ff.
\(^{80}\) E.g. the OCT has punctuated with a full-stop after ἐπειδή οὐχ οἶδας τῇ ἡμέρᾳ (117 d1/VI.8) and ἐξαιρέτη (117d3/VI.10). However, for syntactic, semantic, and formal reasons the phrases which follow these points could easily be seen as part of the unit beginning καὶ ἡμέρας ὑπὸ πολλοὶ (117e5/VI.3).
\(^{81}\) E.g. 117c8/VI.6ff.; 118a6/VI.29ff.
\(^{82}\) Bers, 1997, 193.
adjectives are in the final line: ἀρίστου καὶ ἀλλὰς φρονιμωτάτου καὶ δικαιοτάτου.

Apart from the slightly emphatic positioning of the final sequence of adjectives, ἀρίστου καὶ ἀλλὰς φρονιμωτάτου καὶ δικαιοτάτου and hyperbaton with ἀνδρός (118a15/VI.38-40), the word order is unremarkable. One point of slight interest is the repetitive way in which a finite verb is so often preceded by a nominative participle, in instances such as καὶ ἡμεῖς ἀκούσαντες ἡσυχάνθημεν (117e3/VI.18); ἐγκαλυφάμενος ἀπέκλαυν ἐμαυτόν (117c8/VI.6); πέσας αὐτοῦ τὸν πόδα ἤρετο (117e8/VI.23); καὶ ἐπανών οὕτως ἡμῖν ἐπεδείκνυτο (118a2/VI.25) and ἧδων δὲ ὁ Κρίτων συνέλαβε τὸ στόμα καὶ τοὺς ὀφαλμοὺς (118a13-14/VI.36-7).83

Only two main lexical fields are explored here. The first of these involves terms concerning mourning and lamentation and ends abruptly with the words ἐπέσχομεν τοῦ δακρύειν (117e3/VI.18). Subsequently, terminology to do with body parts and bodily reactions predominates until the final words at 118a15/VI.38, with no mixing of fields. This is different from the way in which several lexical fields, often overlapping, enter into the other passages.

Repetition is rare and fairly unremarkable, with δακρύειν (117c6/VI.4 c8/6; d4/11; e4/19) constituting the only really noticeable ‘key-word’ repetition. The passage’s vocabulary is also the least repetitive, having the highest ‘lexeme-token’ ratio, 0.79. There are, however, two examples of ‘juxtaposed’ repetition, both of some interest. ἐκκαλυφάμενος-ἐνεκκάλυπτο (118a6/VI.29) is one of only two instances of pure juxtaposition in the passages,84 while πίνουτα τε καὶ πεπωκότα (117c7/VI.5) stands out as the unusual juxtapositional pairing of two parts of the same verb.85

Finally, some distinctive lexical points are an unusually high number of compound verbs and, with the exception of ἀστακτό, found only here and twice in Sophocles’

83 Cf. also 117c4/VI.2; 117d5/VI.12; 117e6ff./VI.21; 118a6/VI.29; and 118a12/VI.30.
84 Along with τὰ φιάμενα φίσεθαι (110d3/VI.13).
85 A possible comparison is κοσμοῦσα πάντα κοσμεῖν (97c5/III.6).
Oedipus at Colonus, a number of distinctive lexemes found only in prose or comedy dating from the fifth century onwards:

- **ἐυκόλως** - All prose genres and comedy: e.g. X.Mem.4.8.2/ Hp.Morb.1.21/ Isoc.12.31/ Lys.4.9/ Anaxandr.3.196/ Arist.EN 1100b31.
- **ἐυχερῶς** - All prose genres: e.g. Hp.Fract.30/ Aeschin.Tim.179.10/ Pl.Phil.117c4, Rep.364a7/ Arist.EE 1231b12, EN 1121b8/ Menandr.Mon.1.707.
- **ἐπιεικῶς** - All prose genres and comedy: e.g. Is.6.18/ Isoc.10.5/ X.HG 5.4.50/ Scyl.65/ Hp.Coac.91, Morb.2.38/ Pl.Phd.117c5, Crito 43a10/ Arist.EN 1180a8/ Theophr.HP 3.17.1/ Menandr.Dysc.8, Aspis 24.

On the whole, the temporal sequentiality, combined with an absence of logical sequence and of any pervasive structural features apart from parenthesis, contributes to a ‘stream of consciousness’ effect, reflecting the thought-patterns of the speaker in this context.

### 4.8 Conclusion

From the analysis of these six passages we can clearly see the enormous variance between them and their distinct stylistic construction, which extends to all three levels of scale discussed at the end of the last chapter: unit organisation; small collocations; and individual words or idioms.

With the exception of a feature like Passage I’s ἄλωμα imagery, it is, by and large, the cumulation of repeated stylistic features within the passages which constitutes their distinctive stylistic character and separates them clearly from other sections of the work. These key stylistic features are repeated throughout each passage, or, in the case of those passages which themselves contain distinct stylistic sections, throughout these individual sections.

---

86 S.OC 1251, 1646.
Repetition is found on all three levels, from the use of large numbers of α-privative terms in Passage VI or ϕλ-compounds in II, to, in terms of broad organisation, the repeated conditionals of III or the predominant parataxis in V. Nevertheless, what seems to stand out most from each passage singly and therefore also from them collectively is repeated patterns of unit organisation which determine the general stylistic structure.

We have also seen that in some of the passages there is a certain degree of correspondence between features on the three different levels of scale within the text. For example, in Passage I, the predominance of parallelism and antithetically structured units is accompanied, on a more microcontextual level, by large numbers of pairs, many of which are oppositional. In Passage III stylistic continuity and repetition is enhanced by features like the structural repetition of unit organisation, key-word repetition of significant terms throughout the passage, and a lack of lexical variation. A final example is Passage VI, where syntactic simplicity of unit organisation seems to match the stark conciseness of some individual clauses, achieved through features like the comparative absence of adjectives and adverbs.

The main stylistic traits which have emerged from the analysis at this stage therefore seem to be repetition of structure, distinctiveness of individual sections and, in some passages, a degree of correspondence between different types and levels of stylistic features. The structure of the individual passages (or sections of these passages) therefore attains a degree of prominence through internal repetition as well as contrast to other parts of the text, and may also be enhanced through internal correspondence on different stylistic levels.

One point I emphasised, when explaining the framework and rationale of my methodology, was the necessity of taking into account several stylistic features which either do not appear or are covered only partially in conventional stylistic analysis. Interestingly, several of these features, most notably certain aspects of unit organisation and parallel structure, not only occur within the six passages, but can in many cases be seen to constitute their most striking features.
The clear and distinct traits within the different sections will provide a useful starting point for tracing the generic affiliations of each passage's style. In addition, the ways in which stylistic analysis can be integrated into analysis of the arguments is also becoming more evident. In the Preface I proposed to show the contribution of verbal features to the semantics of the argument. For this purpose the recurrent structural patterns which have emerged from this chapter provide a clear and substantial structural basis to be assessed in terms of its contribution to the process of argumentation.
Chapter 5

Generic Affiliations and Innovation

In this chapter I trace the generic affiliations of the distinctive stylistic features identified in the previous chapter. Such affiliations range from usage of features most commonly associated with a particular genre or author to specific allusions. Along with those features which have stylistic models, I will point out those which appear to be Platonic innovations and have no clear generic background. Evidence for usage of stylistic features will be limited to examples within extant pre-Hellenistic texts.

5.1 Genre

For practical purposes I assume the following broad genres:

*Verse* - Epic; lyric; drama, divided into comedy, tragedy, and satyr play.

*Prose* - Historiography (including geographical texts); philosophy; oratory; technical prose (esp.) medicine.

Nevertheless, it is important to be aware, especially from a stylistic point of view, that there are many problems involved in assuming such generic categories, however useful and indeed indispensable they may be.

---

1 On types of allusion see e.g. Nightingale, 1995, 8, although her interests are not primarily stylistic.
2 See 3.1.2, below.
3 The familiar modern versions of a tripartite epic/lyric/drama distinction date back to the sixteenth century (but were institutionalised in the nineteenth), although generic distinctions between classes such as tragedy, comedy, elegy, epos, lyric, threnos, idyll, pastoral, and satire had been posited (but without clarity: see Conte, 1996, 630-1) in antiquity from the Alexandrian period onwards. Explicit distinction between literary types is also, of course, made in Plato's *Republic* and Aristotle's *Poetics*, although not in the sense of more modern genres (see e.g. Conte, 1996, 630-1; Preminger and Brogan, 1993, 457-8)
4 There is no clear model for the division of prose into generic categories, since, especially in the case of ancient genre, theories are usually concerned solely with verse or oratory. I have divided prose into four main groups. However, given the huge variation within individual genres and the overlap between genres, together with the lack of clear formal markers like verse form, these categories must be treated with caution. For discussion of more specific difficulties see below.
5.1.1 Brief analysis of the problems:

While the problematisation of genre itself in modern literary theory is not very relevant to my project, I will briefly introduce a number of problems specific to the study of Greek genres. There are numerous difficulties in attributing stylistic features in Greek literature to particular genres of writing, many stemming from the stylistic heterogeneity of some Greek genres as well as the tendency of stylistic features to be inter-generic. Generic heterogeneity may be perceptible between particular authors, such as Aristophanes and Menander; between works by the same author, as is the case with Plato's middle and late dialogues; and even within the same works, as occurs in the *Phaedo* or in the contrast between the rhetorical and narrative parts of Thucydides.

Among the specific difficulties, relevant to particular authors or genres, one might note the following:

- Many of the key features of artistic prose, sophistic, or Gorgianic prose, are widely and plausibly taken to be a development of verse features, which often makes it difficult to establish to what extent particular stylistic phenomena can be seen as a prose innovation or derivative from a verse background.
- There are a number of overlaps between technical and philosophical writing.
- As well as dividing drama into tragedy and comedy, a distinction between song and dialogue (or even, song, recitative, and dialogue) would also be

---

5 Genre has become a major area of interest in modern literary theory. Genres are arguably retrospective categories used to classify literary works, while they themselves and generic markers are entirely based upon the features of the existing works themselves. Yet, in using them for classification and evaluation of literary works, some critics have treated them as if they were fixed and self-standing. This has, in turn, led other critics, most notably in the twentieth century, to object to the reification of genres, and to call for their abolition, or even suggest their non-existence. See e.g. Preminger and Brogan, 1993, 458; Conte, 1996, 630-1. Certain Greek genres were definable through performative context - the epithalium implies a wedding etc. Yet, as this example shows, these genres are not necessarily the same as those we focus on today within Greek literature. Cf. Silk, 2000, 64-70.

6 See e.g. Finley, 1942, 256.

7 See e.g. Norden, 1915, 63ff. and passim.

8 See e.g. Silk, 2000, 104ff.
very relevant to stylistic analysis, since there is often such a discrepancy between the style used in these two (or three) sections.

- Philosophical texts include both verse (e.g. Parmenides), prose (e.g. Aristotle), and writing which seems to lie between poetry and prose (e.g. Heraclitus)
- In oratory, there is often a marked discrepancy between the style used within the different parts of a speech, as also between different kinds of speech (forensic/epideictic etc.) and between different orators ('plain' Lysias, 'ornate' Gorgias). 9
- Even in works traditionally seen as having a certain stylistic character (e.g. early historiography is renowned for being plain and paratactic) there is often a great deal of variation. 10
- Socratic dialogues. Even though these are treated by Aristotle, 11 for example, as a whole genre, so little survives that it is difficult to say which features are Platonic and which are Socratic. 12

5.2 Passage I.

This speech is presented as the 'peroration' to Socrates' 'defence' of the philosopher's willingness to die. 13 At the very beginning of the 'defence' Socrates explicitly likens his apology to one given in a law-court, 14 and the 'peroration' certainly shows a stylistic affinity to oratory, with many of its features most closely affiliated to this broad category.

As shown in Chapter 4, Passage I can be divided into three distinct stylistic sections, of which the first two have much in common: ὁ μακάρις Σιμώνι...μὴ καθαρμός

---

9 The staple of ancient (discussions of) rhetoric. See e.g. Russell, 1981, ch.9.
10 See e.g. Lilja, 1968, 132-5.
12 Apart from Plato and Xenophon, there are no surviving texts which provide generic evidence of the Socratic writers, with the exception of some short fragments of Aeschines, which are certainly not substantial enough to establish any firm impression of his style. See e.g Vander Waerdt, 1994, 2, Nightingale, 1995, 4; and Giannantoni, 1990.
13 Cf. Rowe, 1993a, 149.
14 Phd.63b1-5. Cf. 63d2-3 and e8-9.
In structural terms it is parallelism and opposition which dominate the first and second sections, with antitheses and large numbers of pairs reinforced by other types of parallelism. The first two units of the initial section, ὥσε κατὰ ἐνδοτικὸν (69a6-10/I.1-5); καὶ τὸ ὑπό τοῦ πάντα...οὐδὲ ἀλλὰς ἔχει (69b1-8/I.6-13), are reminiscent of the long periodic and asymmetrical antitheses found in much Attic oratory. Although not exclusive to any particular author/s, such periods are probably most characteristic of Isocrates, the principal mode involving μὲν/δὲ or οἷ/άλλα antitheses, the types used in these two Phaedo examples.

Nevertheless certain differences also distinguish the Phaedo examples from such ‘Isocratean’ periods. While both types are characterised by their length, the latter derives extension from inclusion of subordinate clauses, whereas the former attains it mainly through paratactic structures, such as apposition. Combined with the prevalence of copulative or adversative particles, like καὶ, ἄδικα καὶ ἱστορικὰ, as well as a general absence of other inferential and confirmatory particles, the structure of Passage I brings it closer to Gorgianic works. In the Epitaphios for example, with the exception of initial and final units, there are no particles and the unit organisation is almost exclusively paratactic.

Moreover, this passage resembles Gorgias in a number of other respects, such as its exceptionally large number of pairs, all reinforced (in the first two sections) by other parallel structures like homoeoteleuton or pleonasm. Amplification through pairs, especially in conjunction with sound effects, is common to many writers. Used to excess, however, it is viewed as a Gorgianic/sophistic feature, so that its frequent

---

15 Cf. Denniston, 1952, 73. See e.g. Th.2.35.1.
16 See Mathieu, 1924, 54ff. Cf. e.g. Usher, 1973, 43, on ‘parallelism, antithesis...’ as ‘characteristic features of the Isocratean period’.
17 Usher, 1973, 40 and 43.
18 See e.g. Mathieu, 1924, 54ff.
19 See Denniston, 1950, xlvii-xlxi, for classifications.
21 On the difficulties concerning categorisation as ‘Gorgianic’ or ‘sophistic’ see above, p.100.
occurrence in, for example, certain early Hippocratic treatises has been taken as evidence of sophistic tendencies.  

The first section also stands out for its use of repetition, the most striking example being a sequence of three pairs of repeated words: ἡδονᾶς πρὸς ἡδονᾶς καὶ λύπας πρὸς λύπας καὶ φόβου πρὸς φόβου (69a7-8/I.2-3). The closest parallels for this are found in Hesiod, Empedocles, Gorgias and the Hippocratic Ancient Medicine:

καὶ κεραμεῖς κεραμεῖ κοτέει καὶ τέκτων τέκτων,
καὶ πτωχὸς πτωχῷ φθονεῖ καὶ δοίδος δοίδο.

ὑβριστὰς εἰς τοὺς ὑβριστάς, κόσμιοι εἰς τοὺς κοσμιοὺς, ἀφοβοὶ εἰς τοὺς ἀφόβους, δεινοὶ ἐν τοῖς δεινοῖς.  

Admittedly, these lines, unlike the Phaedo example, feature repetition of a different form of the lexeme or cognate and include four pairs rather than three. Nevertheless the distribution of examples suggests that the use of multiple pairs of repeated words, with parallel syntactic functions between pairs, was one of those poetic features adopted by certain prose writers which could be characterised as Gorgianic/sophistic.

The striking foregrounding of φρόνησις (69a10/I.5) and μετὰ φρονῆσεως (69b3/I.8) appears to have similar generic affinities. Positions of prominence, such as the beginning and end of lines of verse, clauses, or periods in prose, are frequently used for foregrounding in Greek literature. Highlighted by their solitary emphatic positioning the Phaedo examples are perhaps similar to foregrounded and thus isolated runover words, when used for emphasis in enjambed lines of verse. So, for example, Edwards cites Homer IIiad 9.330-41, in which runover words end clauses

---

22 See Appendix II p.281. Cf. Earp, 1944, 102, who sees the large number of ‘doublets’ in Sophocles’ early work as indicative of sophistic influence.


24 Cf. e.g. Denniston, 1952, 44-7, for examples in Greek prose; Silk, 1974, 68, on positions of prominence being those ‘that are preceded or followed by a pause’ and on the ancient sources for these views.

Chapter 5 103
and are 'carrying heavy emphasis'. In prose too such features occur and, once again, it is Gorgias who provides one of the most pronounced examples, when κόσμος and its opposed derivative ἀκοσμία begin and end the first period of his Helen: κόσμος πόλει μὲν εὐανδρία, σῶματι δὲ κάλλος, ψυχῇ δὲ σοφία, πράγματι δὲ ἀρετῇ, λόγῳ δὲ ἀλήθεια: τὰ δὲ ἐναντία τούτων ἀκοσμία. Here κόσμος and ἀκοσμία are highlighted, not only through position, but also by contrast to the long sequence of repetitive pairs between them. Nevertheless, the cumulation of features surrounding the foregrounding of φρόνησις and μετὰ φρονήσεως still makes the Phaedo example exceptional. Moreover, given the thematic importance of φρόνησις, the effects here seem far more striking than those associated with many of its possible stylistic models.

Another interesting aspect of word order is the chiasmus in τὸ δ' ἀληθὲς τῷ δύντι ἢ καθαροῖς τὶς τῶν τοιούτων πάντων· καὶ ἢ σωφροσύνη καὶ ἢ δικαιοσύνη καὶ ἢ ἀνδρεία, καὶ αὐτῇ ἢ φρόνησις μὴ καθαρμὸς τίς ἢ (69b8-c3/I.13-16). While chiasmus is common in oratory, examples like this, where the two parts are separated by an entire unit, are rare. In some ways it is perhaps closer to the combination of husteron-proteron and ring composition associated with early 'paratactic' verse.

Thus, in terms of unit organisation and parallel structures, this part of Passage I appears to combine features closely associated with oratory, with others most commonly found in early verse. The use of verse features in prose is often linked to Gorgianic/sophistic writing, and many features here recall that stylistic tradition. However, unlike Gorgianic rhetoric, where their use is often excessive, the Phaedo passage mixes them with elements like the loose antithesis that is more common in later orators.

---

27 Denniston, 1952, 69, cites other Platonic examples of 'emphatic' single words or short clauses. None of these, however, is so important or striking, as the Phaedo examples.
28 Lausberg, 1998, 355ff. E.g. And.1.147: οὐδέ ἢμαρτητα οὐδὲν οὔτε ἢμιν εἶς ἢμᾶς οὔτε ἢμῖν ἐλεῆ ἢμᾶς; Lys.1.18; 12.57; and 30.2. On chiasmus in early prose, see, e.g. Lilja, 1968, 133.
Plato continues both to combine aspects of various genres and add distinctive elements throughout the passage, not least at its most striking moments. This is true not only of the foregrounding of φρόνησις, but also of the section of extended imagery which surrounds it. This ‘coin’ imagery appears to synthesise certain aspects of the extended similes characteristic of early verse and philosophical writers with those of the extended metaphor, particularly associated with such poets as Aeschylus and Pindar.  

A number of this image’s key features can be traced individually in terms of generic affiliations: the clear similarities between tenor and vehicle; extended metaphor; thematic allusion of the vehicle to other parts of the text; exploitation of contrary associations of the vehicle, with possible ironic implications; and the combination of different formal categories of imagery. 

The first of these, a clear and direct tenor/vehicle correspondence, is most frequently associated with the developed ‘explicit’ comparison of similes in epic and early philosophical texts. Their function is to clarify particular situations or processes. 

---

30 Thus Plato’s imagery here appears to have elements of all the main types of imagery in Greek literature (see further below). For, as Silk, 1996, 967, says, ‘the significant use of imagery is in poetry and poetic prose’. In other genres imagery is rarer. On the scarcity of live imagery in some orators like Lysias see e.g. Edwards, 1999, 7; and Carey, 1989, 7 (and 85 on ἄθικα). On oratory in general, cf. Silk, 1996, 967. Among the orators, live imagery is most common in Gorgias: see e.g. B 11.8. 

31 Cf. Silk, 1996, 967. 

32 Cf. Silk, 1996, 967, function no. 1; and Silk, forthcoming. Cf. also Lloyd 1986, 183ff. on the explanatory function of the Homeric simile.
and suggested tenor/vehicle parallelisms are often quite elaborate. While Homer’s similes have diverse roles, the straightforward diagrammatic function is especially prominent in Presocratic similes. On the whole, ‘live’ imagery in extant Presocratic texts is fairly rare and, with the exception of the more Pindaric/Aeschylean metaphors in Heraclitus, the notable surviving examples are Empedoclean, arising in connection with physiological processes, as in his image of the eye as a lantern. These involve Homeric-type similes ‘in an explanation of an extremely obscure and complex phenomenon’ and emphasise tenor/vehicle similarities, while discrepancies in correspondence are incidental. Similar is the comparison at Hp.Flat.8 of the steam and condensation produced by boiling water with the yawning and sweating coming from a fever. In the Platonic image there is clearly some direct correspondence, especially at first, where exchange of items in

33 Lloyd, 1966, 191ff.: ‘What is interesting and important here from the point of view of the later history of analogy in Greek philosophy, is the fact that already in Homer we find some quite elaborate comparisons in which the correspondences in form and content between the two parts have clearly been worked out in considerable detail. As we shall see later, detailed points of similarity between the two parts of a comparison are a feature, and an important one, of their use in Greek philosophers, and these similarities are sometimes stressed, as in Homer, by the repetition of key words and phrases’.

34 A passage like Ar.Nu.96-7, ...ἀναπτέουσιν ὡς ἄστιν πνεύμονα, κάστιν περὶ ἡμάς ὄντος, ἡμεῖς δὲ ἄνθρωποι, which seems to satirise the philosophers’ tendency to express physical and cosmological principles in terms of comparison to everyday objects, suggests a trend towards imagery in such writers. Yet, even though the importance of comparison and analogy in early philosophical writers is widely acknowledged, and is also indicated by ancient commentators on the Presocratics (see Lloyd, 1996, e.g. 306, 309), analysis in the secondary literature tends to focus on analogy in its broad, logical sense (see ch.3 p.54), as opposed to imagery proper (see e.g. many examples given by Lloyd, 1966, 341ff; Adrados, 1992, 37, on comparison in Socratic writings. Cf. e.g. X. Mem.1.2.37 or Smp.5.5; Hussey, 1896, 331.

35 E.g. Heraclit.B52. The question of whether certain terms such as Empedocles’ Νεκώσ or Parmenides’ Δίκη involve genuine imagery (i.e. personification) is more vexed and can only be determined by a detailed study of prior and contemporary usage. The anthropomorphized Δίκη, for example, is already familiar from e.g. Hes.Op.220-4, and seems to reflect an archaic tendency to take personified virtues as deities, rather than the type of personification which constitutes ‘live’ imagery. Cf. Padel, 1992, 157. At the very least it seems that such works have clearly naturalised the idea of Δίκη as a personified agent before Parmenides. Although Lloyd, 1966, 211-2, acknowledges the difficulties in determining ‘whether or in what sense the Presocratics recognised the political and social notions which they used in their cosmologies as images’, he supposes that their status depends upon their function within the various contexts rather than on distributions of usage, and proceeds to consider them as imagery without allowing that it is unlikely that many constituted ‘live’ imagery within the works he describes.


37 Lloyd, 1996, 326, 327 and 331.

38 Cf. Hp. VM 9 and see Lloyd, 1996, 346. This extended simile is exceptional in the Hippocratics, in whom imagery is generally restricted to ‘short explanatory comparisons’ (cf. Silk, 1996, 967). Lloyd, 1966, 241ff., also discusses analogy in Herodotus. Yet none of his examples (e.g. Hdt.4.36 or 2.33) actually constitute imagery proper.
financial transaction provides, for example, a parallel for how the so-called self-controlled simply forego one pleasure for another.39

Yet this is just one level of the many-layered image in question. In the lines which follow it switches from simile to metaphor (69a9/I.4) and incorporates certain features of the characteristically Aeschylean/Pindaric extended metaphor, exemplified by Aeschylus' image of the fleet subjected to a storm as 'cattle':

\[
\ldots \delta \varepsilon \, \kappa \epsilon \rho \omega \tau \upsilon \pi \omega \mu \iota \mu \varepsilon \nu \alpha \nu \iota \tau \iota \mu \varphi \iota \chi \iota \nu \prime \iota \iota \mu \varphi \iota \varphi \iota \theta \mu \varphi \iota .
\]

In Plato, as in Aeschylus, the vehicle term is not restricted to a single word or phrase, but extends throughout the first part of the following unit with the terms of buying and selling, \( \omega \nu \omega \iota \mu \varepsilon \nu \alpha \tau \varepsilon \kappa \omicron \omicron \varepsilon \nu \) \( \tau \varepsilon \) \( \kappa \iota \iota \varphi \sigma \sigma \alpha \kappa \omicron \omicron \varepsilon \nu \alpha \). Another point reminiscent of Aeschylean metaphor is the vehicle's thematic allusion to ideas prominent elsewhere in the text.41 In the Phaedo money itself has already been an explicit topic of discussion in a passage shortly before the present one.42

This leads to a further point shared by the Phaedo example, Homeric similes, and Aeschylean/Pindaric metaphors: the exploitation of tenor/vehicle discrepancies, as well as correspondences. A number of discontinuities between the two notions of exchange described in the Phaedo image serve to highlight the exceptional value of \( \phi \rho \omicron \nu \sigma \iota \sigma \varsigma \) itself and take the image beyond straightforward parallelism.43 A

---

39 See Phd.68c2-69a4.
40 A.Ag.655-7. See Stanford, 1942, 95; Fraenkel, 1950, II.324. On the Aeschylean tendency to sustain a metaphor, see e.g. Headlam, 1902, 436: 'it was the particular habit of Aeschylus to sustain his figures. Other poets are content with transitory metaphors...; no one but Aeschylus has his habitual practices - no one, perhaps, but Pindar had his power of pursuing a similitude, of carrying a figure through'; cf. Stoneman, 1981, 134 Stanford , 1942, 94. Cf. also Steiner, 1986, 24, on Pindar: '[a single metaphoric motif] may dominate an entire ode'. Such extended images are not, of course, exclusive to these two authors. See e.g. E.Or.698ff.
41 Headlam, 1902, 438: 'in Aeschylus a [figurative] conception will run through a whole play'. As an example he gives the legal imagery in A.Ag. e.g. 41; 58 etc. On this, cf. Silk, 1996, 967: 'the implication that the Trojan war is somehow a legal event prefigures the way the whole cycle of conflict is eventually resolved in Eumenides'. Cf. e.g. the painter simile at Pl.Rep.377e, and the importance of art as a theme elsewhere in the Republic.
42 See below, n.46.
43 The tenor/vehicle discrepancies of this image will be discussed in greater detail in 6.2.3, below.
paradigmatic example of such discrepancies in poetry is the famous Homeric simile which compares the slain Gorgythion to a poppy weighed down by fruit and rain, and presents a ‘poignant contrast of death with life and growth’. 44 Similar implications arise from A. Ag.658ff., where the Aegean sea is pictured as ‘flowering with the corpses of Achaean men’ (ἀνθόων πέλαγος Αἴγαλων νεκροῖς/ἀνθρώπων Ἀχαιῶν). 45 In both these images there is an ironic or subversive tenor/vehicle contrast, just as the Platonic image derives irony from contrasting virtue with coinage, since money itself has already been named as the object whose desire makes us turn away from the pursuit of wisdom. 46 Moreover, this contrast also appeals to a notion of money as in some way amoral or immoral, found within other Platonic works as well as certain previous and contemporary literature. 47

In the Phaedo imagery there is also a formal change from simile to metaphor, 48 a phenomenon with parallels elsewhere in Plato and in Xenophon. 49 In Plato’s Euthyphro, for example, Socrates’ description of Meletus changes from a simile (ὡς πειρηγὸν) to a metaphor: καὶ δὴ καὶ Μέλητος ἵως πρῶτον μὲν ἡμᾶς ἐκκαθαρίζει τούς τῶν νεῶν τὰς βλάστας διαφθείροντας, ὡς φησιν (2d4ff.). The suggestion that Socrates actually harms the young is, of course, heavily ironic and irony is also found in other composite images of this kind. 50

---

45 Cf. Silk, 1974, 162 and 161-6, in general, on ‘imagery geared...to explicit antithesis’; Silk, forthcoming, on Heraclit. B.52 and ‘the paradox that “life” (and the Greek αἷμα has clear connotations of life-span, i.e. age) should be a “boy”’.
46 Phd. 66c6ff.: τὰ γὰρ πολέμως καὶ στάσεις καὶ μάχας οὖδὲν ἄλλο παρέχει ἢ τὸ σῶμα καὶ αὐτὸν ἐπαθμία, διὰ γὰρ τὴν τῶν χρημάτων κτίσην πάντες οἱ πόλεμοι γίγνονται, τὰ δὲ χρήματα άναγκαζόμεθα κτάσασθαι διὰ τὸ σῶμα, δουλεύοντες τῇ τούτου θεραπείᾳ καὶ ἐκ τούτου ἀγχολιαν ἀγομέν φιλοσοφίας περὶ διὰ πάντα ταύτα. Cf. Rep. 484c, where a simile presents painters as those εἰς τὸ ἄρθρον τούτου ἀναβλέποντες, in spite of Book X’s famous view of art as working at a third remove from reality.
47 Cf. e.g. Smp. 173c. Cf. e.g. Democr. B.40; 50; E.EL.371-2; S.Ant. 295-301; and, on this idea in general, see Seaford, 1998.
48 Contrast the phenomenon of ‘mixed metaphor’, most commonly associated with Aeschylus and Pindar, in which it is the vehicle that changes (‘to take arms against a sea of troubles’), as opposed to a switch between different formal categories of imagery. Cf. e.g. A. Ps. 174-7; Stanford, 1942, 95; Dornseiff, 1921, 66-8; and Pl. Rep. 365cff., which Shorey, 1982, 167, describes as ‘a Pindaric mixture of metaphors.’ Cf. also the succession of similes at Rep. 495cff.
49 For Xenophon see e.g. Mem. 1.3.12-13, with its combination of analogy, comparison, and metaphor. Given the lack of extant Socratic writing, it is uncertain whether such a feature was particular to Socratic dialogues or a Platonic feature adopted by Xenophon.’
50 In X. Mem. 1.3.12-12 (referred to above) Socrates uses imagery to draw an ironic analogy between looking at a beautiful person, conventionally a pleasant experience, and being bitten by a scorpion.
Finally, the imagery’s prominence is ensured through striking aural effects. The repeated vowels of αὕτη ἤ ὀρθή (πρὸς ἀρετῆν ἄλλαγη) and of the antithetical ἐκεῖνο μόνον τὸ νόμισμα ὀρθῶν are extremely unusual, and the phrases are also foregrounded by their being positioned at the beginning of the first unit’s two opposed parts. Assonance adds to imagery already striking in its complexity, which is certainly unusual. Overall, it is the conjunction of so many distinct stylistic features, associated with a range of genres, which makes this image exceptional, even within a Platonic context.  

As the passage progresses, virtue separated from wisdom is dismissed as illusory in the second metaphor: χωρίζομενα δὲ φρονήσεως καὶ ἄλλαττομενα ἀντὶ ἄλλῃσον μὴ σκιαγραφία τις ἤ τοιαύτη ἀρετή... (69b6-7/I.11-12). The terminology of finance thus gives way to that of painting, though hardly in the manner of the shifting vehicle so often found in Aeschylus and Pindar.

A final point about this part of Passage I is the pervasive μὴ + subjunctive rather than the indicative, which is apparently a characteristically Platonic construction signifying ‘doubtful’ or ‘cautious assertion’. The grammarian Smyth suggested that it is often used ‘with a touch of irony’, and many examples do indeed suggest irony or caution. However, such an analysis seems unsuited to this particular passage, given that here the idiom articulates essential points in Socrates’ case, strengthened through other forms of emphasis. In addition, here the construction also spreads over a number of successive units, unlike many instances where irony is apparent. A parallel is perhaps Crito 48c2-d3, where the idiom is used to dismiss unworthy considerations and state the genuine values on which Socrates’ moral

---

51 Berg, 1904, 1-14, outlines the major tendencies in Plato’s use of metaphor. He suggests that its frequency increases over time, so that, with the exception of Prm. and Leg., the greatest number of instances are found in the later dialogues. He also claims that the most striking examples occur in the middle dialogues, owing to the dictates of subject matter. However, Berg’s account has limitations for the analysis of Plato’s imagery because of a lack of detail and his failure to distinguish between ‘live’ and ‘dead’ imagery. Cf. also Pender, 2000, an interesting study of the imagery Plato uses to describe the gods and soul. However she, like Berg, does not distinguish ‘live’ and ‘dead’ imagery.

52 Cf. 67b2 and Rowe, 1993a, 144. The terms are those used by Smyth, 1920, 404, and Goodwin, 1889, 92, respectively.

53 E.g. Ap.39a6: ἄλλα μὴ ὦ τοῦτ ἡ χαλεπτῶν, ὦ ἄβρα, θάνατον ἐκφυγεῖν, ἄλλα πολὺ χαλεπώτερον πονηρόν. Although this construction is mainly found in Plato, Goodwin does give a couple of examples from other authors where it is used (D.1.26; Arist.NE 2.4). In these cases it also has an ironic sense.
deliberation must be based. The fact that both these passages appear to assert points central to Socrates’ main argument suggests that this construction may, for Plato, have an alternative function of emphasis rather than irony or caution. It is perhaps similar to Plato’s common use of questions to introduce key points, as with ἄρα μὴ ἄλλο τι ἢ τήν τῆς ψυχῆς ἀπὸ τοῦ σώματος ἀπαλαγήν;54

In the middle section, from καὶ κινδυνεύουσι καὶ τὸ βάκχοι δέ τε παῦροι (69c3-d1/I.16-22), the most distinctive features are two pairs of antithetical clauses, reminiscent of the gnomic antitheses associated with such authors as Hesiod, Theognis, Heraclitus, and Democritus,55 because of symmetry and aural parallelism between their two halves. Moreover, both pairs of clauses here are linked by more than one pair of corresponding terms, a key feature of gnomic antithesis.56

The existence of a parallel antithesis in Sophocles which, like the Phaedo examples, describes the comparative fates of the initiated and uninitiated in the afterlife suggests that such structures might be a common trait of language to do with the mysteries:57

...ὡς τρισόλβιοι
κέινοι βροτῶν, οἳ ταύτα δερχθέντες τέλη
μόλωσ’ ἐσ’ "Αιδοῦ. τοῖσδε γὰρ μόνοις ἐκεῖ
ζην ἔστι, τοῖς δ’ ἄλλοις πάντ’ ἐκεῖ κακά.58

Furthermore, since Plato’s alleged quotation, ναρθηκόφοροι μὲν πολλοί, βάκχοι δέ τε παῦροι’ (69c8-d1/I.21-2) is, as I noted in Chapter 4, a misquotation of a hexameter, it is possible, even likely, that it is either a direct quotation or Platonic parody of a religious verse.

54 _Phd._ 64c4-5. Cf. e.g. 64c6-8; _Crito_ 49b2-5; 48c2-d3.
55 See e.g. Fehling, 1969, 94, on the significant role of gnomic antithesis in Greek literature and gnomic antithesis as a Hesiodic innovation. Some examples are: _Hes.Op._ 311: ἐργον δ’ οὐδὲν ὀνείδος, ἐργῆ γε ἔτε ὀνείδος; 342; _Thgn._ 17; _Heraclit._ B61; 53; 111; _Democr._ B 40; 86. For more examples see Fehling. 1969, 297-8.
56 Fehling, 1969, 296.
57 If this is the case, the association has perhaps influenced the description of Sophocles at _Ar.Ra._ 82: δ’ ἐὔκολος μὲν ἐφθάσει ἐὔκολος δ’ ἐκεῖ.

Chapter 5 110
The final section, from οὕτω δ' εὐλογ... (69d1/1.22) to the end, is entirely different stylistically from the earlier parts of this passage, insofar as it includes neither striking parallel structures nor imagery, and is predominantly hypotactic rather than paratactic. In some ways it resembles the less periodic parts of Lysias. Yet, it is especially unusual, given that it represents the very end of a speech. For it is this part which, even in ‘plainer’ oratory, characteristically incorporates, for example, varying types of parallelism, in order to give weight to the conclusion.

Of all my passages it is Passage I’s first two parts which show the strongest tendency towards the stylistic features conventionally treated within rhetoric or poetics (ancient and modern). It is no surprise then that its generic affinities seem to be with verse and oratory, and especially Gorgianic/sophistic oratory, known for its inclusion of poetic features within prose writing. Yet it is also clear that Plato’s ‘imitation’ of such genres is not straightforward, but combines and builds on a mixture of different stylistic sources, producing effects which are often distinctive per se.

5.3 Passage II

Passage II, including its stylistically distinct middle section, οὖν τοὺς μὲν γαστριμαργίας...άνδρας μετρίους (81e6-82b8/Π.23-44), is most notable for its unit organisation and, to a certain extent, its parallel structures. Although many individual features have strong affiliations with other genres, their use here and combination with other more novel features make this passage’s style distinctive in many respects.

The lexis of the main and middle sections shows common features. There is lexical variety, in terms of both the range of lexical fields and many distinctive lexemes. The distribution of these lexemes is limited, almost exclusively, to prose and

---

99 See e.g. Kennedy, 1963, 135; Demetr. Eloc. 190.
60 E.g. Lys. 1.45 and 48: Κινδύνων ἐκδύνευον ἔχωμεν and ζημίας ζημιώσωσι; 3.47: ὑπὲρ ἂς ἔγιν
coll. Nων ξενίπων κεκινηκειμεν καὶ πολλὰς λητοφυργεῖς λεκτογράφηκα; 4.20: ἱκτεεύω ιμᾶς
cal. άντιβολά; 6.55: ἀντιβολήσει καὶ ἱκτεεύει ιμᾶς... μὴ ἐλέετε. οὗ γὰρ οἱ δικαίως
ἀποδεικτοῦντες ἀλλ' οἱ δίκως δίδι εἰσὶν ἐλέεσθαι; 12.100: ἀρρήστε, ἔσάκατε, πεποννᾶτε, έψετε. Δικάζετε. Usher, 1999, 117 remarks that a ‘quiet ending seems to have been characteristic of most Greek oratory’, but appears to be referring to the absence of pathos as opposed to particular stylistic effects.
Aristophanes. Most often they stem from technical, historical, and philosophical writing, although a number are also found in oratory. Lexemic variety itself is probably most closely associated with Aristophanes, who tends to combine terms from many different genres and registers. 61

Most of these distinctive lexemes are also compounds, especially φιλ-compounds. There are two instances of hapax legomena, οικοφθορία συνεπακολουθέω, while the word φιλαρχος only appears here and in one other Platonic passage. Compound nouns and adjectives, including those with non-prepositional stems, are common in Greek literature. 62 Aeschylus, in particular, tends to use such compounds and they abound in his plays, either singly, or in matching pairs 63. Yet, even in Aeschylus, clusters are rare, 64 and the most significant clusters of φιλ-compounds seem to be found in Plato alone. 65 A notable exception comes in Aristophanes’ Wasps, where a group of φιλ-compounds are playfully proposed as possible illnesses afflicting Philocleon.

5.3.1 The main section

In very broad terms, the style of the main section seems close to what Denniston describes as the ‘loose texture’ of Platonic periods, comprising a long ‘string of loosely connected clauses’, unlike the ‘Demosthenic period’. 67 The looseness of logical sequentiality between clauses has certain similarities to the narrative parataxis (λέξις ερμηνεύη) of early logographers or the loose Thucydidean period. 68 Yet, there are also considerable differences, since these styles are typified, respectively, by simple coordination and temporal sequentiality or by a preponderance of

61 See e.g. Dover, 1987, 224-36.
62 See e.g. the tonal range of compounds in Ar.Pax 788ff. and 810ff. and the discussion in Silk, 2000, 113-6; Earp, 1948, 6. φιλ-compounds are also common throughout all genres, with pairs especially common in oratory (e.g. the clichéd φιλανθρωπία and φιλοτιμία at D.8.71 or the more unusual φιλαίτιος μν, βαρύ γάρ, μηδε φιλεπιτιμητής at Isoc.Ad Dem.31.10.
63 E.g. φιλοστόνοι (A.Ch.292); φιλόμαστος (A.Ag.719); θηλικτόνω and θηλίστορος (A.PV 855 and 860); πανοίτιον and πανεργήτα (A.Ag.1486).
64 See the lists of compounds in Earp, 1948, 18-38.
65 E.g. Phd.68c1; Parm.128d7; Phdr.248d3; Alc.1.122c7; Lys.212d.
66 Ar.PV 75ff.
68 See e.g. Denniston, 1952, 66-7.
participial clauses. 69 By contrast, the Platonic units here are long and mainly hypotactic, including a variety of subordinate, and especially relative, clauses. As I have mentioned in Chapter 4, their style seems close to the characteristically Platonic "à rallonges" ("extended") phrase, named by Des Places to evoke the impression of extension generated by its structure. 70

This style has no clear parallels. There is perhaps a certain likeness in the long verse-invocations at the beginnings of archaic hymns, which consist of a similar mixture of short and loosely connected subordinate or participial clauses. 71 The appearance of such clauses, especially those connected by relative pronouns, is widely discussed in the secondary literature. 72

Although hyperbaton, another key element of Passage II's style, is very common in oratory and verse, 73 especially in its milder forms, the pervasive hyperbaton in 81c5-e1/II. 5-18, is unusual for various reasons. Hyperbaton is often used for emphasis, 74 but examples are usually isolated, unlike the clustering in this passage. Moreover, some of the individual examples here are also unusual, such as the (comparatively rare) separation of article and substantive in τῆς τοῦ συνεπακολουθοῦντος, τοῦ σωματειδοῦς, ἐπιθυμίᾳ (81e1/II.18), 75 or the (highly unusual) interposition of a long phrase between αὐτῇ and σύμφωνον (81c5-6/II.2-3). Regarding the latter,

---

70 Des Places, 1951, 365, who, however, discusses only those units whose clauses are, unlike those in this passage, connected throughout by the same conjunctions or different forms of the same part of speech. So Pl.Leg.699c1-d2, which Des Places, 1950, 364, calls 'le meilleur exemple de phrase "à rallonges" ', contains a series of five relative clauses, all of which begin with the relative pronoun. Although this is striking in itself, it can be clearly differentiated from the present Phaedo example, in which there is a greater syntactic complexity and variety of connectives. Cf. Denniston, 1952, 70ff.
71 E.g. h.Hom.2.1-10; h.Hom.5.1-6 (also has ring composition with repetition of ἐργα). See Porter, 1949, 252); h.Hom.16; h.Hom.17; Ar.Eq.581-90; although the examples from Aristophanes and the Homeric hymn to Aphrodite (h.Hom.5) differ slightly, insofar as the same grammatical subject is retained throughout all the clauses.
72 See e.g. Davies, 1991, 78, on 'relative style' in hymnic invocations; Race, 1990, 86, on participles, apposition, and relatives as a form of expansion in hymns; and 18, on hymn openings.
73 Gagarin, 1997: 29: 'mild hyperbaton, where only a word or two intervenes... is quite common in classical Greek'. Cf. e.g. Stevens, 1953, 203, on Findar and lyric; Fraenkel, 1950, 94 and 687, on common types of hyperbaton; Usher, 1993, 23; Denniston, 1952, 52; Lausberg, 1998, 319. There are also numerous examples, especially in verse, of longer separation between elements. See e.g. Fraenkel, 1950, 13; Denniston, 1952, 52ff; and Breitenbach, 1934, 243, for statistics for instances of hyperbaton in Euripides, classified according to the number of intervening words.
75 See e.g Denniston, 1952, 52ff. A very similar example occurs at Phd.83e1, another phrase describing the associations of the soul: τής τοῦ θελε τῇ καὶ καθαρῷ καὶ μουσείδους συνωσώσαι.
even though 'interlacing' is particularly frequent in Plato, it is very rare to separate a substantive from a prepositional compound on which it depends. The closest Platonic parallel seems to be the separation of αὐτῇ and περιπέφυκεν in:

αὐτῇ ἀτε γῆν ἐστιωμένη γενρά καὶ πετρώδη πολλά καὶ ἀγρια περιπέφυκεν ὑπὸ τῶν εὐδαιμόνων λεγομένων ἐστιάσεων.77

Interestingly, just as in the Phaedo example, this phrase describes the corruption of the soul by its association with the body.

Another of the main section’s distinctive features is recurrent ring composition. Ring composition, an important feature of early verse and prose, was used to mark off a short section of text by repetition of the same words at the beginning and end. Certain differences distinguish its use in these early texts from the Phaedo passage. In the former, ring composition often encloses very long sections, which may constitute digressions from the main narrative, while in Passage II it is the individual main paragraphs which are enclosed in such a way. More importantly, as with hyperbaton, probably the most distinctive feature of ring composition here is its recurrence. Rather than having one isolated example, as is normal in other genres, it is used in all three of the longer units.

In the main section of this passage, Plato therefore seems to combine distinctively Platonic features of unit organisation with those associated predominantly with early verse and artistic prose. Moreover, in spite of their generic affiliations, the accumulation and, to a certain extent, structure of these features differentiates their use here from their models.

76 I.e. the separation of logically cohering words, without affecting the order of the other words. See Denniston, 1952, 54ff.
77 Pl.Rep.612a1ff.
78 See e.g. Edwards, 1991, 44-8, on importance and frequency of ring composition in the Iliad; Fowler, 1987, 62; Van Otterlo, 1944, 2, (following Fränkel) on ring composition as characteristic of epic poetry and λέξεις εἴρομένη. For examples, see Van Otterlo, 1944. Cf. also Van Groningen, 1960, 51ff.
79 This can be distinguished from the rhetorical figures in which a word is repeated either at the beginning and end of a period (see e.g. D.25.88; Lys.34.11; Adams, 1905, 355; Denniston, 1952, 90) at the beginning and end of a text (see e.g. Carey, 1989, 85, on Lysias); and also from structural ring composition, in which a certain theme or episode recurs after a long intermediary section (see e.g. Edwards, 1991, 47, on Homer).
80 See Van Groningen, 1960, 55.
Describing the process by which souls are reincarnated into animals corresponding to their behaviour throughout life, the middle section’s main units provide parallel examples of how this process affects different types of people. In keeping with this, its distinctive feature is the high degree of parallelism between all the units. 81

‘Parallelism of structure’ in Plato

Close parallelism between units is a pervasive element of Platonic stylistic structure and recurs throughout the dialogues with no clear generic affiliations.

Unit-parallelism in Plato often occurs when a speaker enumerates examples or provides analogies for a general thesis, 82 and frequently involves a repetitive structure, in contrast to other genres, where such close unit-parallelism is rare. 83

---

81 oîkoûn eîdasmovéstatoi...philosophias te kal vou; (82a11-b3/II.35-9) is a possible exception.
82 More common, however, is the structure of argument where each unit adds a new step or explanation, rather than outlining cases analogous to the previous unit. This is especially true of the long speeches in the middle and later dialogues such as the Theaetetus, Parmenides, and Philebus, where sequences of analogous examples are much rarer (it is also true for the Sophist, although the early sections, where the ‘method of division’ distinguishes between two opposed parallel cases, include many groups of two analogous units or two parallel clauses: e.g. 222a5-11; 220b4-8, ΞΕ. kai toû pitoû mên gênous pásas òmwn ò théra légetai poû tis òrindëutikê/ΘΕΛΙ. légetai gàp òmwn/ΞΕ. toû dé ènôdrou stchôk to sóvolon òliëntikê). Nevertheless, even this type of structure often involves a certain degree of verbal or structural repetition (e.g. Th.189a6-5).
83 The closest example is a passage like the comparison of ship’s captains to doctors in Hp. VM 9, where the two examples given have some degree of structural similarity and are of roughly similar length (cf. VM 16). As Lloyd, 1966, 385ff., has shown, analogical arguments can be found throughout early Greek literature. However, those he cites from Homer generally focus on a particular case, as opposed to general principles, with emphasis falling on the example for which the analogous case is adduced by way of explication (Lloyd, 1966, 385ff.). Other examples in early verse and historiography are mainly very similar. Some examples in later verse include more general cases, and unit length between parallel cases is sometimes close (e.g. S.Ant.715ff.; E.Andr.479ff.). In addition there are instances of symmetry within individual lines or between symmetrical lines (see e.g. Féhling, 1969, 295ff.), as well as some examples of very close parallelism between strophe and antistrophe (e.g. A.Ag.763). However, often in these cases formal parallelism derives from a direct contrast, rather than from analogy. In oratory, rather than parallel units with corresponding clauses, parallelism is more common within an individual period/unit and between clauses, especially antithetical ones (see e.g. Denniston, 1952, 71-3, on symmetrical antitheses and cf. Gagarin, 1997, 30). The most striking type is parasisos or isocolon (see e.g. Arist.Rh.1210a22ff.; Lausberg, 1998, 320ff.), which comprises two balanced kola which contain a near or exactly equal number of syllables. This feature, employed mainly by orators, is often combined with parallel structures such as repetition or rhyme (see e.g. Adams, 1905, 353-4, on παροιμωκς and οιοιστέλευτων), and is used to excess by Gorgias.

Chapter 5
Given the amount of such parallelism in Xenophon’s Socratic dialogues,\textsuperscript{84} it is, however, possible that it was typical of the Socratic dialogue \textit{per se},\textsuperscript{85} although the paucity of surviving evidence means that this cannot be established with any certainty.\textsuperscript{86}

In Plato, parallel units are normally punctuated by short replies from the interlocutor, as in this passage. Apart from this common feature, the patterns of parallelism are extremely diverse in terms of unit length; amount of ellipse; repetition; and the number of parallel units in each instance. So, for example, a sequence at \textit{Charmides} 167c8-168b3, comprises nine short parallel units, all of very similar length and structure.\textsuperscript{87} Similarly, \textit{Republic} 335c9-d10 features seven short units, extremely alike in these respects, although comprising two stages, with three analogous examples followed by a group of four. Both passages include very strong structural and verbal repetition.\textsuperscript{88} Finally, at the opposite end of the spectrum are passages like \textit{Ion} 538b7ff., which contains two longer parallel examples, with significant verbal variation.\textsuperscript{89}

Notwithstanding this variety, certain key features in this part of Passage II can still be isolated as characteristic of parallel unit structure in Plato and, to a certain extent, in Xenophon’s Socratic dialogues. These are:

\begin{enumerate}
\item in phrases such as εἰσεῖν δυναίμην ἄ βούλομαι, βουλοίμην δ’ ἀ δεῖ, λαθῶν μὲν τὴν θείαν νέμεσιν, φυγῶν δὲ τὸν ἀνθρώπινον φθόνον (Gorg.B6).
\item E.g. \textit{X. Mem.} 2.1.3; 2.3.11-13; 2.9.2;.
\item \textit{X. Mem.} 1.5.1-3, seems to suggest that such stylistic parallelism in analogical arguments was a typical part of Socratic ethical discourse, even though the example he proceeds to give is contained within the form of a continuous speech rather than dialogue.
\item The only really substantial fragments of other Socratic dialogues are frs. 9 and 12 of Aeschin. Socr., in Giannantoni, 1990, II.607 and 609 (cf. p.101, above). However, these both involve an extended speech and, though fr.12 contains an example of antithesis (610), offer no noticeable stylistic parallelism.
\item Although the first unit is longer than those which follow.
\item Cf. e.g. \textit{Lach.} 185c5ff.
\item \citet{Giannantoni1990}, Ti de. ὃταν "Ομήρος λέγει, ὡς πετρωμένῳ τῷ Μάχαδω ἑκατηῆ ἡ Νέστορος παλλακῆ κυκεών πίνειν δίδωσι; καὶ λέγει πως οὕτως...ταῦτα εἶτε ὀρθῶς λέγει "Ομήρος εἰτε μῆ, πότερον ἑτεροῦ ἔστι διαγνώσαι καλῶς ἡ ἑρασίδηκης/ἵμων. ἑτεροῦ/ΣΩ. τι δε. ὃταν λέγη ὁμήρος...ταῦτα πότερον φώμεν ἀλειτυκῆς εἶναι τέχνης μᾶλλον κρίναι ἡ ἑρασίδηκης, ἢττα λέγει καὶ εἴτε καλῶς εἴτε μῆ; Cf. e.g. \textit{Men.} 72d4-e8; \textit{Rep.} 444d3-11.
\end{enumerate}
i) The parallel structure of units, enhanced by verbal repetition of terminology common to all examples, such as εἰς τὰ ...γένη.

ii) A certain degree of ellipse and variation, such as the fact that εἰκός ἐνδούσθαι (82a1/II.25) is not repeated in the second of the three units (82a4-6/II.28-30) and is replaced by εἰκός ἐστιν ... ἀφικνεῖσθαι in the third (82b5/II.41).

iii) The punctuation of parallel units by short answers from the interlocutor, restricted to brief words of affirmation or denial, or short questions, like τὰ πολα δὴ ταῦτα λέγεις, Ὡ Sigma πρατε; (81e5/II.22); πάνυ μὲν οἷν εἰκός λέγεις (82a3/II.27); or simply εἰκός (82b9/II.45).

iv) Some variation in length of units, so that the key unit is either significantly longer or shorter than the others. This passage differs slightly from the majority of examples, in which analogous cases are adduced in order to validate a point made in the central unit. Here, parallel cases do not provide analogies, but all illustrate different parts of the same process. Nevertheless, as Socrates moves on to describe the metempsychosis of the more virtuous souls, the unit (82b5-8/II.41-4) is slightly longer and is also preceded by an additional and formally distinct paragraph (82a11-b3/II.35-9), which seems to suggest its special significance.

v) Often a unit in the middle of the sequence outlines the general principle, and especially when preceding the unit which contains the key point. Here, however, the general principle is described at the outset and is only slightly similar in form to the parallel units which follow: ἐνδοῦνται δὲ, ὥσπερ εἰκός, εἰς τοιαῦτα ἥν ὅποι ἀττ' ἄν καὶ μεμελητηκαί τύχωσιν ἐν τῷ βίῳ (81e2-4/II.19-21).

---

90 Phd. 81e7-82a1/II.24-5; 82a5-6/II.29-30; and, with γένος in the singular, 82b5/II.41-2; 82b7/II.43. Cf. the repetition of τίς τι ἀποδοθεία τέχνη in Rep. 332c5-d3 or of ἔτερος in Chrm. 166a9-b6. Cf. also e.g. the repetition of εἰ δὲ βουλεῖ, τι ἄν ποιοῖς, δῆλον δτι; or of ὡστε in X.Mem. 2.3.11-3 and Mem. 4.2.10, although the repetition in each of these passages is a little more uniform than is usual in Plato.

91 Cf. e.g. Rep. 410e10-a3. Cf. the alternation between βουλεῖ and ἐπιθυμεῖς in X.Mem. 4.2.10. For ellipse see on Passage IV, n.125, below.

92 See p.123, below.

93 Cf. e.g. Gorg. 460b1-5. Cf. also Thesleff, 1967, 38, on Plato’s expansion of a question in order to make an important point.

94 E.g. Phd. 82a9.
Finally, in spite of the many similarities, the main feature which differentiates this passage from the usual structure of such passages in Plato is that much of its parallelism derives from lists, whereas other types of repetitive structure and/or the use of polyptoton are far more normal.95

This conjunction of tripartite lists with pervasive homoeoteleuton is extremely unusual, though certain aspects could be seen to stem from particular genres. Sound effects used together with tripartite lists are perhaps most closely associated with oratory, but do also appear in verse and other types of prose.96 Tripartite lists, albeit more usually unaccompanied by sound effects, are also very common in Old Comedy, and the clustering of this feature in Passage II might perhaps be slightly reminiscent of the Aristophanic tendency towards such clusters.97

Overall, this passage is also notable for lexical variety, both in the range and fluidity of lexical fields, as well as its many distinctive lexemes. These lexemes have an almost exclusively prose and Aristophanic background, especially technical, historical, and philosophical writing. Lexemic variety is itself is probably most closely associated with Aristophanes, who is known for his tendency to combine terms from various different genres and registers.98

5.4 Passage III

Passage III uses extended oratio obliqua, a distinctively Platonic construction, although one which more usually governs longer sections.99 In addition, all three main units begin by stating a verb governing the dependent clauses: ἡγεσίαν (97c4/III.5); ὀμην (97d6/III.15); and ὀμην (98a7/III.28). Yet it is rare for Plato to restate the introductory verb, especially in such a regular and systematic way, and elsewhere in Plato the syntax of this construction is in general far more fluid.100

---

95 E.g. Chrm. 167c9ff.; Th. 188e11-189a11.
96 See Appendix II p.282.
97 See Appendix II p.283, below.
98 Cf. n.61, above.
99 Cf. e.g. Tarrant, 1955, whose examples of 'extended oratio obliqua' in Plato only include longer passages or entire dialogues.
100 On the inconsistency of structure in Plato's use of oratio obliqua, see e.g. Thesleff, 1967, 50.

Chapter 5 118
The passage describes Socrates' expectations when reading Anaxagoras and its most striking stylistic feature is clear stylistic allusion to Anaxagoras himself and, to a certain extent, to other Presocratic physicists. However, despite the presence of numerous features found in these authors, together with the passage's explicit concern with Anaxagoras, the Anaxagorean or 'Presocratic' quality of the writing has not been noted by commentators.

The most outstanding features of the passage as a whole are: extensive key-word repetition; systematic structural repetitiveness of unit organisation; and lack of lexemic variation. The use of key-word repetition is subtly reminiscent of Anaxagoras' own style, in which it is widely acknowledged as a pervasive characteristic. For example, Denniston comments on Anaxagoras B12:

One notices how certain key-words, νοῦς, περιχωρεῖν, ἀποκρίνεσθαι, and their cognates, run through the passage with a recurrent emphasis. Their repetitions flood and permeate, rather than strike, the ear.

As outlined in the previous chapter, notable examples in the Phaedo passage are: νοῦς; κοσμέω and its compound διακοσμέω; πᾶς; αἰτίος and its cognates; and βέλτιστος/ἀμείνων. Of these, all but αἰτίος and its cognates and βέλτιστος/ἀμείνων are also key terms in Anaxagoras. νοῦς, κοσμέω, and πᾶς are all repeated a great deal in the extant fragments of Anaxagoras, while διακοσμέω occurs only once, but in the programmatic πάντα διεκδόσης νοῦς. In the Phaedo passage it appears shortly after Anaxagoras is named, in a phrase bearing many similarities to the Anaxagorean exemplar: νοῦς ἐστιν ὁ διακοσμῶν τε καὶ πάντων αἰτίος (97c1-2/III.2-3).

---

101 As the passage progresses, more general allusion to Presocratic physicists becomes apparent.
102 Denniston, 1952, 4. Cf. also e.g. Deichgräber, 1933, 351-2; and Schofield, 1980, 6-9.
103 Although some instances, such as the repetition of νοῦς in 97c1, 3, and 5, also provide examples of 'successive clause or unit' repetition, it is the way in which they are repeated throughout the passage that makes them exceptional.
104 See especially Anaxag. B12.
105 Anaxag. B12.
As well as the ‘Prädikationsstil’, which incorporates ‘key-word’ repetition and which is linked to hymnic style, Deichgräber also identifies the ‘Argumentationsstil’ as one of three key styles in Anaxagoras’ writing. This seems close to what Thesleff describes as ‘the scientific style’ in early Greek prose, found in Anaxagoras and other Presocratic prose, and many features of this ‘Argumentationsstil’ or ‘scientific style’ also appear in the Phaedo passage.

First, the organisation of the Platonic passage is reminiscent of this writing. Hypotaxis prevails; clauses are neither exceptionally long nor short; while the word order is likewise unremarkable and seems largely to reproduce the order of the train of thought. These features comply with what Thesleff calls the ‘systematic structure of exposition’. Moreover, the passage is differentiated both from the simple narrative sequentiality of historical prose narratives by its syntactic complexity, and from the periodic structure of Attic oratory by its repetitiveness, its overall continuity, and a lack of, for example, antithesis and sound effects. In combination, these aspects of Passage III surely evoke the Presocratic prose of Anaxagoras, and others.

Thesleff claims that a key feature of the ‘scientific style’ typical of such writing is ‘explicit argumentation’, dependent not on formal logic, but on recurrent ‘explicit patterns’. Many of these can be found in the Phaedo passage. As we have seen, its prevalent pattern of argumentation is conditionals, interspersed with a couple of explanatory γάρ clauses. Such structures, introduced by εἰ, εὖ, or ἦν, used widely for theorising, appear to be the main tool of systematic explanation and argumentation within the Presocratic prose tradition. Notwithstanding specific details of individual arguments, certain broad formal/semantic patterns are recurrent. For example, Melissus B8.2 begins with a condition followed by a necessary inference (εἰ γάρ ἦν πολλά, τοιαῦτα χρή αὕτα εἶναι) and then

106 Porter, 1949, 257, on thematic repetition as an ‘integral part of the technique of the hymn style’.
107 Deichgräber, 1933, 353. The third, the ‘purely descriptive style’ (‘rein beschreibenden Stil’), is not really relevant here.
109 My analysis here is not concerned with the specific logical form of individual arguments used in this tradition, but simply with the very broad formal/semantic classification of certain types of conditionals.
110 See Thesleff, 1966, 89, n.1 and 93.
repeats a similar pattern. The end features a similar construction,\textsuperscript{111} as do several of his other fragments.\textsuperscript{112} Such patterns are even more pronounced throughout Zeno B1-3,\textsuperscript{113} and are present, though to a lesser extent, in Anaxagoras and Diogenes of Apollonia.\textsuperscript{114} Diogenes' καὶ τὰ ἄλλα, εἴ τις βούλεται ἐννοεῖσθαι, εἰρήσκοι ἂν οὕτω διακείμενα ὡς ἄνωτον κάλλιστα...,\textsuperscript{115} offers a very close parallel to εἴ οὕτως τις βούλετο... in Phd. 97c6, verbally and in terms of general context (insofar as both sequences state the necessity of discovering the best disposition). Of course, conditionals are an important element of many other kinds of writing. Yet in oratory, for example, which uses conditionals a great deal, the prevalent types and patterns are different from those within the sequential argumentation of philosophical prose, not only in context and subject matter, but also in structure.\textsuperscript{116} Moreover, within the 'Anaxagoras episode' the conditionals are also accompanied by other features recalling this tradition.

Other common types of argumentation in the Presocratics and this passage are appeals to necessity, such as ἀναγκαῖον δὲ εἶναι...(97d4),\textsuperscript{117} and phrases which give explicit indication of the reasoning process.\textsuperscript{118} For example, εἴ τοῦτ' οὕτως ἔχει (97c4) is paralleled in Anaxagoras' τοῦτων δὲ οὕτως ἔχοντων,\textsuperscript{119} while the

\textsuperscript{111} Meliss.B8.5-6.
\textsuperscript{112} Meliss.B6, 9, and 7.1-2.
\textsuperscript{113} In spite of the controversies surrounding its authenticity Gorgias' Περὶ τοῦ μη διτός provides some interesting parallels for such a style. While it is doubtful whether either of the two surviving versions, Sext. adv. math. VII. 65ff. (B3) and About Melissus, Xenophanes, and Gorgias (Buchheim, 1989), preserve the exact wording (Wardy, 1996, 9), it nevertheless seems probable that the argumentative method they embody is authentic, since throughout both texts, the argument progresses by stating a condition in the protasis, followed by the inference from this in the apodosis: e. g. ὅτε εἴ δὲ ὀδυνώτερον ἔστι τὸ δι, ἀπειρόν ἔστιν, εἴ δὲ ἀπειρόν ἔστιν, οὐδὲν ἔστιν, εἴ δὲ μηδέν ἔστιν, οὐκ ἔστιν. (Gorg.B3.70).
\textsuperscript{114} Anaxag.B12, εἴ μη γὰρ...; Diog.Apoll.B2 contains a sequence of conditionals, while there are other single examples in 3 and 4.
\textsuperscript{115} Diog.Apoll.3.
\textsuperscript{116} Even where sequences of conditionals are found in oratory and elsewhere these are most often antithetical conditionals: e.g. the two pairs of antithetical conditionals in Lys.13.75-6; D.22.28; Hp.Aer.10; Hdt.3.62.4; or single pairs of antithetical conditionals in Antipho.Ttr.3.2.6; Lys.15.8. Another common type is the use of a counterfactual past conditional, followed by a statement of the true state of affairs (see Usher, 1997, 17, 19 and passim, on 'hypothetical inversion') which, in spite of certain similarities to the counterfactuals used by the Presocratics, can in fact be distinguished from these by their formal qualities as well as context. In addition, there is also the common pattern of condition given in the protasis with an order, suggestion, or request in the apodosis (e.g. Lys.13.92; Gorg.11.6; S.Eli.585; S.Aj.187; E.Med.355; and see Wakker, 1994, 263ff.).
\textsuperscript{117} Cf. ZenoB1 and 3; Meliss.B7.2 and 7.10.
\textsuperscript{118} Cf. Thesleff, 1966, 92ff.
\textsuperscript{119} Anaxag.B4.
use of λόγος in phrases such as καὶ περὶ τοῦ προὐχοντος ὁ αὐτὸς λόγος might be compared with ἐκ δὲ δὴ τοῦ λόγου τούτου... (97d1).

As characteristic of the ‘scientific style’ Thesleff also identifies stylistic austerity, ‘consistent terminology’, and ‘abstractness of expression’ such as ‘wide use of abstract nouns’, all of which are prominent in Passage II. It contains no imagery, no elaborate antitheses or periods, no rare diction, and a comparatively sparse range of vocabulary, reflected in its exceptionally small ‘lexeme-token ratio’ of 0.52. With respect to word forms and ‘parts of speech’, there are very few adjectives or adverbs and an absence of compound nouns, adjectives, or adverbs.

While abstract nouns in general are obviously not restricted to such prose, the particular form which consists of the definite article and neuter adjective is noticeably common in Anaxagoras himself, and others. For example, Anaxagoras talks about τὸ σμικρόν and τὸ μεγά, and τοῦ τε διεροῦ καὶ τοῦ ξηροῦ καὶ τοῦ θεμιοῦ καὶ τοῦ ψυχροῦ καὶ τοῦ λαμπροῦ καὶ τοῦ ζωφεροῦ. This noun-form has been labelled as particularly Platonic. Yet its frequency still varies and, in this passage, it occurs far more than on average in the dialogue, although all examples are either τὸ + (various degrees of) ἀγαθὸν or + χείρον.

Overall, the conjunction of distinctive stylistic features is reminiscent in many ways of the type of writing associated with Anaxagoras and, more generally, with Presocratic prose. In this way it is a good example of the scope and variety of Plato’s allusiveness.

121 See Thesleff, 1966, 89.
122 Webster, 1952-3, 24, claims that, ‘in its full development’ this noun-form is found in ‘the early Hippocratic writings, Anaxagoras, and Thucydides’. Cf. e.g. Hp.Ær12; Other scholars, e.g. Kühner and Gerth, 1955, 267-8 and Denniston, 1952, 36-7, note the preponderance of such nouns formed from adjectives in Plato and from participles in Thucydides, but do not include the Presocratics. Cf. e.g. Finley, 1942, 262.
123 Anaxag. frs.B3 and 4 respectively.
5.5 Passage IV

The general stylistic character of this passage is peculiarly Platonic, with no strong affiliations to any particular genre or author, apart from limited similarities with Xenophon's Socratic dialogues. In certain respects, the passage is even exceptional within the context of Plato's own style.

The two key features are increasing ellipse in the first part, together with the structural parallelism associated with the last two main units. Ellipse and parallelism, often in combination, are, as discussed above, characteristic of many passages of short questions and answers in Plato and, to a certain extent, in Xenophon's Memorabilia. However, for a number of reasons the first parts of Passage IV stand out among such parallels.

The structure of the ellipse is much tighter here than elsewhere, subtly increasing within the first two sequences, and culminating in the final, single word responses, ὅντας and ἀδ.white, respectively. This prominence through isolation slightly resembles the foregrounding of φρόνησις in Passage I (69a10/I.5). Yet, even though the prominence of φρόνησις there is exceptionally striking, it is also accompanied by a number of features associated with the types of verse and prose in which similar foregrounding is usual, so that its occurrence fits into a broad generic affiliation. By contrast, outside Plato, one cannot find even a vague parallel for the occurrence of this phenomenon in a passage like IV.

In addition, the interlocutor's answers here are also exceptional, differing from other Platonic dialogues, where the short responses of the interlocutors in such sections are usually restricted to a choice of brief and often formulaic words of affirmation or denial, or short questions. This is true throughout Platonic dialogues of all three periods and, even in the Philebus, in which Protarchus' role is fairly active, his

125 Found in all periods: e.g. Euthphr.10a10-e9; 13a5ff.; Chrm.174b1-10; Lys.213b5ff.; Gorg.460a5ff.; Rep.410e10-a3; Phdr.261c4ff.; Thc.189a2-6. Cra.387b5ff.
126 E.g. X.Mem.2.7.5; 3.8.3; 3.9.4; 4.2.14.
127 See p.103ff., above.
128 Cf. Thesleff, 1967: 'Plato employs a wide register of brief confirmative and negative formulae and other types of reply'.
answers are rarely more than ναλ or ἄναγκη. These short formulaic responses may well be a feature of Socratic dialogues in general, given that similar patterns are found in Xenophon’s Memorabilia, where Socrates’ interlocutors often respond with phrases such as καὶ μᾶλα or πάνυ μὲν οὖν. By contrast, in this Phaedo passage, the interlocutor’s answers, though short, depart from the stock phrases of response and form a vital part of the argumentation and its content.

At the end of this passage the point made at 105e11-106a1/IV.31-2 is expanded into two units, with marked parallelism on semantic, syntactic, and formal levels. Between these two units there is repetition both of structure and of the lexemes ἄνωλεθρος (106a5 /IV.36 and 106a10/IV.41) and ἄναγκαιόν (106a3 /IV.34 and 106a8/IV.39). Together with the elliptical omission of ἄναγκαιόν (106a3 /IV.34) in the second unit, the composition of these two units resembles typical Platonic parallelism, outlined in my description of Passage II.

The two distinctive features of lexis here are the large numbers of nouns formed from τό + adjectives or participles and of α-privative nouns and adjectives. The first of these features is, of course, also prevalent in Passage III, and appears to have a broad technical or philosophical prose background, associated as it is with reflective passages in Thucydides, the Hippocratic Corpus, and the writings of Presocratics like Anaxagoras and Melissus.

The generic background for the α-privative compounds is more difficult to trace, since this noun form is an important feature of Greek, common to all genres. Clusters of α-privative compounds are found in varied contexts, such as the rhetorical display used to conclude Socrates’ outline of the five lives at Rep.580a

130 See e.g. X.Mem.3.3.12ff. and 3.10.7ff. However, in the Mem. there is also more of a tendency for the interlocutors to mix these responses with longer answers (e.g. 1.2.44; 1.3.9; 3.6.6; and 3.10.2) or solely to give longer answers (e.g. 1.4.7ff; 2.2.7 and ff.). Moreover, it is also common for the interlocutor to repeat the same response in successive sequences (e.g. 2.1.2ff.; 2.2.12; 3.2.1-2; and 3.2.6-7), which hardly ever occurs in Plato.
131 There is, of course, the famous episode in which Socrates questions the slave at Meno 82bff. Yet even here the majority of answers are simply phrases of affirmation such as ναλ or πάνυ γε, occasionally interspersed with numerical answers.
132 See 116, above.
This programmatic Parmenidean passage involves not only a group of α-privatives, but also the first extant usage of ἄνωλεθρος, a word then used a small number of times, exclusively by Plato, Aristotle, and Theophrastus.

In keeping with the general distinctiveness of the passage, three of the α-privatives also appear to be neologisms: ἄφυκτος, ἄθερμος, and ἄνάρτιος. Moreover, within extant classical and pre-classical Greek texts ἄφυκτος and ἄθερμος are instances of hapax legomena, while ἄνάρτιος appears only four times, all in the Phaedo, twice within this passage (106a1/IV.31 and 105d15/IV.18) and twice in close proximity (104e5 and 106c3).

5.6 Passage V

The composition of this passage is, on the whole, loosely paratactic, emphasised by a general absence of particles other than δέ, τε, and the prevalent καί. Thus it has certain similarities with historical prose, although there structure is usually associated with narrative sequentiality, whereas both temporal and logical sequentiality are generally absent from this passage.

---

135 Parm.B8.2-4. Although the text of this fragment is controversial, and ἄτελεστον has been questioned, there does seem to be general agreement over the inclusion of ἄνωλεθρον, ἄγενητον, and ἄτρεμες. Cf. e.g. KRS, 248.
136 Although it bears more of a resemblance to Herodotus or Xenophon than Thucydides.

Chapter 5
Des Places picks out 111b4-c4 as an example of characteristically Platonic ‘à rallonges’ phrasing.\textsuperscript{137} He mentions the proliferation of κατ and compares it to certain other Platonic passages, although these feature sequences of relative clauses. While the looseness of logical connection in his cited passages is comparable, our passage’s striking parataxis is a crucial aspect of its composition and puts it at odds with these other passages, which share its looseness, but are, nevertheless, predominantly hypotactic.\textsuperscript{138}

In this passage’s elaborate ‘geographical’ description varied parallel structures, used to contrast the ‘true’ earth to our own, represent (with the exception of parataxis), the only recurrent aspect of unit organisation. It also contains an exceptionally large number of lists, and these are not reinforced by other parallel structures. In relation to both Plato and extant Greek literature in general, the passage presents a highly unusual appearance, with no clear stylistic parallels.\textsuperscript{139}

In part this may be due to the loss of early geographical texts. Of Hecateus, the ‘father of geography’,\textsuperscript{140} the extant geographical fragments comprise little more than a few groups of names,\textsuperscript{141} while the extensive works of many other key geographers are lost entirely.\textsuperscript{142} However, some idea of common stylistic traits and how these compare to the Phaedo passage can be derived from what does survive.

Extant early geography is perhaps best represented by certain passages of Herodotus, although a work such as the Hippocratic Airs, Waters, Places may also be useful. In addition to this, the Periplus of Pseudo-Scylax,\textsuperscript{143} thought to have been written between 360 and 347 BC, also provides evidence for the stylistic features of these

\textsuperscript{137} Des Places, 1950, 365.
\textsuperscript{138} Cf. 5.3.1, above.
\textsuperscript{139} Kingsley, 1995, chs.7-8, suggests that the myth’s geography is based on that of Sicily, though he does not focus on style. He points out aspects of the Phaedo myth which are common to later geographical works, but the correspondences are not stylistic and the attested writers, Diodorus Siculus and Strabo, are much later than our period. Furthermore no primary sources survive to validate his proposal that the ‘mythical material’ has Pythagorean origins, so that, apart from a slight verbal echo of Empedocles (86), there is no earlier or contemporary verbal evidence for the tradition to which the Phaedo myth is ascribed.
\textsuperscript{140} Tozer, 1935, 75.
\textsuperscript{141} E.g. Hecat.frs.271; 274; 276. See Warmington, 1934, xxxviii; Tozer, 1935, 71.
\textsuperscript{142} Warmington, 1934, xlvii.
\textsuperscript{143} Müller, 1882, 1.I5-95.
early topographical works.\textsuperscript{144} The structure of the sections on geography in Herodotus is mainly paratactic and often very simple, although occasional moments, where certain places, peoples, or geographical features are contrasted with each other, might seem comparable to the \textit{Phaedo} passage.\textsuperscript{145} Nevertheless, on the whole, Herodotean geography is very plain and lacking in detailed description, parallel structures, imagery, distinctive lexis, or structural complexity,\textsuperscript{146} and many passages comprise simple catalogues of location or distance.\textsuperscript{147} The style of Pseudo-Scylax’s \textit{Periplus} is even plainer, with short clauses linked by simple and highly repetitive coordination, and a pervasive cataloguing of locations and names.\textsuperscript{148}

There is a certain degree of similarity between this descriptive tradition and the \textit{Phaedo} passage, insofar as both are predominantly paratactic, and share, for example, an absence of the same particles and the predominance of δὲ, τε, and (especially) καί. Nevertheless, Passage V has complexity and variety absent from the geographers, in its use of imagery and parallelism and its diverse stylistic modes of contrast. The Hippocratic \textit{Airs, Waters, Places} perhaps provides a closer model, in that it offers a detailed geographical account of Asia and Europe,\textsuperscript{149} including some parallel structures and comparatives used to show the contrasts between the two continents. Parataxis is predominant, but is accompanied by a certain amount of loose hypotaxis, so that, as in Passage V, there is no logical or temporal sequentiality interconnecting the units, but also not the same repetitive simplicity as found in the other geographical texts.

\textsuperscript{144} As well as Pseudo-Scylax, there is also the \textit{periplus} of Hanno the Carthaginian, a work translated from the original Punic inscription, which is said to date some time around 480-470 BC (Tozer, 1935, 104; \textit{OCD} 1996, 666). The style is similar to that of Pseudo-Scylax, although with more elements of simple hypotaxis. However, it would be risky to use this as evidence, since the dating and background of the surviving translation is uncertain.

\textsuperscript{145} E.g. 2.10 and 4.50, in which the phrase describing the balance of complementary processes, which keeps the height of the Danube constant, arguably bears a very slight resemblance to Passage V: τὸν μὲν χειμῶνος ἔστι δόσος περ ἐστὶ, ὅλως τε μέξων τῆς ἑωτοῦ φύσιος γίνεται; δὲται γὰρ ἥ γῆ αὐτὴ τοῦ χειμῶνος πάμπαν ὀλίγω, υφετῷ δὲ πάντα ἥραται, τὸ δὲ θέρεος ἡ χῶν ἡ ἐν τῷ χειμῶν τειχόνα, ἔονδα ἀμφιλαβῆς, τηκομένη πάντοθεν ἐσιδιδα ἐς τὸν ἑστρον...

\textsuperscript{146} The most descriptive detail occurs at e.g. 4.47: ἢ τε γὰρ γῆ ἔοσα μεῖδας αὐτή τοῦ χειμῶνος τε καὶ εὐθὺς ἐστὶ, ποσοὶ τε δὲ αὐτῆς βάζουσι χεῖρ πολλῷ τῶν ἀριθμῶν ἑλάσσοντες τῶν ἐν ἀγγυτω θωρύχουν. Cf. 4.185 or 2.7.

\textsuperscript{147} E.g. 4.85: τοῦ τὸ μὲν μῆκος στάδιοι ἐσι οκατὰ καὶ χιλιαὶ καὶ μῦροι, τὸ δὲ εὐρός, τῇ εὐφώτατος αὐτὸς ἠωτότα, στάδια τρικόσιοι καὶ τριακοσίοι. Cf. 2.6ff; 4.36ff.

\textsuperscript{148} A typical passage is e.g. 46: ἐσι δὲ καὶ ἄλλα πολλὰ πόλεις Λακεδαιμόνων, ἐν μεσογείᾳ δ’ ἐστὶ Σπάρτη καὶ ἄλλα πολλά. παράπλου δὲ τῆς Λακεδαιμονίων χώρας ἡμερῶν τριῶν.

\textsuperscript{149} \textit{Hp.Aēr.12ff.}
Various aspects of *Airs, Waters, Places* bear similarities to Passage V. The Hippocratic treatise has, for instance, a certain leaning towards comparison, juxtaposed repetition, and other parallel structures, as in:

πολύ γάρ καλλίωνα καὶ μέζονα πάντα γίνεται ἐν τῇ Ἀσίᾳ ὤ τῇ χώρῃ τῆς χώρης ἡμερωτέρη καὶ τὰ ἱδεα τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἡπιῶτερα καὶ εὐρογητότερα.\(^{151}\)

As in Passage V, unit organisation is loose and predominantly paratactic, but nevertheless includes a variety of clauses, especially relative. A comparison of Asia to the spring-

εἰκός τε τῆς χώρης ταύτην τοῦ ἵππος ἐγγύτατα εἶναι κατὰ τὴν φύσιν καὶ τὴν μετριότητα τῶν ὥρεων.

- is interestingly similar to some of the analogies drawn in Passage V. The *Phaedo* passage draws an analogy between the relationship of, on the one hand, air and water and, on the other, aether and air. Although this reads like imagery, the boundaries are confused by the fact that air, aether, and water are themselves explicit subjects of discussion elsewhere in the passage. The analogy is preceded by another which compares the function of air and aether for those who live on the true earth with the function of water and air on our ‘earth’.\(^{152}\) Likewise, the *Airs, Waters, Places* comparison of a region to a season raises the question of whether to take it as imagery, with spring as the vehicle, when the seasons themselves constitute an explicit topic in the treatise.\(^{153}\)

---

\(^{150}\) Formal devices of comparison, however, do not feature widely in the Hippocratic work: significantly its description of Asia is simply followed by that of Europe, with no point by point contrast.


\(^{152}\) See ch. 4 p. 92, above.

\(^{153}\) See e.g. Hp. *Aēr*. 1. Moreover, one of the treatise’s key premises is that the nature of a people assimilates itself to the geography of its country, so that, against this background of correspondences between different natural phenomena, it is conceivable that there might also be actual correspondence between season and geography.
Finally, the emphasis on contrast in Passage V recalls a short Anaxagorean fragment, B4, which appears to discuss the existence of another parallel world. Although Anaxagoras, unlike Plato, is emphasising the absolute correspondence, both passages nevertheless list features of another earth, using phrases like ὁσπερ παρ’ ἡμῖν, in the former, and ὁσπερ ἡμεῖς and ὁσπερ οἱ ἐνθάδε, in the latter.

One feature that serves to distinguish our passage from other extant geographical descriptions is imagery, the clearest example being the painting simile at 110b8-c1/V.4-5. As stated above, the meaning of the vehicle term δείγματα here appears to be different from its usage elsewhere. Furthermore the simile is also extended by a relative clause, οἷς δὴ οἱ γραφῆς καταχρώνται. In all pre-Hellenistic literature there seem to be only three other images involving γραφῆς, two of them in the Republic, and the third and perhaps the closest in Empedocles. As in the Phaedo, the Republic examples are concerned with accuracy, although the accuracy at issue in the two Republic passages is poetic and epistemological respectively, whereas the Phaedo simile belongs to a discussion of geographical phenomena. It is, in this respect, much closer to the Empedoclean example, which compares the coming into being of all the earth’s creatures to the act of artistic creation and the mixing of colours:

 quis δ’ ὑπόταν γραφέες ἀναθήματα ποικιλώσων
 ἀνέρες ἁμφὶ τέχνης ὑπὸ μήτιος εὖ δεδαίῳ,
 οἷς ἐπεὶ οἷς μάρφωσι πολύχροα χάρμακα χεραίν,
 ἀρμούσῃ μείζοντε τὰ μὲν πλέω, ἄλλα δ’ ἐλάσσω,
 ἐκ τῶν εἴδεα πάσιν ἀλγία ποροῦσαι,
 δενδρεά τε κτίζοντε καὶ ἀνέρας ἡδὲ γυναίκας
 θήρας τ’ οἶνων τε καὶ ὑδατοπρέμμονας ἱχθὺς
c aic τε θεῶς δολιχαίων τιμῆς φερίστουσ’

---

154 See Ch.4 p.91, above.
155 Emp.B23.
156 Rep.377e and 484c.
It is therefore possible that the *Phaedo* simile involves a direct allusion to Empedocles.\(^{157}\) This may be of particular interest if, as Kingsley argues, the *Phaedo* ‘myth’ is in some way connected to Empedoclean ideas.\(^{158}\)

### 5.7 Passage VI: 117c3-118a17

Passage VI exhibits no outstanding uses of parallel structures, no particular patterns of unit organisation, and no imagery. Its vocabulary is differentiated from the other passages by containing no compound nouns or adjectives; a much greater number of compound verbs; and a marked lack of adjectives and adverbs. The structure of the passage is based on simple temporal sequentiality, so that it has a vivid, almost ‘stream of consciousness’ effect.

In very general terms, then, Passage VI appears to be most clearly affiliated to historiographical narratives and the most simple of the first person narratives in Lysianic oratory, with distinct likenesses, for example, to certain aspects of Euphiletus’ speech in *On the Murder of Eratosthenes*.\(^{159}\) Common to all these works is a narrative sequentiality, while they are also characterised by an absence of periodic unit organisation and a clear lack of all but temporal and spatial adjectives and adverbs.\(^{160}\)

The passage also has certain similarities to verse narratives, although these tend to be far more descriptive, with copious qualitative adjectives and adverbs as well as imagery. This is true both of epic narrative and of passages like messengers’ speeches in tragedy. So, for example, Homeric narratives have a simple temporal structure,\(^{161}\) but do contain numerous descriptive terms and similes.\(^{162}\)

---

\(^{157}\) This might be supported by a possible echo in Empedocles’ Ποικήλσιν in the *Phaedo*’s Ποικήλη (110b7/V.3).

\(^{158}\) Kingsley, 1995, 112ff.

\(^{159}\) Lys. 1.6-28. See e.g. Edwards, 1999, 7, on simple sentences in Lysianic narratives (and 58ff. on the possible relation between simplicity and the simple character of Euphiletus.

\(^{160}\) On the plain style of e.g. early historiographers, see D.H.Th. 5 and 23, although, as Lilja, 1968, 132 and passim, has shown, there is significant variance between such authors, and their style may have been more elaborate than generally assumed.

\(^{161}\) Cf. especially those Homeric narratives of the the greatest intensity, e.g. *II*. 24.468-479.
narrative sometimes shows slight similarities to the Plato passage, with temporal sequentiaity and a lack of the complex subordinate clauses associated, for example, with Sophoclean narrative. Yet, Euripides still has a greater diversity of word order and supplements the action with far more descriptive terms and imagery.

Returning to prose narratives, we may note, in Passage VI, its marked absence of genitive absolutes. It shares this feature with the `vivid' parataxis found in early historical narratives. In later historiography, especially Thucydides, narrative passages abound in genitive absolutes and other participial clauses, which often convey elements of the main action. Herodotus and Xenophon use these constructions similarly, albeit to a slightly lesser extent. Like Passage VI, Lysias' simpler narratives, such as Euphiletus' narrative, also contain few genitive absolutes and, when these do occur, they usually only give general surrounding circumstances for the main stages of events.

Passage VI's most repetitive structural feature is clauses beginning with a finite verb preceded by a nominative participle. This pattern is common in prose narratives, and, when repeated, seems characteristic of earlier writing, like vivid narratives in

---

162 E.g. in the narrative at Il.15.358-9ff., the length of the pathway cleared by Apollo is said to be δονον τι έπι δουρος ευρη/ γιγνεται, ὡποτ' ανηρ σηνενο πειρωνενο της. Cf. Il.17.262-5 and 281-3.
163 Cf. Barlow, 1971, 73 on the 'leaness and economy of Euripides' narrative'.
164 Cf. Barlow, 1971, 61
165 See e.g. E.El.74 and Iph.T. 260. Cf. S.Tr899 and OT 1237ff.
166 E.g. E.Bacch.1066-7 and Hipp.1198. See Barlow, 1971, on the 'descriptive imagery' and other 'devices' in Euripidean messenger speeches.
167 Russell, 1991, 74 n.24 and 114. Cf. Lilja, 1968, whose findings suggest that the lack of genitive absolutes is characteristic of the earliest narrative prose, with none in Hecateus or Charon (76, 85), and only an occasional 'temporal' genitive absolute in the other early historiographers (82, 88).
168 E.g. Th. 2.67.4: αφικομενων δε αυτων δεςαντες οι Αθηναιοι των' Αριστεα μη αδης σφας ει πλεω κακουρη διαφυγων, δι γαρ προ των τα της Ποτειδαιας και των επι θρασης παντα έφαινετο πραξας, ακριτως και βουλμενως έστων α ειπεν αθημερνον απεκτειναν παντας και ες φαραγγα έσβαλοι, δικαιονετες των αυτως αμφος οικονεμονε τοιεν και οι λακαδαιμονιοι υπηρξαν, τους εμπορους οδο ελαβον' Αθηναιων και τοις ευμμαχων έν δικαια περι πελοπόννησον πλεοντας αποκειναντες και ες φαραγγας έσβαλοντες. Cf. e.g. Hdt.1.82 and X.HG 2.2.9-10.
169 E.g. Lys.1.15: μετα δε τατα, ο άνδρες, χρονου μεταξυ διαγευομενου και εμοι πολυ απολελειμμενου των εμαυτου κακων. Cf. also e.g Lys.3.5-14, in which there is only one, circumstantial, genitive absolute (at 6: ένον ουσω της τε αδελφης της έμης και των αδελφων); and the account of the actions of Andocides in 6.21-30. The same is even true of the more "sophisticated" narrative in Lys.12.4-22.
Herodotus and the early historians. Once again, it also appears in the ‘simple’ narrative of such orators as Lysias.  

Other narrative features here appear to have similar affinities. For example, there are the formal aspects of the introduction of direct speech into the main account. While direct speech is common within most types of narrative, there is great variation in the formal markers used to distinguish it from the main narrative. In Passage VI both sequences of direct speech are indicated by what Bers calls ‘interrupting quotatives’, a word or phrase indicating direct quotation: for example έκείνος δέ, οία, έφη, ποιεῖτε ὁ θαυμάσιοι...(117d7/VI.14). Although ‘needless iteration of quotatives is a familiar feature of naïve narration’, it seems that interrupting quotatives like those used here are a later innovation, found in narrative passages of Andocides, Lysias, Isaeus, and Aeschines. In earlier oratory, such as Antiphon, direct speech itself is avoided. While Xenophon features a mixture of quotatives which interrupt and which precede direct speech, neither Herodotus nor Thucydides use the former, and both keep to introductory phrases such as Herodotus’ δ καὶ εἶπε or Thucydides’ λέγων διδ. As support for the view that interrupting quotatives are associated with ‘plainer’ or more colloquial style, we might note that they are used in comic verse, with occasional examples in Aristophanes and a large number in Menander.

---

170 E.g. Hdt. 1.115: ἀκούσας δὲ καὶ ἵσων Ἀστιάγχης, θέλων τιμωρήσαι τῷ παιδὶ τιμῆς τῆς Ἀρτεμιδόρου εἶνεκα, μετεπέμπετο τὸν τε βουκόλων καὶ τὸν παιδα. ἐπείτε δὲ παρῆσαν ἄμφοτεροι. βλέψας πρὸς τὸν Κήρου δ’ Ἀστιάγχης ἔφη.... Cf. e.g. 3.89 A number of such constructions are to be found in the lists of participial constructions in e.g. Pherecydes and Hellanicus, given by Li1ja, 1968, 82 and 88. For oratory cf. e.g. Lys.6.27: ἀποδρᾶς δὲ ἐκ τούτου τοῦ κινδύνου κατέπλυσεν εἷς τὴν ἑαυτοῦ πόλιν ἐπὶ τῶν πετακοσίων <τοσαύτην γὰρ ὅ> θεδ όλην ἐδωκεν, ὅτε εἰς τοὺς ἡλικιωμένους αὐτοὺς ἔπεθισεν ἀφικέσθαι. ἀφικόμενος δὲ ἐξῆθε δὲ καὶ ἠκουσά, ἀπολεῖτο δὲ οὐχὶ, ἀλλ’ ἐλύθη, καὶ ἀδίκησα εἰρχή, ἀποδρᾶς δὲ.... 1.18; And.Mysteries 38. 

171 Direct speech is found within narratives in most genres. Bers, 1997, proposes that: the language used by Homer in direct speech is different from his other language (10); that in both epic and lyric, poets alert audiences to the boundaries between third person narrative and direct speech (15); and that in non-comic verse there is always an explicit verbal introduction (116).

172 Bers, 1997, 193. There is also an example of direct speech without introduction in Hecat.fr.30 See also e.g. Russell, 1991, 4, and Li1ja, 1968, 70 and 100, n.15.


175 It seems that Xenophon uses these with shorter (e.g. 1.7.6; 5.4.32; 6.1.11) and longer (e.g. 1.7.16ff.) passages of direct speech respectively.

176 E.g. Ar.Paz.76-7 (see Bers, 1997, 116) and Menand.Samia242.

---

Chapter 5
Another feature of Passage VI associated with oratorical and also historical narratives is explanatory parenthesis. These occur a number of times in this passage, ranging from those like ὅστε ἐγκαλυψάμενος ἀπέκλαον ἐμαυτόν - οὐ γὰρ δὴ ἐκείνων γε...(117c8/VI.6ff.), where the parenthesis is inserted at the end of a phrase and a pause seems fairly natural, to καὶ ἐκκαλυψάμενος - ἐνεκεκάλυπτο γὰρ - ἐπεν - ὃ δὴ τελυταῖον εὐθέγεξατο - ὃ Κρίτων, ἕφη... (118a6/VI.29ff.), in which the inserted clause divides two closely cohering elements, and is then immediately followed by another parenthetical phrase. The majority of writers tend towards the first type of parenthesis, using it at fairly natural unit divisions and, although it is difficult to establish absolute patterns, the more usual type of parenthesis appears to be found, for example, between the two parts of a μὲν/δὲ sequence. More drastic divisions, like Xenophon's οἱ μὲν ἄλλοι κρῆτες, ἀλάσκεσθαι γὰρ ἔφασαν τῷ δρόμῳ, ἐκπεσοντες..., are less common and usually occur as a feature of 'vivid' narration within the 'plainer' styles of narrative in writers such as Lysias, Xenophon, the early historians, and Andocides.

Finally, a few elements of this passage could perhaps be seen as reminiscent of Homer or tragedy. δακρύειν and its cognates (117c6/VI.6 c8/8; d4/13; e4/21), the only noticeable example of key-word repetition here, is, as might be expected, a term much repeated in (though not confined to) such works. More specifically, however, Phaedo’s final description of Socrates, ἀνδρός...τῶν τότε ὃν ἐπειράθημεν ἄριστον καὶ ἄλλως φρονιμωτάτον καὶ δικαίωτάτον (118a16-7/VI.39-41), evokes an Iliadic or tragic topos of posthumous praise and bears certain similarities to phrases similar to the Iliad’s πέφατας τ' ἀριστος 'Αχαιῶν, like the Trachiniae’s description of Heracles just after his death: πάντων ἄριστον ἀνδρα τῶν ἐπὶ χθονὶ..., δοξοῖς ἄλλοι οἶκ διψηπτοῦ. 

---

177 E.g. D.Ol.2.18. See McQueen, 1986, 42, on this and similar examples. Cf. Aeschin.3.172; X.An. 5.2; Lys.1.19; Pl.Rep.615a; AntiphoHerodes21. 
178 X.An. 5.2.31. 
179 See e.g. Lys.3.10; 12.15; And.1.111; Aeschin.3.148. On the informality of the narrative in And. Mysteries see Usher, 1999, 48 and 56ff. on the simplicity of the narrative in e.g. Lys.1. 
180 E.g. H.II.6.455, 459, 484, 496; E.El.181: δάκρυς νυχεών, δακρύων δὲ μοι μέλει. Cf. e.g. S.Tr.848-52. 
181 Hom.II.17.689. Cf. e.g. Nagy, 1979, 26-33. 
182 S.Tr.811-2. Cf. e.g. E.Helen1686-7.
Notwithstanding these few points, it seems that the style of passage VI is most similar to the plain narratives found in historiographical and rhetorical prose, with perhaps the closest parallel being the first-person narratives of Lysias.

5.8 Summary

From the analysis of these short passages alone, it is clear that Plato’s reputation as an extraordinary stylistic innovator is well deserved. Not only does he create unusual combinations of elements taken from a full range of genres, so as to create unusual elements within his discourse, but he also innovates beyond these in apparently unprecedented ways, producing various stylistic effects which seem unique to Platonic discourse.

The stylistic analysis in the previous chapter not only revealed enormous variety, but indicated that every passage had its own distinctive stylistic character. Correspondingly, in terms of generic affiliation, prominent stylistic features are taken from a very wide variety of generic backgrounds, while individual passages each have entirely different generic characters.

As a whole, Platonic style appears to represent a diverse fusion of all Greek genres.\textsuperscript{183} While some sections, such as Passage III, are tied to one particular genre, most actually combine different generic features to produce distinctive stylistic structures. One might say their typological distinctiveness (apparent from the analysis in Chapter 4) is enhanced by the diversity of their generic affinities, as well as the uniqueness of some items.

For example, Passage II combines: loose hypotaxis, for which hymnic invocations provide something of a model; ring composition, a phenomenon most closely associated with early verse and prose; and a large number of instances of hyperbaton, which is most commonly found in classical verse and oratory, although the Platonic examples are distinctive, both individually and for appearing in clusters.

Furthermore, the main section is interrupted by a sequence whose units share none of these stylistic features, but have an entirely different stylistic character of their own, with separate generic affiliations. On this evidence, Plato's style appears to involve a mixture of generic affiliation and innovation, which uses and combines generic features in unusual ways and adds stylistic elements with no clear generic background. The latter is most obvious in Passage IV, which lacks stylistic models on all levels, from the parallelism and ellipse of the unit organisation, to the number of distinctive α-privative terms.

By contrast, the stylistic affiliations of Passage III are so clear and specific that it is clearly allusive. The text alludes both to Anaxagoras and, more widely, to Presocratic prose. This is apparent on all levels of textual organisation, from the structure of units to the prevalence of lexemes with a particular noun-form.

All six passages can be broadly categorised in terms of affiliation and innovation. While III is the most allusive, V and VI also have fairly clear generic models, evident on all levels of stylistic structure, from the selection of individual lexemes to the types of unit organisation. At the other end of the spectrum comes IV, differentiated from the other passages by its lack of generic affiliations. The remaining two passages fall somewhere in between these two groups. Passage I is perhaps closer to the first group, innovating within a framework of clear generic models, while Passage II, with its unusual and distinctively Platonic unit organisation, tends slightly more towards Passage IV.

5.8.1 Selection of passages for case studies

The passages selected for the case studies in the chapters that follow include one from each of these three groups. III, the most allusive of the passages, exemplifies a stylistic mode with clear generic affiliations; IV is representative of a distinctive style lacking obvious models; while I lies midway between these types. In the case studies I will put these passages back into their wider contexts to explain the significance of their stylistic character, as it has emerged from the last two chapters.
I have also selected these three partly because they can be taken to represent different questions and attitudes within scholarship on the *Phaedo*. Passage IV comes from what is known as the 'final argument'. Of all parts of the *Phaedo* this is the section which has received probably the most critical attention, especially within those readings characteristic of the twentieth-century 'analytical' approach. By contrast, Passage I, the 'peroration' of Socrates' 'apology' has had little comment, and is not, as a rule, incorporated in any substantial way into modern philosophical discussions. Finally, there is Passage III, the part of Socrates' 'intellectual autobiography', in which he describes his reactions to reading Anaxagoras. The standard interpretation of this passage reduces it to a single point, while critics have puzzled over how its demands for a teleological account of causation can be reconciled with the rest of the dialogue. This is a passage whose significance is sometimes recognised, but never fully explored.

Thus, in terms of their style, their generic affiliation, and their critical reception, these three passages provide a varied and representative basis on which to examine how style contributes to argument and can affect our interpretation of the dialogue.
Part II: Case Studies
Chapter 6

Stylistic transition: from Socrates 'apology' to the 'argument from opposites'

Stylistic analysis, according to my definition of style in Chapter 2, has revealed the 'semantic structure of the microcontextual formal features of the text'. We can now consider its role within the argument and how it affects philosophical interpretation. This chapter is the first of three case studies exploring such questions by examining the function of distinctive stylistic traits in argumentation. Each study focuses on one of the earlier six passages, broadening the discussion to incorporate aspects of its wider context.

6.1 Introduction

I concentrate here on the end of Socrates' 'apology' (my earlier Passage I, 69a6-e4), whose style, like the 'apology' in general, makes it by modern standards an unlikely vehicle for philosophical analysis. Thus, despite the current consensus that all the dialogue's parts are philosophically relevant, it is still difficult to develop an interpretation of any complexity or substance. There is very little detailed critical literature on the 'apology', the main exception being the imagery in 69a6-c3, discussed by several commentators. Nevertheless, they still fail to follow through the full implications of its stylistic structure, as I will show below.

Best described as 'expanded explanation', style in the 'apology' mixes clear generic affiliations with innovation. By explaining how its elements move towards a number of reasoned conclusions I aim to demonstrate that it is an argument, albeit one whose style differs substantially from conventional philosophical modes. I will discuss the 'peroration' (Passage I) together with some other parts of the stylistically similar 'apology', looking at key stylistic features and their generic affiliations.

---

1 Socrates' 'apology' refers to *Phd.63c8-69e4*. Cf. Hackforth, 1955, 57, on this section as Socrates' "defence", his second *Apology*. 

*Chapter 6* 138
I shall consider the 'apology' both by itself and in relation to the subsequent 'argument from opposites' (70c4-72e2). The transition between them constitutes one of the most dramatic stylistic changes within the Phaedo and draws attention to their contrasting features. In Chapters 4 and 5 we saw that the stylistic distinctiveness of individual sections is a prominent characteristic of the Phaedo. These two juxtaposed and very different passages provide an interesting forum for investigating key aspects and possible motivations for this distinctiveness.

Not only is style in the 'argument from opposites' radically different from the 'apology' but, unlike the much neglected 'apology', it has been the focus of much critical discussion.² By contrast to the 'apology', its style, as with the other three 'main arguments', can be assimilated to some degree to modern models of 'philosophical argument',³ laying out premises and conclusions fairly clearly and unambiguously, and therefore lending themselves easily to philosophical interpretation and critique.

This transition between sections is therefore also a good focal point for comparison of, in modern terms, (ostensibly) 'non-philosophical' and 'philosophical' styles and for discussion of what constitutes 'philosophical style' within a Platonic context, with reference to its difference from, or correspondence with, modern paradigms. To answer these questions I will conclude by examining: whether the differing stylistic constructions affect the role of argument in either of these sections; their relationship with each other and other parts of the dialogue; and finally, whether distinctions between them might signify some difference in evaluative status.

6.1.1 From Socrates' 'apology' to the 'argument from opposites': a moment of transition.

The move from Socrates' 'apology' to the 'argument from opposites' marks a fundamental shift between stages of the dialogue, which is accompanied by a striking stylistic transition. There is a dramatic change from the 'peroration', a long speech

² Cf. Introduction, p.15, above.
³ With the possible exception of the 'affinity argument'.

Chapter 6 139
speech with many traits of elevated rhetorical discourse and verse, to short repetitively structured questions and answers in the "argument from opposites". My aim is not a comprehensive analysis of either of these sections, but rather to point out and classify their most prominent features, examining their contribution to the formation of argument.

*Structure and value: some key differences*

The "argument from opposites" exhibits clear logical sequentiality in moving between individual units and sections and this is reinforced by large numbers of inferential particles. It is divided into distinct steps by its short question and answer format and the main sections comprise individual units with highly repetitive organisation and vocabulary, all of which helps to establish firmly the processes being described and makes it relatively easy to distinguish and paraphrase the argument's main stages. I will refer to these predominant structural features as 'verbal minimalism', borrowing 'minimalism' from a musical context. This terms applies to pieces developing through repeated structural elements and very slight variation, so that structure is foregrounded and changes within individual stages are minimal.4

By contrast, the 'apology' mainly contains long speeches which, though connected, do not have similar logical sequentiality to the 'argument from opposites'. In Chapter 4, I explained how most of the 'peroration' (69a-e5) can be seen as 'expanded explanation' through: predominant parataxis with much apposition; prevalent copulative and adversative particles, combined with a general absence of inferential and confirmatory ones; repetitively structured lists with polysyndeton; extended imagery; many pleonastic pairs; and distinct lexemic as opposed to structural repetition. Although most pronounced in the 'peroration', many of these

---

4 Schwartz, 1996, 9: 'Minimalist music is based on the notion of reduction, the paring down to a minimum of the materials that a composer will use in a given work. In the classic minimalist compositions of the 1960s, practically every musical element - harmony, rhythm, dynamics, instrumentation - remains fixed for the duration of the work, or changes very slowly. And the chief structural technique is unceasing repetition'. Cf. 11, on Reich: 'Reich emphasized that the structure of the music...must be audible to the listener'. 'Minimalism' may be a useful term here. However, it is important not to push the musical analogy too far, since the structure of the argument here is directed at establishing certain principles and conclusions. By contrast, in music the 'structure', to a great extent, simply is the music (see Schwartz, 1996, 9).
features also occur elsewhere within the ‘apology’. So, for example, we find polysyndetic lists and pleonasm at 66c2-3 and 66c5-6. Moreover, the long speeches throughout have an absence of inferential particles like oūv and ἀρα.\(^5\)

Traditional methods of philosophical analysis make it difficult to establish any stages of ‘argument’ here, beyond paraphrasing its main claims. Yet even if most of the passage does not lay out clear patterns of inference, we can still isolate connections between particular individual words, phrases, or structures which, both individually and cumulatively, come together to form an argument. This proceeds by exploiting a variety of verbal associations, which extend both backwards and forwards on all levels of the text and can be called, collectively, a ‘nexus of associations’. The phrases ‘nexus of associations’ and ‘verbal minimalism’ encapsulate some predominant stylistic tendencies, but are not comprehensive characterisations. Their meanings and appropriateness will become more apparent through detailed analysis of the distinct parts and features of the two sections.

The passages also differ greatly in respect of evaluative language. Whereas the ‘apology’ is very rich in such language and uses it to forge links between the evaluative status of its components, the terminology of the ‘argument from opposites’ is, by contrast, almost exclusively neutral, with explicit normativity only in occasional evaluations of the argument, like Cebes’ μοι δοκεῖς παντάπασιν ἀληθῆ λέγειν (72d4-5).

6.2 The end of Socrates’ ‘apology’ (66b1-69e5): argument and value through a ‘nexus of associations’.

In the ‘apology’ Socrates offers a defence of the philosopher’s willingness to die and confidence that a philosophical life will lead to the greatest goods in the afterlife (e.g. 63e8-64b9), claiming that death and the philosophical life which aspires to be like death will bring the individual closest to truth. He justifies his views by arguing that

\(^5\) They are, however, found within the occasional shorter speeches, such as 67b7-c3 or 68b8-c3. Moreover, they are very common in 68c5-69a5 which, I argue below, p.168, is a stylistic anomaly within this section. On the general uses of ἀρα and oūv in argument, see Sicking and Ophuijsen, 1993, 102ff. and 96ff.
the philosophical life itself attains value through emulation of death, while also leading to better conditions after death itself.

Accordingly, his explanation of what constitutes the philosophical life is inextricably intertwined with a demonstration of its value. Yet this involves a radical redefinition of the very way in which value itself is conceived and he must distinguish this carefully from its conventional conception. Throughout the 'apology' he achieves this by using conventional techniques which invest phenomena with value, while often undercutting their very basis. In doing so he constructs a value system and simultaneously depicts the faults of the alternative system, despite relying heavily on its language. The following sections concern the main techniques used in the arguments for, and explanation of, a φρόνησις-based morality.

6.2.1 The value of φρόνησις and a φρόνησις-based system

The 'apology' culminates in the description of φρόνησις, claiming its central importance for the philosophical life with striking metaphor, simile, aural imagery, and other devices, the cumulation of which all seem to suggest its extraordinary value. In this way it addresses the speech's initial aims, to justify both the philosopher's confidence when dying and hope of attaining the greatest benefits after death: μέγιστα οίσεσθαι ἄγαθα ἐπειδὰν τελευτήσῃ (64a1-2). For in the 'apology' Socrates presents φρόνησις as the philosopher's aim in life which he acquires fully after death, while the 'peroration' itself stresses its value.

To support such claims Socrates must establish the value of φρόνησις. Yet, what reasons are given for its value? It is not enough simply to agree that philosophers strive towards this. For this shows that philosophers value φρόνησις, but not why. According to traditional readings, which appeal to the conventional 'Socratic' wisdom/virtue connection, φρόνησις' normativity appears to derive from its relation to virtue. What I intend to show is that, rather than simply stating the value of φρόνησις, either in itself or through its connection with virtue, the 'apology' actually

---

6 E.g. 66e2ff. and passim.
uses the ‘nexus of associations’ which constitutes its stylistic structure to provide a number of reasons for the intrinsic value of φρόνησις.  

Unraveling these associations is by no means simple, given a number of clear difficulties. Yet both their problematic and straightforward implications lead to further understanding of the character of φρόνησις, as well as of the reasons for its normativity and for rejecting the alternative value system. In this way, a full interpretation depends on uncovering the steps of what can be seen as argument, despite its unconventional appearance.

6.2.2 Value through direct association

One way in which Socrates explains and argues for φρόνησις’ value is by using style to suggest a number of characteristics which, taken together, seem to imply its normativity, so that value derives straightforwardly from different stylistic features. For example, φρόνησις is called μόνον τὸ νόμισμα ὀρθόν (69a9-10). First and foremost an immediate sense of value comes from the idea of financial wealth implicit in this metaphor’s vehicle, coinage. This positive evaluation of φρόνησις accords with its earlier depiction in the ‘apology’ and is furthered here by other stylistic features which suggest points which could be taken as reasons for normativity.

Briefly to recapitulate and add to my earlier analyses, the initial antithesis of the image, comparing the false exchange of pleasures to the ‘true coin’, φρόνησις, marks the contrast between them, and this is further highlighted by the two corresponding and striking phrases of vocalic repetition: (οὐχ) αὕτη ἢ ὁρθὴ πρὸς ἀρετῆν ἀλλαγή (69a6-7) and ἐκεῖνο μόνον τὸ νόμισμα ὀρθὸν (69a9-10). In addition φρόνησις is twice foregrounded through word order, standing alone in a clause surrounded by longer clauses. This reinforces its unique importance, heightened in the first instance by its final positioning in the unit (69a10), and in the second perhaps even more so by the surrounding lists (69b3), lengthy and repetitive with

---

7 See section 6.2.4, below.
8 Cf. Louis, 1945, 27; Bluck, 1952, 5.
homoeoteleuton and polysyndeton. In particular the mundane homoeoteleuton and aural regularity of ἀπογιγνωμένων καὶ ἡδονῶν καὶ φόβων καὶ τῶν ἄλλων πάντων τῶν τοιούτων (69b4-5) reflect the comparatively meaningless flux of emotions, and are in stark contrast to the preceding short isolated clause, μετὰ φρονήσεως. Moreover, a precedent has already been set by a very similar occurrence of φρόνησις, a couple of pages earlier:

...καὶ τότε, ὡς έοικεν, ἡμῖν ἔσται οὐ ἐπιθυμημέν τε καὶ φαμεν ἐρασταλ εἶναι, φρονήσεως, ἐπειδὰν τελευτήσωμεν, ὡς ὁ λόγος σημαίνει, ζῆσιν δὲ οὐ (66ε1ff.).

There is also the repetition of πᾶς (69a10; b1; b5), which helps to clarify the idea every type of ‘transaction’ within our lives, concerning all emotions, must be governed by φρόνησις. Finally, and more generally, the very introduction of these distinctive stylistic features, especially such strikingly complex and elaborate imagery, might itself be thought to draw the passage into prominence.9

Thus the stylistic depiction of φρόνησις seems to suggest certain key characteristics. These are: its uniqueness, deriving from μόνον, its solitary positioning, and also the switch from νομίσματα to νόμισμα; its separateness or distinctness from the emotions, through word order and overall prominence; its continuity by contrast with the flux of emotions (καὶ προσγιγνωμένων καὶ ἀπογιγνωμένων); its comprehensiveness, from the repeated πᾶς along with the dominance of φρόνησις over the whole passage; and finally, its relation to truth, through the antithetical repetition of ὀρθὸς, first negated and then, in conjunction with φρόνησις, positive. These characteristics can all be normative but, with the possible exception of ὀρθὸς, are not so per se. However, when attributed to φρόνησις within a passage claiming its value, their cumulation can be seen to appeal to their positive sense and give reasons for its value.

In addition, the metaphor’s extension gives further explanation of the normative characteristics of φρόνησις through direct tenor/vehicle correspondences. For all

---

9 Cf. e.g. Edwards, 1991, 39, on the function of similes.
things can be bought with φρόνησις and, given that a coin’s importance lies in its buying power,\textsuperscript{10} nothing could be more valuable than a coin for which such power is comprehensive.

Conversely, repetition and aural imagery also highlight and expand upon the negative features of the competing and false common conception of ἀρετή which Socrates has already attacked. Here he describes this ‘pseudo-virtue’ as ἡδονάς πρὸς ἡδονάς καὶ λύπας πρὸς λύπας καὶ φόβον πρὸς φόβον καταλλάττεσθαι μεῖζω πρὸς ἐλάττω ὀσπέρ νομίσματα (69a7-8). Previously he criticised its spuriousness because it relies on opposites causing opposites: τῷ δεδιέναι ἄρα καὶ δέει ἀνδρεῖον εἰσι...(68d11).\textsuperscript{11} In these instances, however, repetition and symmetry suggest processes whose outcomes are not significantly different from their starting point. So stylistic structure provides a new reason for negative evaluation, by implying the futility and worthlessness of the result.

This ‘pseudo-virtue’ is said to be an exchange ὀσπέρ νομίσματα. In this simile, contrary to the associations of coinage and φρόνησις in the subsequent metaphor, the vehicle, ‘coins’, seems to imply notions of falsehood and worthlessness, perhaps appealing to a conception of coins as exchanged back and forth without achieving anything, with no real value in themselves. This impression is enhanced by the final μεῖζω πρὸς ἐλάττω ὀσπέρ νομίσματα. For the usual point of exchange involving coins is that items can be exchanged for other items of equivalent value, not greater for lesser or vice versa. This incongruity might suggest that although, according to common perception, the exchange of e.g. fears swaps greater for lesser, such fears are so intrinsically valueless that exchange actually results in no substantial alteration,\textsuperscript{12} an idea supported by the inclusion of coins and the striking repetition.

\textsuperscript{10} Greek coinage had some intrinsic value, but much less than its value as currency. See Weiss, 1987, 66, n.33.

\textsuperscript{11} On Pollio’s understanding of ἀνδρεῖα and σωφροσύνη are described as ἄτοπος (68d3), ἀλογοῦ (68d12), and ἀδίκους (68e3).

\textsuperscript{12} Cf. Weiss, 1987, 58: ‘pleasures, pains, and fears have no genuine value, thus no sum of them can possibly amount to areté’.
6.2.3 The exploitation of multivalent associations and tenor/vehicle discrepancies

In the previous examples value derives straightforwardly from the style: foregrounding suggests uniqueness, coins evoke worth, symmetry implies lack of true productivity, and so on; providing reasons for a φρόνησις-based system. Yet both here and in other parts of the passage, there are several features whose significance can only be fully understood through recognizing their multiple and often conflicting layers of associations.

The clearest example is, once again, the coin imagery. This exploits both the direct positive and negative associations of coinage, first invoking the futility and worthlessness of νόμισματα, and then the value of νόμισμα. Evidently coins are not seen as unequivocally valuable and Plato’s choice of coinage as vehicle for suggesting φρόνησις’ value therefore seems surprising. Moreover, whereas the implications of the coinage terminology in each part of the antithesis are fairly straightforward individually, its double use seems strange, because it establishes one thing’s value with the very same term which just conveyed the worthlessness of others.

Such strangeness does not end with the clash between these direct tenor/vehicle correspondences, but is picked up and intensified in a number of tenor/vehicle discrepancies. Some of the most marked discrepancies remain unnoticed in the secondary literature and even those which have been spotted are usually seen as problems to be eradicated, rather than as containing a viewpoint to be incorporated into Socrates’ account. Accordingly, critics try to explain them away or dismiss them as immaterial or even muddled. For example, commenting on difficulties resulting from the vehicle, coinage, being both differentiated from (69a6-9) and likened to φρόνησις (69a9-10), Annas calls the passage ‘tangled’ and says:

*Phaedo* 69A-D. The passage has caused much trouble, partly because of the fact that coinage serves, *rather ineptly* [emphasis mine], as the metaphor both for the inferior attitude (weighing up pleasures and pains) and for the better attitude (turning to wisdom and ignoring the relevance of pleasures and pains).\(^\text{13}\)

---

\(^{13}\) Annas, 1999, 61 n.26.
If, however, we look closely at these inconsistencies, beyond any initial appearance of confusion, they actually appear to present further arguments for conclusions about the nature of the φρόνησις-based and opposing systems. Surely then it is far more likely that such clear and deliberate discrepancies have some significance, rather than merely being the result of carelessness or confusion.

At 69a9 νομίσματα represent the false exchange of emotions and sensations. In the very next line νόμισμα is φρόνησις itself, the aim and means of the true exchange for virtue. As we have seen above, the latter stresses the value of φρόνησις and the former the worthlessness of an opposing value-system.

Admittedly, the description of false exchange as ὀσπερ νομίσματα involves a short and simple simile, overshadowed by the subsequent extended metaphor, so that the latter might seem to override the earlier negative sense and detract from its possible significance. Yet, even if this were the case, there is still an earlier passage which heightens the idea of coinage as a false and worthless conception of virtue and strengthens the case for seeing the incongruities as deliberate and significant, rather than muddled or immaterial. In a connection unnoticed by commentators, only a few pages prior to this section the need for money or material possessions in order to satisfy bodily desires is depicted as the cause of numerous evils and, especially, as an impediment to the acquisition of φρόνησις itself (Phd. 66c6ff.). Thus the initial νομίσματα in the ‘peroration’ accords with the pejorative status of wealth in the earlier passage, while μόνον τὸ νόμισμα ὁρθὸν which then depicts φρόνησις as the genuine principle and goal of all actions seems even stranger, given that up to this point money is clearly viewed as having a negative status and deleterious effect on philosophy. 14

So although φρόνησις certainly seems to retain the positive value gained from the coin imagery, coinage’s negative dimension is also evident here. Moreover, these conflicting valuations of νομίσματα, arising from its consecutive oppositional uses, are then joined by further tenor/vehicle discrepancies. At the same time as financial

14 Moreover, as I have suggested in Chapter 5, a formal change from simile to metaphor, as occurs within the antithesis, is often associated with ironic implications.
exchange terminology stresses φρόνησις' value, Plato fills the passage with incongruities, revealing their differences and drawing attention to the unsuitability of transaction as a model for φρόνησις.

In financial exchange coins are exchanged for other coins or item/s of equivalent value. On this understanding we have already seen how likening the exchange of supposedly lesser for greater pleasures etc. to coins (μεικονίτω μέλλων ἡλάττων ὁπέρ γομίζωματα) suggests that such pleasures are actually of equal worth(lessness), as is consistent with the repetition of, for example, ἴδονάς πρός ἴδονάς.

This idea of equivalent exchange is in every way inconsistent with φρόνησις here, as indicated by various tenor/vehicle incompatibilities. First, there is the singularity of φρόνησις, highlighted by the shift from plural, νομίζωματα, to the φρόνησις metaphor's singular τὸ νόμισμα. True virtue is then said to be attained when φρόνησις is that 'for which and with which all things are bought and sold'.

tοῦτοι (69b1), like ἄκτι σοὶ δὲ πάντα ταύτα καταλλάσσεσθαι (69a10), implies that φρόνησις is not yet present, but must be aimed for in true virtue; while μετὰ τοῦτοι (69b1) suggests that it must already be present. Moreover, with φρόνησις as the only true coin, how can transaction exist at all? So if we resist the attempt to iron out these difficulties, we can see how these inconsistencies imply that φρόνησις defies the notion of coinage and is incompatible with the principles of currency.

With φρόνησις as an overwhelmingly valuable and powerful single coin, underpinning all transactions, the exchange of pleasures etc. associated with the ordinary conception of value evidently cannot have any genuine worth. Furthermore, with the discrepancies within the exchange imagery Plato argues that the value of φρόνησις does not derive from what it is used to attain, but is intrinsic. Clearly, φρόνησις is not valuable because it can attain pleasures, pains, or fears, since their presence or absence makes no difference (69b4-5). Moreover, any consequentialist connotations

---

16 For this translation cf. e.g. Hackforth, 1955, 55: 'if all our buying and selling is done for intelligence and with its aid'.
17 Cf. Gallop, 1975, 102: 'In treating wisdom as the only 'right coin' (a9-10), Plato assigns to it an intrinsic worth that he denies to pleasure', although Gallop's overall interpretation of this passage differs from my own.
in ὠνομαζόμενα τε καὶ πιστικόμενα are undercut by the fact that φρόνησις is not just the means, but the result, implying that φρόνησις' value cannot be seen simply to lie in its product. In these ways Plato can be seen to argue through the stylistic structure against conventional consequentialist ethics, and therefore, for an anti-consequentialist model of φρόνησις.  

To reinforce the norms of his own radical vision Plato appeals to the value system he himself dismisses. Invoking the conventional worth of coinage, the imagery ascribes value to φρόνησις with the language of a morality simultaneously undercut and discredited by recalling the earlier explicit rejection of wealth-orientated system. Yet it is also discrepancies between vehicle, financial exchange, and tenor, φρόνησις, revealed by the stylistic structure, which provide reasons for a φρόνησις-based system to supplant one which holds coinage valuable. Points like the double use of νομίσμα and the switch from plural to singular indicate that φρόνησις' value is intrinsic, unlike that of coinage or pleasures etc. Thus the tenor appropriates the vehicle's value, but also exploits its contrary associations to provide reasons for its own value and for the rejection of the vehicle model.

Finally, there is the relationship of φρόνησις to virtue, the question which dominates the secondary literature. Here, in his 'apology', Socrates is trying to justify the philosopher's 'love', 'desire', and confidence in φρόνησις. Accordingly, it might seem strange if his justification lay not in the value of acquiring φρόνησις itself, but indirectly, in its leading to something else, virtue. If, instead of thinking in terms of the wider Platonic/Socratic debate and assuming virtue's key importance, one concentrates more on the immediate context, one may well arrive at a surprising and somewhat unconventional reading of this section.

---

18 A number of passages in Plato suggest the idea of a consequentialist ethics, in which a thing's goodness is assessed in terms of the state of affairs it brings about, rather than intrinsically. Most notable is the Protagoras' idea of knowledge as a 'measuring art' (Prot. 351bff.), according to which there is nothing stronger than knowledge, since this leads men to make the correct choice about pleasure and pain. The Phaedo's rejection of exchanging pleasures for pleasures etc. seems clearly to recall parts of the Protagoras, such as lines which actually advocate this type of exchange: ἐὰν μὲν γὰρ ἤδη πρὸς ἢδος ἔστω, τὰ μεῖζον ἔσται καὶ πλείον ληπτέα: ἐὰν δὲ λυπήρα πρὸς λυπηρά, τὰ ἐλάττω καὶ συμφόρητα (Prot. 356b). Because of the Phaedo's anti-consequentialism, this passage can be seen not only to attack the value accorded to pleasure in the Protagoras, but also the very structure of the 'measuring art' itself. Cf. McCabe, forthcoming, on the way in which Euthyd. 281b-e makes us question the idea of consequentialism in Meno 87e6-88d3.
Socrates' idea of φρόνησις dominates the 'apology'. The virtues, by contrast, appear to slip in almost incidentally towards the end, when Socrates claims that the common conception of, for example, bravery, is most fitted to philosophers, who genuinely lack the fear of death.19 Others, by contrast, only face their fears to escape greater ones (68c5-13). Given the prominence of φρόνησις compared to virtue it seems unlikely that the conclusion would give the latter priority over the former. Furthermore, the 'peroration' can be seen to imply that virtue, far from being the reason for φρόνησις' normativity, itself depends on this for its positive evaluative status.

'Buying and selling all things for this and with this (i.e. φρόνησις) is, in truth, bravery, self-control, justice, and all true virtue' (69b1-2) implies that virtue consists of using as well as aiming for φρόνησις in all actions. This suggests that virtue in fact has an instrumental role in procuring φρόνησις, rather than vice versa. Virtue, then, becomes that which the philosopher, having attained some degree of φρόνησις, uses in his continuing search for φρόνησις.

The view of the virtues as instrumental is corroborated in 69c1 where they are called κάθαρσις τις των τουούτων πάντων, while φρόνησις itself is called καθαρμός τις.20 Clearly this draws a distinction between φρόνησις and virtue by the contrasting -μός and -σίς suffixes. Although usage of these suffixes was slightly flexible in meaning and both forms sometimes denoted either process or product, two such nouns, derived from the same verb, were frequently used in contradistinction within the classical period, with -σίς denoting process and -μός resultant state.21 Accordingly, as in the transaction imagery, the virtues appear to represent a process

---

19 This is not to suggest that Socrates shares such common conceptions. For they imply that acceptance or avoidance of particular fears etc. has some merit in itself, whilst Socrates clearly states that their presence or absence makes no difference (e.g. 69b4-5).
20 The use of κάθαρσις are καθαρμός here is usually described as a 'medical' or 'purification' metaphor in which e.g. 'medical language is used with religious overtones' (Gooch, 1974, 154). However, as I have argued above, religious or spiritual purification appears to be a well enough established sense of κάθαρσις to preclude seeing it as live metaphor. See Ch.4 n.29, above.
21 Long, 1968, 18-19; Browning, 1958, 70. Moreover, this seems to fit in with other uses of these terms (e.g. 67c5) and even with 82d6 which e.g. Weiss, 1987, n.65, (following Burnet) has seen as providing evidence for the contrary viewpoint.
leading to φρόνησις and this makes sense if we understand these lines as showing what virtue would be in a φρόνησις-based ethics.

So it seems that in the 'apology' Socrates justifies the normativity of φρόνησις by its own characteristics and the failings of its rival value system. Unlike a conventional reading of this section, where φρόνησις' connection with virtue guarantees its normativity, this normativity actually appears to derive neither from pleasure nor material benefits, nor even from virtue. On the contrary, virtue itself has instrumental goodness because it leads to φρόνησις, while φρόνησις is only instrumental insofar as it leads to virtuous actions which procure more φρόνησις.

If this is the case, the implications of this section constitute a very surprising departure from the conventional account of Platonic/Socratic ethics, in which the value of wisdom seems clearly to stem either from its identification with, or role in procuring, virtue. Nevertheless, it does seem that the passage can be read in this way and, furthermore, that such a reading is not inconsistent with its immediate context.

In section 6.2.6 I shall outline some more reasons given by Socrates for the normativity of the φρόνησις-based system. Before doing so, however, I shall briefly examine the secondary literature on this passage to show how interpretations differ when certain stylistic aspects are missed or dismissed.

6.2.4 ‘Ironing out’ a metaphor: critical readings of this passage

Considerable critical debate has focused on Phaedo 69a6-c3. When reading this passage, commentators appear to bring in issues and views from the Meno, Protagoras, and other dialogues explicitly concerned with virtue's relationship to wisdom, but overlook the immediate context.22 They take virtue as self-evidently normative,23 while φρόνησις' normativity remains to be proved. Moreover, although certain attention is paid to the imagery, this only goes so far, with many

---

22 In spite of claims like Gooch, 1974, 155: 'the larger context of this passage must be kept in mind'.
23 Cf. e.g. Burnet, 1911, 68-9, who actually uses the term 'goodness' rather than 'virtue' here.

Chapter 6 151
points neglected because of what seems to be a desire for the imagery to 'work'
neatly.

For the commentators the primary concern is whether the passage is concordant with
the 'Socratic paradox' that virtue is knowledge, which would make φρόνησις
intrinsically good, or whether φρόνησις is in fact instrumentally good, insofar as it
leads to virtue.24 Virtue's normativity is simply assumed, and the question at issue is
felt to be how this normativity impinges on φρόνησις.25

Commentators do notice a number of discrepancies in the 'coinage' imagery, or
'economic metaphor' as they call it,26 and discuss and attempt to 'solve' various
aspects of these difficulties.27 They focus on two key points, the first being the
incongruous simile and metaphor in which νομίσματα evokes both the exchange of
pleasures constituting 'pseudo-virtue' and then φρόνησις itself.28 Rather than
question the evaluative status of coins per se, they see pleasures, pains, and fears as
false coins, simply accepting the value of coins themselves.29 Without any idea of a
possible negative sense of coinage they see no reason to be suspicious of coinage
itself and do not notice points like the relevance of earlier material or the
νομίσματα/νόμισμα switch. The difficulties of μείζων πρός ἔλαττω are not

24 So e.g. Hackforth, 1955, 193, says that, ultimately, it is the 'the conception of φρόνησις as a
means...to virtue' which 'prevails'; Luce, 1944, equates the two; Gooch, 1974, comes to the
conclusion that φρόνησις is both instrumentally good, insofar as it leads to virtue, but also
intrinsically, since it is itself one of the virtues; Weiss, 1987, claims that virtue is achieved through
φρόνησις when φρόνησις is the aim, so that somebody can be virtuous in life, even if their goal,
φρόνησις, is only attainable after death. To a certain degree, Weiss' position is similar to my own,
since virtue aims for wisdom. However, unlike me, she still sees virtue as intrinsically normative and
attainable without wisdom, and wisdom as instrumental (even though only through being an aim and
not actually present) to the acquisition of virtue. For arguments against specific points see below.
26 The fact that the imagery in 69a6-b8 is generally known as the 'economic metaphor [emphasis
mine]', in spite of including both simile and metaphor seems symptomatic of the inattention to detail
which pervades critical readings.
27 Although cf. e.g. Bluck, 1952, 5, who suggests that the issue throughout 'is purely a question of
values - what one regards as of sterling worth, and therefore tries to obtain in everything one does. As
for the discrepancies, he adds that 'there is no need to press the metaphor so far'; Louis, 1945, 27,
who simply cites this passage as example of Plato's tendency to assimilate things of value to 'monnaie
de bon aloi'.
29 E.g. Weiss, 1987, 59 on the 'popular misconception' that 'pleasures, pains, and fears have real value
(as coins do)'; Gooch, 1974, 156. Luce, 1944, 62, does suggest the antithesis actually contrasts barter
and the more sophisticated and therefore more valuable coinage. However, as Bluck, 1952, 5, rightly
objects, the terminology clearly indicates that coinage is depicted in both antithetical phrases, and
there is no evidence to support Luce's position.

Chapter 6 152
interpreted, but avoided by the addition of various supplements such as Weiss’ explanatory parenthesis ‘[in the case of pain and fear]’ or Gooch’s expanded: ‘but this is not the right exchange for virtue, to exchange one small pleasure like a coin for a larger one, or larger pains and fears like coins for smaller pains and fears’.

The main difficulty is generally acknowledged to be in καὶ τοῦτον μὲν πάντα καὶ μετὰ τοῦτον ὄνομεν ὁ ἡμερομεία ἔτε καὶ πιστεύεται ὅταν (69b1-2), where they feel that τοῦτον (‘for this’) implies the idea of φρόνησις’ identification with virtue and intrinsic goodness, whereas μετὰ τοῦτον suggests that φρόνησις is instrumental in acquiring virtue. Commentators worry about apparent inconsistencies arising from the same thing being both instrument and product of a process, and also about the idea that using φρόνησις in transactions suggests a depletion of stock. Consequently, often by adding, removing, or changing the sense of certain elements, they so interpret the lines as to eliminate any difficulties.

Another point taken as clear justification for seeing an intrinsic/instrumental divide between virtue and φρόνησις is, strangely enough, the very same καθαροσ/καθαρμός distinction which I interpret as evidence for the opposite. In calling the virtues καθαρος τίς and φρόνησις καθαρμός τίς it is usually assumed that Plato invokes a product/process distinction. This view of φρόνησις as instrument and the virtues as product then informs and determines most critical

30 Weiss, 1987, 58; Gooch, 1974, 158.
31 See e.g Hackforth, 1955, 193: ‘This running together of the two ideas is...the chief source of difficulty both in this particular sentence and in the passage as a whole’.
32 See e.g. Gooch, 1974, 155; Hackforth, 1955, 193.
33 E.g. Burnet, 1911, 67-8, dismisses τοῦτον μὲν πάντα, along with ὄνομεν ὁ ἡμερομεία ἔτε καὶ πιστεύεται, as interpolated, partially on linguistic grounds (see Ch. 4 n. 10, above), but also to prevent the ‘simile’ from ‘breaking’ down. Weiss understands μετὰ τοῦτον at 69b1 as ‘with phronēsis [as one’s value, aim, or concern]’ (59), supposedly making it consistent with the earlier τοῦτον. She gives Ap. 32b8-9 as a parallel for this use of μετά (65 n. 18), despite a lack of evidence that μετά there definitely means ‘for the sake of’ as opposed to ‘with’. Moreover, in Ap. 32b9 μετά is clearly in opposition to μετά in 32c1, where ‘for the sake of’ would not make sense. Gallop, 1975, 14, translates the τοῦτον and μετά τοῦτον as ‘for that, or rather with that’. However, the text gives no evidence for seeing μετά τοῦτον as correcting rather than complementing the earlier τοῦτον. Cf. also Rowe, 1993a, 150, who also makes a similar move. Bluck, 1952, 5, ignores the difficulties (see n. 27, above). Gooch, 1974, 157-9, seems to be the only commentator who accepts straightforwardly both ‘with’ and ‘for’ φρόνησις here. Nevertheless, he then explains φρόνησις as intrinsically good because it is one of the virtues, even though the passage as a whole, together with specific points such as the καθαρος/καθαρμός distinction, argues against such a reading.
readings of the earlier 'coin' imagery. According to my reading based on classical Greek usage, the distinction is reversed, with κάθαρσις/καθαρμός as process and product respectively. Accordingly, it gives no reason for taking virtue as goal and we can arrive at a reciprocal understanding of the 'coin' imagery and κάθαρσις/καθαρμός distinction, rather than using the latter as a guide for eradicating the difficulties of the former.

In conclusion, commentators often seem to sacrifice close attention to the full range and significance of tenor/vehicle discrepancies and other nuances of the passage, in order to reach neat solutions which avoid, iron out, or misinterpret key elements. Their approaches appear largely motivated by both a desire to make Plato comfortably and easily consistent, and the urge to see this passage as simply making claims which relate to preoccupations of other Platonic works rather than arguing for a different and context-dependent viewpoint.

6.2.5 Further multivalent associations and tenor-vehicle discrepancies

The νόμισμα imagery's significance lies in its negative and positive connotations, the discrepancies between them, and difficulties of reconciling vehicle with tenor, φρόνησις. Other less extended imagery can be similarly analysed, most notably perhaps two instances which present the body as imprisonment or slavery: ἐκλυμενῆν ὡσπερ δεσμῶν ἐκ τοῦ σώματος (67d1) and δουλεύοντες τῇ τούτο [i.e. τοῦ σώματος] θεραπεῖα (66d1-2). These contribute to the Phaedo's portrayal of death as releasing soul from body and are echoed later, when Socrates calls those having led a righteous life ἐλευθερούμενοι τε καὶ ἀπαλλαττόμενοι ὡσπερ δεσμωτηρίων (114b8-c1).

---

34 See e.g. Weiss, 1987, 61, on 'the purification-metaphor's assertion that phronēsis is but means to the end, the end being aretē'. Cf. also e.g. Gooch, 1974, 154, for this viewpoint and references to other adherents; Annas, 1999, 61.

35 In some ways this is similar to Empson's fourth type of 'ambiguity' in which 'two or more meanings of a statement do not agree among themselves but combine to make clear a more complicated state of mind in the author' (Empson, 1953, 136ff.).

36 See Rowe, 1993, 288, for this and other examples of this image.
The vehicle’s (release from chains) positive value ascribed to tenor (soul’s release from body) derives from a conventional negative conception of chains caused, no doubt, because they restrict physical freedom,\(^{37}\) and therefore, stems from a body-orientated system. Immediate tenor/vehicle discrepancies arise, given the vehicle’s dependence on valuing physical comfort, whereas the tenor’s value comes from a soul-orientated system, where physical concerns are immaterial.\(^{38}\) However, there are also larger discrepancies. As I said, the chain’s capacity to restrict freedom must constitute the vehicle’s negative aspect. Yet the body itself is responsible for restricting the soul’s freedom, so that the imagery presents a reason why the body is bad, even though the vehicle (release from chains) depends upon seeing the body as valuable. In this way, Plato suggests not simply the worth of the unrestricted soul, but also creates a tension between two value systems and pushes us to assess their relative values and see them as oppositional. Just as with the coin imagery, tenor appropriates the value of vehicle, but also uses the vehicle’s associations contrary to itself to justify its own value in terms which simultaneously reveal why the vehicle model must be rejected. Specifically, the consequence is that value is conferred on the soul’s freedom (i.e. on incorporeality) in contradistinction to the body’s so-called freedom.

Likewise there are the terms ‘loves’ and ‘desires’, \(\varepsilon\rho\omega\tau\omicron\upsilon\ \delta\varepsilon\ \kappa\alpha\iota\ \varepsilon\pi\theta\upsilon\mu\omicron\omega\omicron\upsilon\) (66c2), although these introduce a contrast not through imagery and tenor/vehicle discrepancies, but by including the same terms within two different contexts, one conventional and pejorative, one unconventional and positive. First, they describe yearnings caused by the body for material things conventionally regarded as valuable. For Socrates, these ‘loves’ and ‘desires’ hinder our quest for knowledge.\(^{39}\) Then, shortly afterwards, with cognates of the very same two words, he says our purified soul will, after death, obtain the wisdom which we ‘desire’ and ‘claim’ to love; \(\nu\mu\omicron\ \varepsilon\sigma\tau\alpha\iota\ \omega\omicron\ \varepsilon\pi\theta\upsilon\mu\omicron\omega\omicron\omicron\epsilon\nu\ \tau\epsilon\ \kappa\alpha\iota\ \phi\alpha\iota\epsilon\nu\ \varepsilon\rho\alpha\sigma\tau\alpha\iota\ \epsilon\iota\nu\alpha\iota\, \phi\rho\omicron\nu\epsilon\sigma\epsilon\omega\varsigma\) (66e2-3).\(^{40}\) Like the coin imagery, the first instance devalues these terms, whereas

\(^{37}\) Cf. Rowe, 1993, on \(\lambda\omega\omega\omicron\) 59e6: ‘i.e. from his chains, for the sentence to be carried out (but that will ‘free’ him in another sense: cf. 62b, 67d; also e.g. A.PV 97 and Hdt.3.145.

\(^{38}\) Cf. e.g. 69b4-5 or Socrates’ almost flippant attitude to chains, imprisonment, the poison, and, in general, to physical discomfort: e.g. 63e3ff.

\(^{39}\) Cf. Phd. 68c9.

\(^{40}\) Cf. Phd. 66b7.
the second appropriates their usual sense of ‘aiming towards’ something considered to be ‘valuable’ in order to outline an alternative value-system.\textsuperscript{41}

Socrates’ vision of philosophy here is often criticised for its sterility and absolute rejection of pleasures which we ‘love’ and ‘desire’, as well as for failing to account for the possible ‘pleasure’ of philosophy itself.\textsuperscript{42} By using these very-same terms to depict the feelings which the philosopher will have for φρόνησις, Socrates suggests that philosophy will not replace conventional pleasures with a pleasureless alternative. Instead it will engender the same depths of feeling within us, the difference being their true worth as opposed to the valuelessness of those rejected emotions.

6.2.6 \textit{Normative terms and their effect on other terminology}

I have proposed that Plato uses the ‘apology’ to argue for φρόνησις’ normativity, and this can be corroborated by the role of normative terminology throughout the ‘apology’. The quantity and variety of such terminology is one of the most prominent features and it describes different aspects of either the philosophical or conventional viewpoint. For example, the body is called an evil: ἐντὸς ἄν τὸ σῶμα ἔχωμεν καὶ συμπεφυμένη ἠ ἡμῶν ἡ ψυχὴ μετὰ τολούτου κακοῦ (66b5-6). Conversely, in the ‘peroration’ Socrates claims that pursuing the philosophical life to his best abilities will lead him to δεσποτάς τε ἀγαθός ἐντεύξεσθαι καὶ ἐταίρος (69e2) in the afterlife.

Terminology denoting truth or genuineness is also common, such as ὁς ἀληθῶς, τῷ ὑπάρξει, and to a lesser extent ὅρθος. While this ‘key-word’ repetition is most striking in the ‘peroration’ it also appears throughout the ‘apology’. Often these terms are in close conjunction and, in a couple of places, even appear as pleonasm, the two

\textsuperscript{41} The same terminology soon recurs with similar implications when Socrates says: philosophers αὐτὴν δὲ καθ’ αὐτὴν ἐπεθύμοντα τὴν ψυχὴν ἔχειν (67e7-8); even normal lovers are willing to enter Hades in order to see again the ones ἄν ἐπεθύμοντα (68a6); and φρονήσεως δὲ ἀρα τις τῷ ὑπάρξει ἐρώτημα (68a7) should not grieve at death.

\textsuperscript{42} E.g. Gallop, 1975, 102-3, on ‘this stark and misleading opposition between wisdom and pleasure’. Cf. e.g. Bostock, 1986, 32ff.
‘equivalent’ terms being juxtaposed: ὃς ἀλήθως τῷ ὄντι (66c4) and τὸ δ’ ἀλήθες τῷ ὄντι (69b8).

A very notable example is the repetition of φιλόσοφος, φιλοσοφία, or φιλοσοφέω, combined with various adjectives or adverbs signifying truth or genuineness. First, in the introduction to the ‘apology’, Socrates associates true philosophy with seeing death as good:

ὁ μοι φαίνεται εἰκότως ἀνήρ τῷ ὄντι ἐν φιλοσοφίᾳ διατρίψας τὸν βλένθηνα μέλλων ἀποθανεῖσθαι καὶ έξελπισ εἶναι έκεὶ μέγιστα οἴλεβθαη ἁγαβά ἐπειδὰν τελευτήσῃ (63e9-10).

The dialogue contains many similar collocations. In the ‘apology’ we find: τοίς γνησίως φιλοσόφος (66b2); πάντας τοῖς ὀρθῶς φιλομαθείς (67b4); οἱ φιλοσοφοῦντες ὀρθῶς (67d8); τῷ ὄντι...οἱ ὀρθῶς φιλοσοφοῦντες ἀποθησκείν μελετῶσι (67e5-6); οἴσεθαι γε χρῆ, ἐὰν τῷ ὄντι γε ἠ...φιλόσοφος (68b2) and οἱ πεφιλοσοφηκότες ὀρθῶς (69d2). Moreover, no examples of ‘philosophy’ terms are unaccompanied by ‘truth’ terms within this passage.

Near the beginning of the Phaedo Socrates offers a radical redefinition of philosophers as those orientating their life around practising for death. This distinguishes them not only from those not claiming to be philosophers, but also from people like Euenus who, though purporting to be a philosopher, would be unwilling to die and therefore has no legitimate claim to philosophy. Thus the continual collocation of philosophy and truth terms recalls and emphasises that the ‘Socratic’ notion of philosophy, a preparation and willingness for death, is at issue here. This notion is referred to explicitly several times, so much so, that even where it is omitted, this understanding of true philosophy still appears to be implicit.

Thus, repetition contributes to clarifying the Phaedo’s reconceptualisation of philosophy. Furthermore, this repetitive stylistic structure quite clearly suggests and

---

43 Phd. 64a4-5; 64e2; 80e6; 82c2-3.
44 Phd. 61b7-c9.
45 E.g. 63e9-64a2; 67d7-10; e4-5; 68b1-3.

Chapter 6
draws our attention to the idea that the Socratic notion of philosophy is genuine. This being so, a claim of philosophy’s normativity comes from the inherent normativity of terms like ἀρετή and τὸ δυνατόν in this context. Nevertheless, simple repetition of these terms in conjunction with philosophy terms foregrounds and implies a connection, but does not actually give reasons for accepting this conception of philosophy to be true.

A reason lies in those phrases describing φρόνησις’ object with truth terms and so immediately implying links between these objects and the philosophy which seeks them. It is this connection which gives reasons for Socratic philosophy’s claims of truthfulness: namely, that the object towards which it aims is truth itself. For how could an activity which examines truth itself be anything but a genuine search for wisdom? This connection also works the other way, with the descriptions of philosophy providing reasons for taking truth, the object of knowledge, as normative. From the usage of, for example, ἀρετή and τὸ δυνατόν, it is clear that they are seen here as inherently good, so that predicating truthfulness or genuineness of something confers normative status. Given that truth is then intrinsically good, the terminological connection shows why knowledge’s object, truth, can be seen as good.

The case is similar for qualities such as simplicity, singularity, distinctness, and uniqueness which, as we have seen, are all associated with φρόνησις. Although none are unequivocally normative, in their cumulative usage in the ‘peroration’ they clearly seem to be viewed as conferring value. So, they not only provide reasons for φρόνησις’ normativity, but in doing so produce reason for their own.

Such ideas are also supported by the association of distinctness and truth arising from, for example, how the soul which retreats into itself as much as possible comes closest to reality (e.g. 65c5-10). This suggests a further connection between

---

46 The disembodied soul is able to grasp ‘truth’ or ‘reality’. See e.g. Phd.66b5-7: έως αν τὸ σῶμα ἐκάμεν καὶ συμπεφυτμένη ἢ ἡμῶν ἢ φυσική μετὰ τοῦ ὑποπτού κακοῦ, οὐ µὴ ποτὲ κτησίβεβα ἰκανώς οὐ ἐπιθυμούθην φομέν δὲ τοῦτο εἶναι τὸ ἀληθής 65b9; 66d7. The objects of knowledge are also described as τὰ δυνατά, recalling the recurrent τὸ δυνατόν, at e.g. 65c3; c9; 66c2;
47 Cf. e.g. 64c7-8: ἀπαλλαγέοντι αὐτὴν καὶ αὐτὴν.

Chapter 6 158
φρόνησις, the soul, and the objects of knowledge, the Forms, which are described by phrases like αὐτὸ καθ’ αὐτὸ ἐλλικρινὲς ἔκαστον...τῶν δυντῶν (66a2-3).

The case is similar for purity, as seen from ἐλλικρινὴς in ἀλλ’ αὐτῇ καθ’ αὐτὴν ἐλλικρινεῖ τῇ διάνοιᾳ χρώμενος αὐτὸ καθ’ αὐτὸ ἐλλικρινὲς ἔκαστον ἐπιχειροῖ θηρεύειν τῶν δυντῶν (66a2-3). Similarly, καθαρὸς describes the knowledge attained by souls free from the body (e.g. 66d8 and e5) because pure and unadulterated,48 while the ‘peroration’ presents virtue as καθαρὸς τις and φρόνησις as καθαρός τις (69c1-3), so that καθαρὸς and its cognates make a connection between intelligence and its objects.49

Conversely, terms denoting mixture or plurality, such as συμπεφυρμένη (66b5) or παντοδαπῶν (66c3), are linked to bodily evils and their concomitant needs, so that they acquire a negative sense. This is perhaps enhanced by two tripartite pleonastic phrases describing the adverse effects of body on soul: καὶ γὰρ πολέμου καὶ στάσεις καὶ μάχας... (66c6-7) and παραπίπτον θόρυβον παρέχει καὶ παραρχὴν καὶ ἐκπλήττει (66d5-6). This semantic repetition might also be seen to evoke the plurality bound up with the body.

Other features here create a similar impression. The body causes the soul μυρίας ἀσχολίας (66b8) and φλιπόρειας...πολλῆς (66c3-4), while the noun θόρυβος (66d6), describing the body’s effect on intellectual inquiries, could have certain connotations of plurality from its usual association with the clamour of a crowd. Even the phrase σύμπαντος τοῦ σώματος (66a5) might indicate the body’s composite nature, given that σύμπαντος implies a whole composed of parts. Within the later ‘argument from affinity’ the body’s composite nature is one of the primary reasons given for its destruction after death, unlike the simple and incomposite soul (78c1ff.). So here plurality and complexity seem to substantiate the body’s negative status, implying therefore that they are being understood as pejorative per se.

48 Cf. καθαρώτατα at 65e6.
49 Cf. Scharmagl, 1994, 118. Although primarily interested in mystery terminology, she says that the association of καθαρώτατα and διάνοια at 65e creates a connection between καθαρὸς and reason.

Chapter 6 159
Although the patterns of association emerging from the ‘apology’ appear to be of great importance, most are bypassed by conventional philosophical readings of the dialogue. I have suggested that this is largely because the mode of expression here does not conform to modern paradigms of philosophical argumentation. In fact, the only part of the ‘apology’ whose style is at all close to this conception of ‘philosophical argument’, the section where Socrates attacks the ordinary conception of virtue, is also the only part of the ‘apology’ which receives substantial comment, apart from the beginning of the ‘peroration’.

The ‘apology’ does not proceed in ordered steps that clearly lay out the reasoning process. Instead its stylistic structure makes certain elements prominent and reveals interconnections between them, even if their purpose is not immediately evident. Consequently, a ‘nexus of association’ emerges between elements which can be seen to signify through interconnectedness, fitting together to form arguments. These depend not simply on tracing a linear progress of argumentation, but on a series of additional moves. Effectively the reader is drawn into a type of dialectic with the text and forced to move backwards and forwards, bringing together the associated elements in order to understand the prominence of particular features as well as apparent incongruities or multivocality.

From these interconnected associations within the ‘apology’ other significant points emerge which complement, challenge, or augment standard accounts. The ‘apology’ constructs and argues for a φρόνησις-based value system, based upon its opposition to the conventional values which it both appeals to and then displaces, by revealing

---

50 See below, p.168.
51 See e.g. Gallop, 1975, 98-102 and Hackforth, 1955, 56-7. There is also some discussion of: the concept of death as release of soul from body at (e.g. Hackforth, 1955, 49); the question of how far terms like [τὸ] δικαίον and [τῷ] καλόν (65d7) introduce the ‘Theory of Forms’ (discussing 65d4-e5, Gallop, 1975, comments that ‘the so-called Theory of Forms’ is introduced at this point’, and launches into a detailed discussion of the ‘Theory’. However, cf. Rowe, 1993a, 141); the devaluation of pleasure (see n.42) and how the absolute withdrawal from the sensible world squares with, for example, the later ‘theory of recollection’ (e.g. Rowe, 1993a, 139; Hackforth, 1955, 49; Gallop, 1975, 91-2).
52 Cf. Prier, 1976, 151 on ‘archaic logic’: ‘archaic logic does not move from a to b but from a to a or a to A through a series of symbols or words that appear both different and the same'.

Chapter 6 160
their inadequacies. Plato introduces normativity through terms that possess a conventional or intrinsically normative sense, and gradually links these to other more neutral terms, so that the former confer an evaluative status on the latter. The final result is a group of entities, processes, and qualities which are all interrelated by sharing common attributes and values.

Thus, Plato constructs much of the value system by appropriating conventional evaluative terminology. As was the case with the coin or chain images the new tenor retains the value associated with particular features or terminology partly by discrediting their conventional evaluative status. Moreover, as well as individual features, it seems possible to draw the passage together into a basic opposition between the \( \phi \rho \nu \eta \sigma \iota \zeta \)-based and body-orientated value systems, the former comprising qualities such as purity, simplicity, singularity, intrinsic goodness, virtue, uniqueness, comprehensiveness, truth; and the latter, their opposites. This reflects an underlying dualistic metaphysics, insofar as the \( \phi \rho \nu \eta \sigma \iota \zeta \)-based system depends on the Forms, entirely different ontologically from the sensibles towards which the body is orientated.

6.2.8 Generic affiliations

I have already argued that innovation and expansion of stylistic models evokes the distinctiveness of \( \phi \rho \nu \eta \sigma \iota \zeta \). However, certain similarities between some features and their generic models are also significant here. Several examples combine likenesses with discrepancies between the style and function of Plato’s usage and that of their generic models. As with other stylistic features in the ‘apology’, in many of these cases Plato appears to appropriate a particular phenomenon’s evaluative dimension, while discrediting the rest of its conventional usage.

So, for example, the ‘apology’ is presented as a defence speech, a characteristically normative type of discourse, in which the defendant relies on the alleged truth of his claims and morality of his actions. This evaluative dimension is clearly used here to set up the normativity of the \( \phi \rho \nu \eta \sigma \iota \zeta \)-based system. Yet Plato simultaneously
shows the illegitimacy of the values appealed to when such features are used in their normal generic context.

For instance, there is antithesis which, like the examples in the ‘peroration’, juxtaposes a false or immoral view with a true or moral one, making clear each view’s distinct characteristics, while also emphasising the discrepancy between them. This is especially familiar from forensic oratory, like Lysias 12, where the speaker contrasts the murder of innocent men without trial with the lawful trial of those accused of having committed this crime:

καὶ οὕτω μὲν τοὺς οἰδὲν ἄδικοντας ἀκρίτους ἀπέκτειναν, ἵμεῖς δὲ τοὺς ἀπολέσαντας τὴν πόλιν κατὰ τὸν νόμον ἀξιότε θέρεν, παρ’ ὄν οὐδ’ ἂν παρανόμως βουλόμενοι δικην λαμβάνειν ἄξιον τῶν ἄδικημάτων ὧν τὴν πόλιν ἡδικήμασί λάβοιτε.\(^{53}\)

Likewise, in the Phaedo’s ‘peroration’, false exchange of pleasures is contrasted to Ἀφόνησις\(^{5}\) genuineness; while similarly, the second antithesis differentiates true virtue acquired with Ἀφόνησις\(^{5}\) from virtue which lacks this and is therefore illusory.

Yet there are also significant differences between the Phaedo’s use of antithesis and others. For, from the viewpoint of the ‘peroration’, only those antitheses appealing to a Ἀφόνησις-based value system for their conception of moral truth could have legitimate claims to establishing a genuine right/wrong opposition. Separated from Ἀφόνησις, justice and virtue are mere illusions, so that the conventional antitheses of oratory would simply be seen to present two opposing viewpoints within the same body-orientated value system, and therefore to lack the necessary elements for a genuine moral/immoral opposition.\(^{54}\)

This becomes clearer if we compare the ‘peroration’ antitheses to those used earlier to explain the common conception of self-control (σωφροσύνη): φοβούμενοι γάρ ἐτέρων ἡδονῶν στερηθῆναι καὶ ἐπιθυμοῦντες ἐκεῖνων, ἄλλων ἀπέχουσιν ὑπ’

---

\(^{53}\) Lys.12.82.

\(^{54}\) Cf. Nightingale, 1995, 3 on genres as ‘forms of thought; 7, on Platonic ‘parody’; and 91, ‘Plato criticizes his model even as he imitates its themes and structures’.
Here, individuals refrain from certain pleasures only because overpowered by desire for others and fear of not acquiring them. This notion of self-control in fact amounts to the very same submission to pleasures which is supposedly its opposite, implying the falsity of the common virtue/vice distinction, with respect to virtues like self-control. By contrast, only the Platonic virtue/pseudo-virtue antitheses of the ‘peroration’ present a genuine true/false opposition.

Likewise, other patterns of argument are imitated within the ‘apology’, once again with clear differences between originals and their Platonic imitations. For example, crucial to the structure of associative connections in the ‘apology’ was an oppositional scheme. The importance of oppositions within early Greek argument has been discussed extensively, most notably in Lloyd’s Polarity and Analogy, which presents them as one of two main principles of argument. Even Hesiod’s genealogy in the Theogony is centred around corresponding oppositional groups, and many Presocratics depict the physical world or what is perceived as the physical world in terms of oppositions. As well as this, in Presocratic discourse oppositions are not only appealed to between different entities or processes, but also between true and false opinion or reality and appearance. Both of these contrasts motivate the oppositions within the ‘apology’ and Phaedo as a whole. Nevertheless, in all the other cases, oppositions concern only one ontological level and, whatever their focus, they arise from oppositions between elements on this level. Conversely, in presenting a dualistic ontology, just as with other features, Plato appropriates oppositional argumentation, but presents it as a genuine and distinct opposition, unlike those found in his predecessors.

---

55 Cf. 68d11-12 on ‘bravery’.
56 Lloyd, 1966. Cf. e.g. Havelock, 1983, 34-5; and also Prier, 1976, who talks repeatedly about the use of oppositions within ‘archaic logic’ in writers like Hesiod, Heraclitus, and Parmenides, although he also posits the use of a ‘third term’, which imposes unity, e.g. Heraclitus’ logos (75-7).
57 See e.g. Prier, 1976, 40.
60 Lloyd, 1966, 23-4, on how Plato’s Being/Becoming or Forms/particulars oppositions differ from Presocratic and Hippocratic oppositions: ‘This is, then, a different type of opposition, one between two distinct worlds, not between members of a single world of reality’. 

Chapter 6
As we have seen, the 'apology' frequently draws upon the conventional value of certain features or terminology to establish new values which displace them, just as financial terminology evokes the value of a φρονησις-based system completely detached from economic concerns. Outside Plato there are numerous parallels where, as with the Phaedo's νόμισμα, the evaluative ambiguity of particular terms represents a conflict between competing moral claims. For example, in Aeschylus' Choephoroi the term νίκη in Orestes' δίκη η νίκης τής εχον μισματα reflects the 'triumph' of avenging his father, but also has ironic implications since the very same act brought the μισματα of matricide. Thus the ambiguity within νίκη represents the clash between two conflicting moral imperatives, the prohibition of killing one's parent, as opposed to the necessity of avenging them, and one could interpret much of the play's other 'justice' terminology in the same way. Moral terminology within the Antigone has a similar ambiguity, this time reflecting the competing demands of loyalty to the polis and to one's blood relatives. According to the former, terms like κακα and δικη, describing respectively Antigone's actions and Creon's decrees, carry their conventional values. Yet, if some element of justice is also attributed to Antigone's actions, the evaluative status of these terms is problematised.

However, these examples still represent opposing imperatives within conventional morality, while the Phaedo sets out to replace this entire system. Consequently, the clashing 'philosophical' and conventional understanding of evaluative terminology in the 'apology' represents not a simple conflict between two aspects of the same value-system, but the opposition of two alternative systems, the genuine and false, and the absolute displacement of the latter by the former.

Although not strictly relevant to 'generic affiliations', interesting parallels for this Platonic manoeuvre are found in philosophical writers of various periods, who try to displace a conception of morality by language in which that conception is

61 A.Ch.1017.
62 Cf. e.g. A.Ch.1027 and similar examples in E.El: e.g. 1189.
63 E.g. S.Ant.495 and 854.
64 Cf. Nightingale, 1995, 191, who says that, while Plato appropriates comedy's 'voice of criticism', 'the writers of Old Comedy...speak from within the Athenian democracy' and accept its structure, whereas 'Plato's philosopher is an outsider who is disembedded from the social and political economy of the city' and speaks a truth which is independent of the democratic system.
conventionally expressed. For example, Lucretius describes Epicurus, the very man who freed mankind from a belief in religion, as a god: 'deus ille fuit'. Epicurus is pronounced worthy of being counted amongst the gods, and Lucretius talks of his 'divina reperta'. Thus Lucretius employs evaluative terminology associated with conventional religious beliefs to emphasise the values of an opposing system. Similar strategies are used, for instance, in the modern era by Nietzsche, as with his description of Also sprach Zarathustra as an 'inexhaustible well' of 'gold and goodness' ('Gold und Güte'), although this work represents an absolute challenge to the conventional understanding of goodness.

In all of the Phaedo examples, Plato relies on similarities in order to appropriate an evaluative dimension or strategy of argumentation, while also drawing attention to the differences. The reader must work through the passage's structure in order to understand where the differences and similarities lie, and it is the very structure leading us through these stages which can be seen as argument.

6.2.9 The ramifications of these points for the dialogue as a whole

One of the key points in the 'apology' for the Phaedo as a whole is the importance of oppositional systems. I have already suggested that the opposition between a philoi-based and body-orientated value system can be seen to reflect the underlying dualistic metaphysics of the entire work. Pairs of qualities associated with the different sides of the opposition, like simplicity/complexity or singularity/plurality will also play crucial roles in the subsequent 'affinity argument', while oppositions in general pervade much of the dialogue's argumentation. Already, in the 'apology', we are given some idea of how these pairs can be understood in terms of a hierarchical structure, rather than symmetrical opposition,

---

66 Luc.DRN 5.51 and 6.8.
67 Cf. Gale, 1994, 191-207 and 192: 'This is ironically inverted by Epicurus, for Lucretius makes his denial of divine intervention in the world (5.52-4) the basis of his divinity.
68 Nietzsche, Ecce Homo, Foreward, 4.
69 See e.g. the 'argument from opposites' (throughout); the 'affinity argument' (especially 74a9ff.); and the 'second sailing' (102d5ff.)

Chapter 6 165
and the way in which the different pairs fit into a wider system will become clearer as the dialogue progresses.

The normativity of particular qualities, argued for in this passage, will also be relevant elsewhere in the dialogue, particularly in the later stages. Connections drawn here between Forms, soul, and φτόνησις, in terms of attributes like simplicity and distinctness, imply a qualitative link between the Forms and wisdom. Forms are described with terms evoking purity, distinctness, uniqueness, and truth, while it is also the attribution of these characteristics to φτόνησις which are fundamental in establishing its normativity. Given the connections which they therefore appear to forge between epistemological method, object, and value, these particular qualities appear to be presented as valuable for intellectual inquiry in themselves. One might therefore understand the 'apology' as laying down, indirectly, certain criteria for desired features in philosophical argumentation. These can then help in understanding what constitutes correct philosophical method, a question hanging over the whole dialogue both implicitly and explicitly in, for example, sections of the 'intellectual autobiography'. More generally, it also suggests the philosophical significance of different types of affinity between qualities of entities and/or processes, a point which will be very important in the later 'affinity argument'.

6.3 The 'argument from opposites' (70c4-72e3): 'verbal minimalism'

The style of the 'argument from opposites' is very different from the 'apology', comprising clear steps with an easily traceable logical progression. Many of its stylistic aspects make it far more readily assimilated to modern conventions of philosophical discourse than the 'apology' and it is, unlike the 'apology', discussed extensively in the secondary literature. In this section, I now examine precisely how its construction differs from that of the 'apology', and then move on to consider the significance of these differences and whether the 'argument from opposites' is presented as a more 'philosophical' or 'better' argument.

---

70 E.g. Bostock, 1986, 42-59; Gallop, 1982; Rowe, 1991b; and, in general, the attention paid to this argument in commentaries and other works on the Phd.

Chapter 6 166
In contrast to the 'apology', the 'argument from opposites' is dominated by repetitive structures and can be said to be characterised by 'verbal minimalism'. This phrase indicates a stylistic construction featuring significant structural repetition between individual units or clusters of units and usually involving a strong degree of lexemic repetition along with a tendency towards ellipse. Characteristically, certain other features are involved, including short question and answer format and an absence of imagery and extended description, the latter enhancing the impression of conciseness and helping to foreground the structure. 

Whereas the 'apology', especially in its final stages, could be seen as higher order reflection on the nature and status of philosophy itself, the 'argument from opposites' constitutes a lower order argument to prove the immortality of the soul, containing no self-conscious reflection on its own method. Interestingly, however, the one section in the last part of the 'apology' that provides a slight stylistic precedent for the 'argument from opposites' and stands out stylistically from its immediate context, is also an example of lower order reflection where Socrates argues against the common conception of courage and self-control (68d2-69a4). This short passage has features such as structural and heavy lexemic repetition: e.g. τῷ δεδέσαι ἄρα καὶ δέει ἄνθρεσί εἰσι πάντες πλην οἱ φιλόσοφοι· καίτοι ἄλογον γε δέει τινὰ καὶ δειλὰ ἄνθρεσιν εἶναι (68d11-13). Its first half (68d2-e1) is also written in the short question and answer format common to passages of 'verbal minimalism', but very uncharacteristic of the later sections of the 'apology'. The second part (68e2-9a5), even though a continuous speech, is still divided into short units which largely follow the structure of the first. One can see this example as lower order reflection within the higher-order 'apology', establishing the inconsistency of the 'pseudo-virtues' because they violate the principle that opposites cannot cause their own opposites. With this linked by order, as well as style, to the

---

71 In view of these features it has many similarities with parts of Passages II and especially IV of the 'Stylistic Analysis' chapters, with many features classified above as particularly Platonic (Socratic) ways of establishing parallelism (see ch.5 p.116ff., above).  
'argument from opposites', it seems that Plato is inclined to connect particular styles with their degree of reflectiveness.

Unlike the 'apology' which outlined points like the particularities of φρόνησις, the relation of body and soul, and a conception of philosophy, the 'argument from opposites' posits a general principle of generation of opposites from opposites, which holds for an entire group of different subjects, including the soul. Clearly it is seen as a comprehensive principle, applicable to all generated things without exception⁷³ and, as the argument's final stage makes clear, it is also an unceasing process (72a11-d5).

The 'argument from opposites' itself, unlike the 'apology', is explicitly presented as an argument and its main principle, the generation of opposites from opposites, is introduced as a ἵκανον τεκμήριον that souls exist in Hades: καὶ τὸ τοῦ ἵκανον τεκμήριον τοῦ ταύτα ἐλναι (70d2). This phrase is also echoed within the argument's conclusion: τοῦτο δὲ δυτος ἵκανον που ἔδοκεν τεκμήριον ἐλναι...(72a6).

**Division into steps**

The argument's division into clearly demarcated steps is very different from the long speeches of the 'apology' and emphasises logical sequentiality. It is achieved through various means, most markedly the short question and answer format, which predominates in all but the last section. As is typical of this stylistic mode in Plato, questions are separated by the interlocutor's short formulaic answers, restricted mainly to brief words of affirmation and denial or short questions, like ναι, πᾶν γέ, and πῶς γὰρ οὐ.

Although I would not deny the importance of Cebes' presence as an interlocutor and of his responses, these responses could also be seen to function as punctuation, given that they contribute no new substantive information. For example:

---

⁷³ E.g. ἀλλὰ καὶ κατὰ ζῷων πάντων καὶ φυτῶν, καὶ συλλήβδην ὅσαπερ ἔχει γένεσιν περὶ πάντων ήδομεν ἀρ' οὔτως γίγνεται πάντα (70d7-e1) and πάντα οὔτω γίγνεται, ἐξ ἔναντιν τὰ ἐναντία πράγματα (71a10).
Even when, later in the argument, Cebes actually provides information, rather than simple affirmation, one might still argue that his responses are entirely conditioned by Socrates. So, for instance, having established with Cebes’ acceptance that the two opposite processes, τὸ ζῆν and τὸ τεθνάναι, come about from each other (71d8-9), Socrates then asks what comes about from the living and what from the dead. Cebes’ two answers, τὸ τεθνηκός and ἀναγκαῖον... ὁμολογεῖν ὅτι τὸ ζῶν (71d10-13), simply cite the opposite processes fully articulated by Socrates in order to supply the answer the question already suggests. Cebes’ acceptance of Socrates’ assumptions leaves him with little scope for personalised content, so that the primary purpose of his replies can perhaps be seen to be division of the argument into short steps.

In contrast to the ‘apology’, again, there are also large numbers of particles at the beginning of individual points. These aid the division of the argument into sequential steps and provide an initial suggestion of how each particular point fits into the argument’s progress. So, for example, τί δέ can suggest that the point shares the previous point’s principle, while often ἄρα accompanies the conclusion of a section.

Parallelism, repetition, and ellipse.

Socrates mainly argues by induction in this passage, using the applicability of certain processes to various pairs of generated opposites as a basis for establishing a general principle from which to argue that these processes are equally applicable to life and

---

74 Although the question of why Socrates is concerned about what Cebes ‘says’ may be of some interest.
75 E.g. 71a6 and d12. Cf. Denniston, 1950, 175-6, although he also points out that this is not its commonest use.
76 E.g. 71e2 and 72a4. Cf. Sicking and Ophuijsen, 1993, 103ff.
death. Parallelism of points and units within individual sections is evoked by lexemic and structural repetition, often combined with ellipse.

The first stage of the argument, showing that things come to be from their opposites, provides the best example. A stylistic pattern is established at the end of Socrates' short introductory speech, where he claims that this principle applies to all living things and gives the example of the larger coming to be from the smaller: ὅλην ὅταν μείζον τι γίγνεται, ἀνάγκη ποῦ ἐξ ἐλάττωνος διντος πρότερον ἐπεὶτα μείζον γίγνεσθαι (70e6-8). A series of questions then follows, sharing a very similar structure and developing the principle within a group of parallel cases. First, Socrates asks whether the inverse of the 'larger from smaller' idea also holds: οὐκόν καὶ ἐλαττὸν γίγνητα, ἐκ μείζωνος διντος πρότερον ὑπερον ἐλαττον γενήσεται; (70e10-71a1). The question retains the basic pattern of neuter nominative adjective + the verb γίγνομαι, followed by ἐκ + a neuter genitive comparative + γίγνομαι. In addition, the process's first stage is still described as πρότερον, although the equivalent ὑπερον replaces the ἐπείτα of the preceding question. As well as very slight differences between syntax and conjunctions in the two units, the second omits certain elements, dropping the τι in the first clause and, more significantly, the ἀνάγκη ποῦ, implying that necessity is now simply assumed.

As the passage progresses, the ellipse increases and much of the original unit structure is omitted:

καὶ μὴν ἐξ ἴσχυρότερον γε τὸ ἀσθενέστερον καὶ ἐκ βραδυτέρου τὸ θάττον;
πάνυ γε.
(71a3-5).

Here, Socrates asks about two analogous pairs of processes, using little but two pairs of adjectives together with ἐκ. He mentions only one side to each process and not its inverse, although the two stated examples 'from the stronger, the weaker' and 'from the slower, the faster' are perhaps in some way 'inverse', insofar as the first depicts a change from more to less powerful while the latter reverses this.
After Cebes’ reply, Socrates introduces two more paired processes, also elliptical. Once again, he gives only one side to each process, with the first going from positive to negative and the second vice versa. The original particle ἄν reappears, with τι and γίγνηται stated in the first case and assumed in the second:

τί δὲ; ἄν τι χείρον γίγνηται, οὖκ ἐξ ἀμείλονος, καὶ ἄν δικαίότερον, ἐξ ἄδικωτέρου; (71a6-7).

Although the omitted aspects are clearly implicit, the structure has essentially been reduced to its most significant components, so that the principle is effectively encapsulated by the ἐκ + neuter genitive comparative, followed by the nominative neuter adjective which represents the process’ result. The adjectives change from general to physical to evaluative/ethical. Finally, the general principle is reiterated (71a9-10). Meanwhile, the key elements of the structure remain, giving an impression of an invariable principle, no matter what its subject.

With its mixture of parallelism and ellipse, one might therefore see the argument’s structure as mirroring the structure of inductive reasoning itself, insofar as each step, in which the content of the principle changes, increases its scope and so its cogency. Furthermore, it also has a dialectical role, increasing our understanding of how the process works, by causing the reader to supply its missing aspects, ensuring that the full principle is absorbed and comprehended. As I outlined above, the first instance omits ἄνάγκη ποι. While it is clearly essential to the principle that necessity remains a factor, its explicit omission causes us tacitly to supply it, thereby bringing it into our minds as an aspect of the principle to contemplate and perhaps even question. The same process could also be seen to occur when Socrates, after spelling out explicitly the two way process of μείζον' ἐξ ἐλάττονοι and its reversal, states only a uni-directional process of change between subsequent pairs of opposites. As the argument progresses the necessity for change to be two-directional becomes a

---

77 Cf. the reiteration of 71a13-b2 at c6-7.
Finally, the omission of the temporal qualifiers πρότερον/ἐπειτα and πρότερον/ὑπερον after 71a1 can be seen as part of this same dialectical move. 79

Although these features are most pronounced in short isolated units, similar instances are also present within longer units. For example, in the next stage of the argument a long and fully elaborated example illustrates the principle that transformation between opposites is effected by a complementary pairs of processes: μείζονος μὲν πράγματος καὶ ἐλάττονος μεταξὺ αὐξήσεις καὶ φθίσις, καὶ καλοῦμεν οὕτω τὸ μὲν γὰρ αὐξάνεσθαι, τὸ δὲ φθίνειν; (71b2-4). Once Cebes has assented to this proposal, however, Socrates gives two more examples, which omit all but the verbs which name the processes: οὐκοῦν καὶ διακρίνεσθαι καὶ συγκρίνεσθαι, καὶ ψυχεῖσθαι καὶ θερμαίνεσθαι, καὶ πάντα οὕτω (71b6-7). Once more the elliptical structure highlights the aspect of the process most central to this stage of the argument, but also necessitates the reader’s active involvement in the argument’s progress.

Another variation on this pattern comes in 71c9-72a2, where the initial short continuous speech (71c9-d3) lays out a principle in the case of ‘sleeping’ and ‘waking-up’, developed in successive clauses within one long continuous unit (71c9-d3). Socrates then expands and breaks this down into a series of short questions dealing with the parallel cases of ‘dying’ and ‘coming back to life’ (71d5-72a3). Once again, these feature a great deal of repetition and ellipse, and this could be seen as a dialectical mode which shows how to break down an argument and assess it in terms of short individual steps.

The repetition throughout this section features a number of ‘key’ terms, such as γιγνομαι and its cognates, while short sections also contain repeated terminology like the many occurrences of τὸ ἀποτάσσειν and related terms in 71d5-15. Although clearly important, these terms are repeated so intensively throughout so long a stretch of argument that they seem to be simply an element of the repetitive structure itself.

78 See 71e8ff.
79 On the importance of the temporal dimension of this argument, see Gallop, 1982, 211, summarising Barnes.
rather than having the independent prominence of less frequent ‘key-word’ repetition.

6.3.2 Generic affiliations

The theme of transition between opposites connects this section to a major area of Presocratic thought, which is reflected in affiliations to elements of Presocratic, especially prose, style. In very general terms, aspects such as tight logical sequentiality between short units, enhanced by connectives and particles; the repetition of key terms and patterns; and the prominence of particular noun-types, link this passage to certain Presocratic writings. Barnes, for example, taking Melissus as a ‘paradigm’ of ‘the argumentative [as opposed to aphoristic] style of some of the Presocratic writings’ talks of his ‘clear and articulate prose’ which ‘forms a systematically articulated body of doctrine’ and ‘is regularly pointed with the linguistic marks of reasoning’. These are the ‘inferential connectives and particles’ such as ‘for’, ‘since’, ‘because’, ‘therefore’, and ‘necessarily’, which also abound in the ‘argument from opposites’.80 There is also a general absence of normative terms, characteristic of much Presocratic writing, especially the works of Melissus, Anaxagoras, and Diogenes of Apollonia.

More specifically, the argument features pairs of opposite abstract nouns, many of which are formed from τὸ + a neuter adjective or participle, such as τὸ ἀσθενέστερον (71a3) or τὸ τεθνηκός (71d11). This noun-form, especially to denote pairs of opposites, is very common in Presocratics such as Anaxagoras and Melissus,81 while groups of other forms of oppositional pairs are also frequent, for example, in Heraclitus.82

The ‘argument from opposites’ recalls the views of various thinkers. For example, the idea of change depending on necessary, ceaseless, and circular transition between opposites is highly reminiscent of Heraclitus and Empedocles, for whom the

80 Barnes, 1983, 94-5.
81 For examples, see Ch.5 p.122, above.
82 E.g. Heraclit.B67 and B111.
balanced and continuous reciprocal change between opposites is essential. Conversely, the passage could also be seen as a counter-argument to Melissus’ denial of the existence of plurality, the text which provides the closest stylistic parallel.

Melissus claims that, because of perception, men believe in both the existence of unchanging things and a process of universal change between opposites. He uses their incompatibility to show the improbability of plurality, and presents transition between opposites as a false belief attained through perception. His language bears many similarities to the idiom of the *Phaedo*, in terms of noun-form and pairs of opposites connected by γίνεσθαι: δοκεῖ δὲ ἡμῖν τὸ τε θερμὸν ψυχρόν γίνεσθαι καὶ τὸ ψυχρὸν θερμὸν καὶ τὸ σκληρὸν μαλακὸν καὶ τὸ μαλακὸν σκληρὸν. Moreover, the final example of change between opposites is that the living become the dead and vice versa (καὶ τὸ ζῶον ἀποθνῄσκειν καὶ ἐκ μὴ ζῶος γίνεσθαι), the very process whose existence is established within the Platonic ‘argument from opposites’, uses the same ἐκ + neuter genitive + γίνομαι structure.

Equally, one might also see the passage as alluding to a close parallel in Heraclitus, which describes the unity of opposites: ταύτῳ τ’ ἐνι ζῶον καὶ τεθνηκός καὶ [τὸ] ἐγρηγορὸς καὶ καθεῦδον καὶ νέον καὶ γηραιόν· τάδε γὰρ μεταπεσόντα ἐκεῖνά ἐστι κάκεινα πάλιν μεταπεσοῦτα ταύτα. As Hackforth points out, Heraclitus’ examples of change between opposites include ‘“waking and sleeping” alongside of “living and dead”’, two of the key pairs in the ‘argument from opposites’. Another close analogue is found in Anaxagoras: πᾶς γὰρ ἄν ἐκ μὴ τριχὸς γένοιτο θριξ καὶ σάρξ ἐκ μὴ σαρκός; Here he argues against generation from opposites, once again using pairs of opposites and similar

83 See e.g. Heraclit. B88, B10, and B67 (on interconnected opposite processes); B51 (on balance); B80 and B53 (on the necessity and continuity of change) and cf. Gallop, 1975, 110: ‘The examples of complementary processes have a Heraclitean ring about them’. Cf. e.g. Emped. B17 (on the changeless cycle of birth into death).
84 See Meliss. B8.
85 E.g. *Phd.* 72a4-6: ὁμολογεῖται ἢμιν καὶ ταύτῃ τοῖς ζῶοις ἐκ τῶν τεθνηκόν χειρότερα οὐδὲν ἦττον ἢ τοῖς τεθνηκόν ἐκ τῶν ζῶοις.
86 Heraclit. B88.
87 Hackforth, 1955, 63-4.
terminology. In general, Plato therefore seems to incorporate elements of Presocratic style to challenge and supplant their ideas on change between opposites.

The case is similar with Plato's γλύγνομαι which departs from a conventional notion of γλύγνομαι as 'coming-into-being' from nothing. In the 'argument from opposites' γλύγνομαι represents a process of transition between opposites in entities such as animals, plants, and the soul, and the argument relies upon the existence of a continuous underlying entity in which these changes take place. Empedocles has likewise used γλύγνομαι to describe cyclical change between opposites, making clear that nothing ever comes into being to join the opposites, and that the opposites never perish.89

It is Empedocles' novel usage of γλυνεσθαι to which the Phaedo example comes closest. Nevertheless, despite apparent similarities, especially between Empedocles' theory of change and the 'argument from opposites', Plato goes on to show that change between opposites is limited to particulars and that for change to take place an entirely different ontological category is necessary: the Forms, which could never undergo such a process. This, then, bears similarities to the appropriation and rejection of generic models in the 'apology', although here one needs to go beyond the immediate context (i.e. the 'argument from opposites') to understand the reasons for rejection of the model.

6.3.3 Ramifications for the dialogue as a whole

In terms of its wider context, the 'argument from opposites' is clearly important. Not only does it explicitly introduce the theme of opposites which will be significant throughout the dialogue,90 but it is depicted as just one stage of the proof of the soul's immortality, together with the recollection argument and others.91 In addition,

---

89 Emp.B17.27-35. He also attacks man's belief in generation from nothing or absolute destruction, using and even criticizing the conventional use of γλυνεσθαι, καταδιψοκειν, and ἐξόλυσθαι: Emp.B11 and B9. Cf. B8, where he claims that there is no birth (φύως) or death (θάνατος), although, as KRS, 292, points out, he uses cognates of these terms, e.g. in B17, to describe change resulting from the coming together and separation of the elements. Cf. also Anaxag.B17.

90 To a certain extent, this picks up on its implicit introduction as a theme in the 'apology' and perhaps even earlier. See e.g. 60b3-c7.

91 See e.g. 77c6-d5, which explicitly links the arguments 'from opposites' and 'from recollection'.

Chapter 6
it furthers the conception of death established in the ‘apology’ by presenting life and death as opposite transitional processes of ‘embodiment’ and ‘disembodiment’.

In structural/stylistic terms the ‘argument from opposites’ can be seen to start a progression of arguments. It deals with transition between opposites in sensibles, reflected in the even reciprocity of the ἐξ ἐλάττωνος δυτος πρώτερον ἐπείτα μείζον γιγνεσθαι and ἐκ μείζονος δυτος πρώτερον ἄτερον ἐλαττον γενήσεται structures. Nevertheless, the case of the soul suggests that existence is not limited to the sensible world and, as the dialogue continues, it emerges that there is a higher ontological category, amongst which such transitions could never take place. A proper formulation of the relation between two levels is essential to proving the immortality of the soul and this is gradually provided in stages within the four arguments.

Hence the ‘recollection’ argument clearly shows that there is a type of being distinct from sensibles,92 towards which the imperfect sensibles aspire and in comparison with which they are deficient. The evaluative language describing the relationship between sensibles and Forms, consisting of terms like ἐνδεεστέρως (74e4, 75a3 etc.) and φαυλότερος (74e1, 75b8 etc.), establishes an ontological hierarchy and stresses the Forms’ priority. In the ‘affinity’ argument, differences between the two levels are clarified, with detailed descriptions of the contrasting qualities inherent in the two types of ‘being’. Finally, the ‘second sailing’ brings together all these aspects to show how the qualities of the Forms allow them to cause the process of change on the level of particulars. Thus, one could see the ‘argument from opposites’ as a necessary step in an argumentative process leading up to a clearer understanding of the two ontological levels, their respective characteristics, their relationship with each other, and how the soul fits into this scheme.93


93 Rowe, 1991b, also sketches the connections between these arguments. For Rowe the connection hinges primarily on their being a demonstration of philosophy in practice. Contrary to my reading, he sees the ‘second sailing’ as the only truly important/correct argument, whereas the argument ‘from opposites’ and ‘from affinity’ are taken as deliberately flawed, so that, in terms of content, only the ‘recollection argument’, actually makes any constructive contribution.
6.4 The relationship of the ‘apology and argument from opposites’

6.4.1 Stylistic differences between the two passages

Many of the specific differences between the ‘apology’ and ‘argument from opposites’ are clear from the foregoing analyses, and can be summed up by their classification in terms (respectively) of ‘nexus of associations’ and ‘verbal minimalism’. Along with this there is the widespread use of normative terms in the former as compared to the latter, where they are restricted to very occasional words describing the status of a particular point, such as ἀδίκως (72a11), or the use of χείρων/ήμελνων and δικαιότερος/ἀδικώτερος as oppositional pairs to exemplify the principle of generation of opposites. The differing quantity of normative terms also enhances the impression that the style of the ‘apology’ draws attention to certain qualities, while the ‘argument from opposites’ focuses on process and structure, as opposed to the characteristics of entities undergoing this process.

This difference is encapsulated in their claims to comprehensive applicability. In the ‘apology’ the frequently repeated πῶς shows that φρώνησις should govern and be the goal of all actions, as well as contributing a further reason for its normativity. In this way, it is used to establish a characteristic of a central single phenomenon. By contrast, the ‘argument from opposites’ derives an impression of comprehensiveness explicitly from the repetition of πῶς in περὶ πάντων ἵδωμεν ἃρ’ οὕτωσι γνεῖται πάντα (70d9-e1), as well as from the broad range and scope of examples given to demonstrate the principle of generation of ‘opposites from opposites’. So the latter describes a principle applicable to all entities of a certain kind, as opposed to the former’s single phenomenon with universal value.

94 Rowe, 1993b, 159ff. minimises the differences between these two sections, claiming the distinction between them is not ‘hard and fast’ but simply constituted by the different proportions in the mixed ‘logic and rhetoric’ which they contain. Yet, as I have shown, the very considerable stylistic differences between them outweigh any similarities and should not be overlooked. Moreover, conventional terms like ‘rhetorical’ or ‘logical’, though useful in some respects, are too limited and laden with presuppositions to explain fully the function of style within the argumentative structure of these passages. Cf. Rowe, 1991b, 170. Here, discussing the same passage, he suggests that Socrates, Simmias, and Cebes, clearly do not see the ‘apology’ as ‘rhetorical rather than philosophical’ because it ‘merges seamlessly [italics mine] into, and provides the starting-point for, the arguments for immortality that follow’.
6.4.2 The status of the arguments

‘Philosophical’ style?

Without a doubt the ‘argument from opposites’ comes far closer to the conventional style of modern ‘analytic’ philosophical writing which I discussed in my Introduction and which, stereotypically, tends towards the type of simple, ‘neutral’, prose favoured by the sciences. Points are set out in clearly demarcated steps, accompanied by an absence of variation combined with repetition of structure and language, almost leading to technicalisation. In addition a wide variety of different spheres are reduced to one common process. The impression of neutrality is furthered by the absence of normative terminology, except insofar as it is applied to method, resembling the way modern philosophical writing reflects a drive towards scientific objectivity.

Up to a point, such practices can be traced back to Aristotle, both in terms of his formalisation of argument and the style of his extant writings, and they present a marked contrast with the stylistic features of the ‘apology’. Prier’s contrast between Aristotle’s philosophy and the ‘symbolic’ method of certain Presocratics can perhaps be seen to reflect some of these differences:

The progressive or directional relationships by which the former [i.e. Aristotle] defines his world stand out in sharp contrast to the essentially symbolic and structural “premises” the earlier period observed at all levels of experience. The difference in “method”, of course, is the most striking. Aristotle created his own and forced it upon language, elevating particularly sympathetic patterns to the level of “reality” and suppressing, or more often discounting, vast areas of experience as untenable. The pre-Socratics, on the other hand, came to language and its natural symbolic functions in a much more direct and comprehensive manner.

While this above account presents far too restrictive a picture of Aristotelian philosophy, it is interesting in its depiction of the historical development of

---

95 Although the idea that any writing can have neutrality is, of course, highly controversial.
96 E.g. ethical and physical: δικαίωτερος (71a7) and βραχύτερος (71a4). Cf. Nussbaum, 1990, 19. Cf. e.g. Rorty, 1979, 8: ‘analytic philosophy is still committed to the construction of a permanent, neutral framework for inquiry, and thus for all culture’.
97 On the drive towards objectivity and scientism in philosophy see e.g. Nagel, 1986, 3-8.
98 Prier, 1976, 149.
'philosophical style'. Yet, pace Prier,\(^99\) it seems that such features were already emerging in some Presocratics, so that even before Plato, they were clear characteristics of 'philosophical' style. Barnes talks about Melissus B7, for example, as 'a subtle and intricate piece of prose' which 'hangs together as a continuous logical progression' and employs many of the features classified above as typical of 'verbal minimalism'. Deichgräber identifies similar traits in Anaxagoras' 'Argumentationsstil' and Thesleff discusses the 'scientific style' in early Greek prose, found in certain Presocratic prose.\(^100\) Not only does the 'argument from opposites' engage with such thinkers on a broad thematic level, but also has very strong generic affiliations to their style of writing.

Margolis, discussing Plato's place in the 'emergence of philosophy' says that, although the dialogues contain 'no syllogisms' they nevertheless exhibit:

\[
\ldots \text{a clear sense of an order of formal argument that Socrates guards that is on its way to syllogistic form, that is entirely accessible to a largely pre-literate but intelligent audience. It is a form of argument that schematizes and regularizes the very form of conversational argument, without disturbing its spontaneity at all}.\(^{101}\)
\]

This suggests that Plato's dialogue form creates quasi-formalisable argument, an idea fitting in with my earlier comments about the suitability of the 'short question and answer' mode for dividing a passage into clearly demarcated logical steps.

Margolis' characterisation seems an apt description of the 'argument from opposites', and would allow us to see Plato as a final transitional stage in the historical development of Aristotelian syllogistic and 'philosophical style'.\(^{102}\) Many see this as a more or less teleological progression towards a language suitable for

\(^{99}\) Prier, 1976, 149: 'The "pre-Socratics" represent a culmination and reflection of language that must be traced back into the roots of Greek and not ahead into the narrowly linear and causal modes of Aristotle'.

\(^{100}\) Deichgräber, 1933, 353; Thesleff, 1966. Cf. Matson, 1983, on Presocratic writing as 'impersonal and objective', although he is not making a specifically stylistic characterisation.

\(^{101}\) Margolis, 1983, 240-1.

\(^{102}\) Cf. e.g. Havelock, 1983, 62, on phthora and genesis: 'but the abstraction phthora, 'destruction', used philosophically in antithesis to genesis, is Platonic, and as such became naturalized...within the Aristotelian vocabulary'.

Chapter 6 179
For example, in his discussion of Melissus, whom he views as a key innovator in the development of such a style, Barnes states:

Whatever the philosophical merits of Melissus' arguments may be, his linguistic achievement is surely noteworthy: Parmenides' verses are indeed as rigorously articulated as anything Melissus wrote; but, for all that, the lines of his thought often remain dark and obscure; Melissus freed Eleatic metaphysics from the straitjacket of bad verse, and in doing so he invented a prose style uniquely adapted to the ends of logical and philosophical thought.

Such a progression, as I have said, is often seen as culminating in Arisotelian style. Yet it is difficult to assign a place to Plato, given passages such as the 'argument from opposites', which apparently fit into this account, and those like the 'apology' which are clearly very different.

6.4.3 How 'good' is the 'argument from opposites'?

If we accept the idea of the teleological development of an 'ideal' philosophical style, the 'argument from opposites' may seem of more philosophical value than the 'apology', a view no doubt reflected in the greater attention it receives in contemporary philosophical accounts of the dialogue. So can the 'argument from opposites' be seen to fit into this stylistic movement and do its differences from the 'apology' reflect a higher value?

The 'argument from opposites' is never explicitly criticised or rejected within the dialogue and, as I have indicated above, plays an important role in the dialogue as a whole. Nevertheless, it is usually regarded as weak, so much so that it has been taken as an intentional example of flawed argumentation. Most significantly, it is

103 See e.g. Havelock, 1983, passim and 29, on the development of 'linguistic counters' such as verbalised concepts of matter, body, and change etc., which are 'shared by all philosophers'. From their 'original Homeric, imagistic reference and their original narrativistic context' these moved 'into the thought world of conceptual science' with the Presocratics, although: 'in their philosophical or conceptual sense, none of them occurs in Greek literature before the end of the fifth century B.C. and some of them come into existence only in definitions supplied by Plato before being used by Aristotle'. Cf. also e.g. Margolis, 1983.

104 Barnes, 1983, 96.

105 Cf. e.g. Gallop, 1982, 219, who concedes 'nor is the Argument [i.e. 'from opposites] ever directly attacked', even though he suggests that certain of the interlocutors' comments imply its unsatisfactoriness.

106 See e.g. Rowe, 1991b, 172: 'that he [i.e. Plato] knew there was something wrong with it [i.e. 'the argument from opposites'] is...reasonably well established. It is here, perhaps, as a deliberately
accused of confusing contraries with contradictories and mistakenly assuming that
the former are necessarily subject to the same processes as the latter.\textsuperscript{107} For it seems
that the principle of generation of opposites from opposites is only true for
contradictories; for contraries, generation could take place from something else (from
some \textit{tertium quid}). Socrates, however, presents the principle as applicable to being
alive and being dead which, commentators claim, are only contraries.\textsuperscript{108}

Yet, instances of things which can be neither dead nor alive, given by commentators
as counter-examples to Socrates’ point, actually raise no serious difficulties for the
argument. Bostock, for example, suggests that entities such as stones and his ‘first
grandchild’ are neither dead nor alive.\textsuperscript{109} Yet, neither of these examples are relevant
to the ‘argument from opposites’. Firstly, it is clearly not involved with inanimate
objects such as stones; its scope is explicit: $\kappa\alpha\iota\sigma\mu\lambda\lambda\beta\delta\eta\nu\iota\sigma\alpha\pi\epsilon\rho\varepsilon\iota\varepsilon\iota\varepsilon\iota\nu$ $\pi\epsilon\iota\lambda\iota\omega\mu\nu\iota\nu\iota\partial\iota\partial$ $\alpha'\iota\sigma\tau\omega\iota\varsigma\iota\gamma\iota\nu\nu\tau\iota\sigma\iota$ $\pi\alpha\tau\iota\alpha$ (70d9-e1).\textsuperscript{110} Moreover, the
hypothetical unborn grandchild either does not exist and so is not an individual who
$\varepsilon\chi\iota\varepsilon$ $\gamma\iota\varepsilon\iota\sigma\iota\nu$, for whom this argument would be applicable, or is a soul, awaiting
reincarnation ($\tau\delta$ $\alpha\nu\alpha\beta\iota\lambda\omega\kappa\varepsilon\iota\sigma\sigma\varsigma$ $b$) in the form of Bostock’s grandchild, and
therefore in a state of being dead.

If we see the terms ‘life’ and ‘death’ as states which occur in the soul, and
correspond to the soul being inside or outside of the body, there is no in-between
state. The soul will either be in or out of a body and it seems that ‘life’ and ‘death’
are, unproblematically, both ‘mutually exclusive and jointly exhaustive’, thus
satisfying the criteria required of a contradictory.\textsuperscript{111} So even if the ‘argument from

\textsuperscript{107} E. g. Bostock, 1986, 52ff.; Rowe, 1993a, 156; Gallop, 1975, 107ff.
\textsuperscript{108} Cf. e. g. Bostock, 1986, 52: ‘The most obvious fault with this argument is that its second premise is
false. We have noted that if the first premise is to be true, then the relevant kind of opposites must be
properties that are contradictories of one another, and the properties of being alive and dead are not
contradictories: some things are neither alive nor dead’.
\textsuperscript{109} Bostock, 1986, 52.
\textsuperscript{110} At this point in the argument alone, it seems that $\gamma\iota\varepsilon\iota\sigma\iota\nu$ is being used in the conventional sense
to refer to ‘birth’, since the examples given of those things which have $\gamma\iota\varepsilon\iota\sigma\iota\nu$ are men, animals, and
plants. One might argue that this does not, strictly speaking, include the soul, since the argument
itself presents the soul as having permanent existence, and the cyclical point implies that this must
always have been the case. Nevertheless the soul can, in a certain sense, be said to have ‘birth’ insofar
as it enters the human body at the time of birth.
\textsuperscript{111} For this definition of contradictories, see Gallop, 1982, 213.
The kinds of criticism detailed above have usually come about because the notion of things like life, death, properties, particulars, and the soul, appealed to within the argument are not yet clearly established. Yet this in itself indicates an important point about the argument's omissions. For, in order for the argument to be both properly understood and defended, it is necessary to have a detailed understanding of the ontology and qualities of the entities involved in the process it describes. A way in which this is suggested is the 'anonymous objection' within the second sailing, where an unnamed interlocutor questions Socrates' assertion that opposites 'in us' can never become their opposites, thinking that it contravenes the 'argument from opposites' (102e6-103a10). Socrates responds by pointing out that this earlier argument concerned opposite πράγματα, whereas his new principle applies to Forms (103b1-c4). However, the 'argument from opposites' simply specified that all generated things come to be from opposites, and it is only when taken together with the rest of the dialogue, which describes the different ontological levels and their qualities, that the type of entities to which the 'opposites from opposites' principle applies is made clear and justified.

So it seems that, while the 'argument from opposites' is not fallacious, it cannot be clearly understood or defended in isolation, but only against the background of distinct ontological categories, their qualities and values, which is built up

---

112 One could argue that this still does not exempt the earlier examples, such as 'larger/smaller' and stronger/weaker' from the accusation that they are relations rather than properties (see e.g. Hackforth, 1955, 64) and that, even if we take them to be the properties 'large' and 'small', it is certainly possible for something to have neither of these qualities. However, if we look ahead to Socrates' analysis of 'larger' and 'smaller' at 102b3ff., we can see that these are viewed in terms of one of a pair of contradictory property-instances being present in the individual. For, if Simmias is larger than Socrates, this is because he has largeness in him. If Socrates were to become larger than Simmias, we can assume, that smallness would then enter Simmias, meaning that largeness could no longer remain. It seems that either one or other of these property-instances must be present in the individual and, as I will argue below, in Ch.7, they do not vary by degree. On this analysis, being 'larger' and 'smaller' can be seen as contradictories. Of course, one might see the restriction of scope as, in itself, leading to further questions about the principle's applicability to soul.

113 Cf. e.g. Gallop, 1975, 107: 'The scope of "all things subject to coming-to-be" (d9) is not very clear...'.

Chapter 6 182
throughout the dialogue, as well as the definition of death as the 'separation of the soul from the body' established in the 'apology'. Arguments such as the 'apology', the 'affinity argument' (usually judged to be the weakest argument in the *Phaedo*), and the 'second sailing', all contribute to the understanding of distinctions between Forms and particulars, their inherent qualities, evaluative status, and relationship to each other, as well as the place of soul within this opposition.

By contrast, in its style of 'verbal minimalism', the 'argument from opposites' foregrounded the structure of a process, but gave no clear description of the type of entities to which it is applicable, apart from specifying all 'generated things'. Even though its style makes it closer to ideals of 'philosophical argument' and suggests comprehensiveness, in order to be understood fully it depends upon other arguments such as the 'apology' or 'affinity argument', so as to clarify its processes and possible problems.

6.5 Conclusion

Plato's outline of the process of 'opposites from opposites' imitates certain aspects of Presocratic style which can be seen to be part of a stylistic movement towards Aristotelian style. These kinds of features are now treated as paradigmatic of philosophical argument. However, far from suggesting that such a style occupies some privileged philosophical status, the rest of the dialogue shows that it does not consider the nature of the entities involved and therefore cannot be fully understood independently.

Both the 'apology' and the 'argument from opposites' can be seen to make important contributions to the dialogue. The latter contains insights into particular processes, attained through 'verbal minimalism', but is dependent on the antecedent 'apology'.

---

114 See e.g., Rowe, 1991b, 163 [the affinity argument] 'is by common consent, one of the weakest'. Elton, 1997, argues that the 'affinity argument' is intended to show 'the pitfalls of analogical argument' (316) and that Simmias' later criticisms of his own 'harmony' analogy (92c11ff.) are intended to imply Plato's dissatisfaction with this type of argument (314ff.). However, Socrates' response to Simmias shows that Simmias' argument fails because it does not account for the qualities and values of soul, the very points on which the 'affinity argument' is based. Cf. Bostock, 1986, 119-121.
and the understanding of qualities and values which is built up within its ‘nexus of associations’. Moreover, far from the ‘apology’ being less important than the ‘argument from opposites’, the latter actually appears to fall within the scope of the former. For the ‘apology’ is a higher-order argument concerning the nature of philosophy itself, while the ‘argument from opposites’ is a lower order enquiry into a particular philosophical principle. In addition, the ‘apology’ clearly sets out an opposition between the different levels of being, and shows how philosophy fits into this view, while the argument from opposites implicitly relies on this ontological divide, but does not discuss it.

This therefore suggests not only the importance of both these sections, but also the need for a holistic reading of the dialogue which accounts for their relationship to each other and to the other parts of the text. In conclusion, it seems that the transition to the stylistic mode of the ‘argument from opposites’ does not suggest that the style of the latter is more valuable and ‘philosophical’. Instead, it presents a movement between two necessary and complementary types of philosophical discourse.
Little is ever made of the detailed critique which follows these words, and it seems that for most readers these lines represent the limit of Anaxagoras' particular importance in the *Phaedo*.\(^1\) Seen as just another physicist whose material causes fail to explain causation, his special significance here is felt to stem from his conception, albeit fallacious, of causal νοῦς which, in the context of causation, can be usefully appropriated and reinterpreted by Plato. By contrast, I aim to show that Anaxagoras' presence and importance in the *Phaedo* is far greater and more complex than has been noticed, and extends beyond sections where it is clearly and explicitly signposted.

In the previous chapter we saw how the generic background of particular features can be bound up with certain arguments or points of view. For example, antitheses in oratory often oppose true to false or moral to immoral, while ambiguous terms sometimes represent alternative moral conceptions. By including these features in a system incompatible with their usual underlying viewpoint, Plato appropriates aspects of their function, while simultaneously challenging and replacing the beliefs with which they are conventionally associated.

In this chapter I return to my earlier Passage III in order to explore Plato's strategy for using generic affiliations in a more detailed, complex, and specific context. That passage had the clearest generic affiliations of those discussed, with a varied range of allusions to Anaxagoras and Presocratic prose writers, which pass without comment in the secondary literature. I suggest that by appropriating Anaxagorean language

---

\(^1\) Although there are some notable exceptions: e.g. Sedley, 1989, who shows that there is a point by point correspondence between the aspects of cosmology dealt with in and the features of the 'true earth' in the *Phaedo* myth; and Ooms Renard, 1999, 113ff., who takes the details of this passage as being central to the Platonic theory of explanation.
through allusion, sometimes clear, sometimes subtle, Plato mounts a far more complex and extensive attack against Anaxagoras than has been acknowledged in interpretations of the dialogue. Moreover, the purpose of such attacks is not only to dismantle, but also to displace his opponent's system, and so provide Plato with a basis on which to formulate and establish central features of his own philosophy.

In the first section of this chapter I shall consider the use of the Anaxagorean quotation in the 'argument from opposites' and how this sets the scene for the *Phaedo* 's ongoing concern with his ideas. I then move onto the famous passage in Socrates' intellectual autobiography where he recounts his expectations and ensuing disappointment when reading Anaxagoras. This passage, 97b8-99d2, is the central focus of this chapter, and will from now on be referred to as the 'Anaxagoras episode'. The normal interpretation of the passage is that Socrates' expectation of finding normativity in Anaxagorean cosmology stems from Anaxagoras' inclusion of the term νοός, together with Socrates' belief in the integral connection between goodness and the intellect.² Lennox, for example, states that Socrates' 'presupposition' depends on 'the conceptual link in his thinking between intelligent agency and the explanatory effect of goodness'.³ Accordingly, allusion to Anaxagoras' view of νοός as an ordering cosmological force allows Plato a fortuitous opportunity to connect physics with the intellect and thereby introduce the notion of teleological causation, while Anaxagoras himself is rejected simply because he fails to recognise and take into account the normativity of νοός.

Given that, as we have seen, the *Phaedo* 's idea of the intellect as moral is usually felt to stem from an unargued claim of its association with virtue made in the 'apology', the traditional reading of the 'Anaxagoras episode' is unsurprising. If this reading is correct, the Anaxagorean catchphrase is used merely to extend this unproven assumption, and the morality of νοός paves the way for a notion of teleological causation which itself seems problematically detached from the rest of the dialogue's argument. Contrary to such an interpretation I shall argue that the source of the normativity which Socrates attributes to Anaxagoras' principle actually derives from

---
² Cf. 6.2.4, above.
the idea of universal order, διακοσμῶν τε καὶ πάντων αἱτίος, rather than νοῦς. By then presenting νοῦς as the structure which orders the cosmos and showing why this is so, Plato is not just relying on νοῦς' normativity but, as with φρόνησις in the 'apology', actually mounting an argument for its normativity which could be seen as an attempt to validate the desired connection of epistemology, ethics, physics, and metaphysics, posited throughout the dialogue. Following this, I outline the significance of the rest of the 'Anaxagoras episode', explaining the detail and importance of stylistic allusion both to Anaxagoras himself and to Presocratic prose in general.

The final section argues that there is an underlying engagement with Anaxagoras in the sections of the dialogue before and after the 'Anaxagoras episode', offering a way to overcome the puzzling discontinuity which this episode apparently creates. I suggest that, even after this episode, Anaxagoras' ideas are still at issue and that their absolute rejection only comes with Socrates' ultimate denial that pure opposites can ever tolerate each other's presence.

### 7.1.1 What is the relevance of Anaxagoras for the Phaedo?

As a preliminary to the more detailed account to follow, I shall briefly outline some of the reasons why Anaxagoras might be singled out as especially relevant to ideas discussed in the *Phaedo*. The first of these, as shown by the 'Anaxagoras episode', must surely be his view of νοῦς as the primary cause of universal order. Indeed, how could such a notion fail to be attractive to the *Phaedo*'s Socrates, a philosopher who claims that the best life is attained through the pure rationality of the soul free from bodily disturbances? It is in his role as the innovative proponent of the intelligent universe, that Anaxagoras is also referred to elsewhere in Plato. Also of relevance are Anaxagoras' views on the opposites. For, despite their centrality to much Presocratic physics, it is Anaxagoras himself who explicitly states

---

4 This will be discussed further below, 194ff. and passim. Cf. also Lennox, 1985, 197 and 200.
5 Laws967bff. Cf. Philb.30d.
their inseparability. This idea bears some superficial similarities to the Phaedo’s ‘compresence of opposites’ in sensible particulars: that is, that ‘some properties, notably relations and values, always occur in an individual particular along with their opposites’. However, Anaxagoras is not simply talking about the compresence of qualified opposites in particulars, but opposites in themselves, and this is directly opposed to the Phaedo’s conception of mutually exclusive pure and distinct opposites.

Furthermore, Anaxagoras also proposed ‘like into like’ generation, a distinctive viewpoint, given that even his fellow believers in change, such as Heraclitus and Empedocles, saw generation as preceding from opposites to opposites. Yet, notwithstanding superficial similarities to the ‘like into like’ notion of causation in the Phaedo’s ‘final argument’, for Socrates causation actually depends on a notion which contradicts a fundamental Anaxagorean principle, the absolute separateness of true opposites.

The way in which Anaxagoras’ positions are both similar and oppositional to those of the Phaedo’s Socrates is indicative of his role in this dialogue: on the one hand, a thinker whose ideas are in certain ways attractive to Socrates; on the other, one whose foundational principles seem to be at odds with the basic premises on which Socrates’ arguments depend.

In keeping with this characterisation is the way Anaxagorean physics appears to tend towards a mind/matter duality, in which the primary entity, νοῦς, is distinguished by its absolute purity, so that it seems to anticipate the Phaedo’s metaphysical dualism of Forms and particulars. Nevertheless, with both νοῦς and matter corporeal,

---

6 Anaxag. B6. Vlastos, 1974, 473, says that, although the belief in the ‘commixture’ of opposites was the ‘traditional assumption’, it was Anaxagoras who stated it explicitly. He suggests that Anaxagoras was responding to Empedocles’ direct challenge of this belief. However, cf. Lloyd, 1966, 81, for the opposite viewpoint.

7 See e.g. Phd. 74b7-9 and 102b3ff. This formulation is taken from McCabe, 1994, 25, and the term ‘compresence’ is often used within Platonic studies to denote the simultaneous presence of opposites within a particular. Cf. e.g. Owen, 1957, 175 and 177; Irwin, 1977, 9.

8 Anaxag. B12.

9 His description of what appears to be another parallel world in B4 might be seen to set a precedent for the other societies depicted in the Phaedo’s myth, which live on the earth, although outside of what we understand as the world.
Anaxagoras posits only one metaphysical level,\(^{10}\) while his principle of οὐκοόον πάντα also seems incompatible with dualism.\(^{11}\)

So, in spite of any apparent similarities, there is always Anaxagoras' fundamental οὐκοόον πάντα, a notion which Socrates could never accept and with which I shall begin my analysis.

### 7.2 Anaxagoras in the 'argument from opposites'

One of Socrates' arguments supporting the 'argument from opposites' is the view that one-way generation, which has no corresponding reversal, is impossible, since it would eventually result in all things reaching a certain state from which no chance of change existed. If the living were not generated from the dead, just as we see that the dead are generated from the living, Socrates says, then generation would cease.\(^{12}\)

For further clarification he adds two parallel arguments, one being a direct reference to Anaxagoras which includes the very opening words of his book:

καὶ εἴ συγκρίνοιτο μὲν πάντα, διακρίνοιτο δὲ μὴ, ταχὺ ἄν τὸ τοῦ 'Αναξαγόρου γεγονός εἶν, "'Ομοόο πάντα χρήματα." (Phd. 72c3-5)\(^{13}\)

Like the later 'Anaxagoras episode', Socrates' 'argument from opposites' is, as we saw in Chapter 6, suggestive of the views of a number of thinkers. Given the centrality of opposites in so much Presocratic physics this is unsurprising. Nevertheless, it is only Anaxagoras who is named and cited directly, establishing him as an important figure in the Phaedo. This is just one of a series of connected allusions to Anaxagoras, both implicit and explicit, and yet the significance and connectedness of these allusions is, as far as I am aware, unnoticed within the critical literature on the dialogue.

\(^{10}\) Cf. KRS, 365.


\(^{12}\) Phd. 72a11-b6.

\(^{13}\) Apart from the reversal of πάντα and χρήματα and the omission of ἦν, this is a direct quotation of Anaxag. B1 which, on the testimony of Simplicius, is generally assumed to be the opening of Anaxagoras' book. See e.g. Sider, 1981, 43.
How does Plato use Anaxagoras' words here and what further relevance does this have? As elsewhere, in his treatment of other thinkers, Plato takes a short programmatic statement detached from its original context as representative of Anaxagoras' views. He then inserts this representative statement into an argument based on the very impossibility of what Anaxagoras takes to be a self-evident and foundational metaphysical truth. For Anaxagoras, the phrase \( \delta \mu \omega \chi \rho \iota \mu \alpha \tau \alpha \ \pi \alpha \nu \tau \alpha \ \zeta \nu \) describes the primordial state, from which physical entities came into being, while \( \delta \mu \omega \ \pi \alpha \nu \tau \alpha \) is also used to describe the present state of the universe. In Plato the \( \zeta \nu \) has been dropped and \( \delta \mu \omega \chi \rho \iota \mu \alpha \tau \alpha \ \pi \alpha \nu \tau \alpha \) is the apodosis of a counterfactual conditional, whose self-evident impossibility is used to imply that the process which would lead to such a state, the unidirectional change of opposites, is also impossible. From this it can then be inferred that transition between opposites must be a two-way process.

To some degree Plato seems to be using not only Anaxagoras' words, but also his argumentative strategy, given that Plato's omission of \( \zeta \nu \) from Anaxagoras' programmatic statement is very similar to Anaxagoras' own treatment of Parmenides. By changing \( \zeta \sigma \tau \nu \) to \( \zeta \nu \) in Parmenides' \( \nu \nu \nu \zeta \sigma \tau \nu \ \delta \mu \omega \ \pi \alpha \nu \tau \alpha \ \ldots \), Anaxagoras appears to have given his cosmos an origin in the past whose existence Parmenides has just denied (\( \sigma \nu \delta \varepsilon \ \pi \sigma \tau \zeta \nu \ \zeta \nu \ \nu \nu \varepsilon \sigma \tau \alpha \iota \)). For Plato the removal of \( \zeta \nu \) is one way of challenging Anaxagoras' claim that \( \delta \mu \omega \chi \rho \iota \mu \alpha \tau \alpha \ \pi \alpha \nu \tau \alpha \) was a prior and original state and of criticising the temporal order of his cosmology. This is a good example of how Plato employs Anaxagoras' own verbal techniques to criticise him, while also constructing a new viewpoint.

So, although at first glance the fact that Socrates uses Anaxagoras' words to argue for his own case might seem to suggest some degree of support for Anaxagorean physics, the more closely the context is examined, the more evident it becomes that

---

14 Cf. *Th. 152a2-4; Soph. 237a8-9.*
17 Anaxag. B6: \( \alpha \lambda \lambda \delta \iota \omega \sigma \alpha \tau \nu \nu \chi \rho \varepsilon \iota \nu \nu \nu \), ka \( \nu \nu \nu \pi \alpha \nu \tau \alpha \ \delta \mu \omega \nu \).
18 Parm. B8.5-6.
19 In addition, Anaxagoras' substitution of the plural for Parmenides' singular also suggests a commitment to pluralism rather than monism. On Anaxagoras' use of Parmenides B8.5-6, see e.g. Schofield, 1980, 64; and Sider, 1981, 44.
these doctrines are in fact being seriously undermined. This is certainly the case with the συγκρίνω/ διακρίνω opposition here which, especially given the context, is extremely reminiscent of Anaxagorean terminology. Socrates follows Anaxagoras’ view of συγκρίνειν and διακρίνειν as complementary processes, when proposing that συγκρίνειν must be accompanied by the corresponding διακρίνειν. However, for Socrates, the result of pure συγκρίνειν would be ὁμοῦ πάντα χρήματα, since everything would be συγκρινόμενα. This is impossible, since nothing could arise from such a state. The argument represents a serious departure from Anaxagoras on two counts. First, for Anaxagoras ὁμοῦ χρήματα πάντα was the original state of the universe, while τὸ συγκρίνειν only came later, once νόης had initiated the first motion (περιχωρήσανε κινεῖν), from which the initial separation (τὸ ἀποκρίνειν) began. Yet the difference between Socrates and Anaxagoras concerns not only temporal priority, but also change. For Socrates, if all things were συγκρινόμενα the resultant condition would be ὁμοῦ πάντα χρήματα, which would preclude change, whereas for Anaxagoras ὁμοῦ χρήματα πάντα is the original state from which all change proceeds.

Not only was ὁμοῦ χρήματα πάντα the precursor to change in Anaxagorean physics, but ὁμοῦ πάντα also represents a present within which opposites are not separate and change occurs from ‘like into like’. There is then a sharp irony both in Plato’s use of ὁμοῦ χρήματα πάντα as the impossible state which precludes change, but also in the fact that this occurs within an argument to prove that in the process of generation opposites turn into opposites. For conversely, Anaxagorean generation proceeds from ὁμοῦ πάντα and revolves around a principle of ‘like into like’ and ‘predominance’.

Clearly ὁμοῦ χρήματα πάντα is incompatible with the Phaedo’s ‘argument from opposites’ (70c4-72e2). Moreover, because of the centrality of opposites, the

---

20 Phd.72c3-4. Amongst the extant fragments of the Presocratics the verbs διακρίνω and συγκρίνω and their cognates are used only by Anaxagoras.
21 See Anaxag.B4; 12; and 13; and Sider, 1981,103.
22 See Anaxag.B6; 8; and 10 respectively.
'argument from opposites' also prefigures the later analysis of causation, which will show why the falsity of δμοῦ πάντα is so important and has ramifications beyond this particular passage. As is clear from Anaxagoras B1 and elsewhere, he is concerned with a comprehensive physics, capable of explaining all generation and destruction. Likewise Plato's Socrates aims in the *Phaedo* at a comprehensive account of causation, with the Forms. Causation occurs through the presence of a Form, itself a pure, real, and distinct entity which cannot, under any circumstances, tolerate the presence of its opposite. Thus, for Socrates, separability is essential in order to have πάντα, rather than an indiscriminate and unchangeable mass, so that Anaxagoras' foundational premise can be seen as a paradox which posits the existence of πάντα, while precluding their essential distinctness by using δμοῦ. In this way, when Plato cites Anaxagoras in the former argument, he is also laying the groundwork for the later theories which will reveal why Anaxagoras' δμοῦ is so fundamentally false.

7.3 The 'Anaxagoras episode'

7.3.1 Conventional treatments of this passage

I now move on to the 'Anaxagoras episode' within Socrates' intellectual 'autobiography', in which he recounts his expectations of and reactions to reading Anaxagoras (97b8-99d2). As well as being an important part of the transition into the final arguments for the immortality of the soul it shows Socrates' retrospective reflection on his own intellectual development. Although Socrates often presents the views of others, giving either specific or vague sources, it is only here and in the *Apology* that he comments directly on his own development.

---

24 The importance of this connection is highlighted by the anonymous question at *Phd*. 103a4-10, which leads Socrates to an explicit comparison between opposite qualities in particulars (as in 'the argument from opposites') and the pure opposites themselves (*Phd*. 103a11-c2).
25 NB the recurrence of this phrase at *Phd*. 101e5 which, I will argue below, 7.5.2, is once again a specific allusion to Anaxagoras.
26 See n. 97.
27 Cf. e.g. Anaxag. B8 on the absolute inseparability of opposites.
According to its standard interpretation the passage could be summarised as demonstrating Plato’s aspirations to a teleological account of causation and his frustration with physicists like Anaxagoras, who explain phenomena in terms of physical prerequisites, but without reference to the value and so to the real cause of the occurrence. Although the importance of this passage is recognised, there has been little discussion of its details, and most of the debate surrounding it focuses on the question of whether Socrates’ teleological aspirations are relevant to the theories of the ‘final argument’. Thus, Lennox says that although these two sections share the theme of explanation, they nevertheless present ‘two radically different accounts of explanation’, so that ‘commentators have tended to polarize around two extreme positions’ by suggesting that the ‘teleological parenthesis is of no significance’ or that ‘teleological explanations’ are actually concealed with the ‘deuteros plous’.

The detailed commentaries on the ‘Anaxagoras episode’ itself are mainly concerned with identifying which Anaxagorean fragments contain the specific doctrines at issue or pointing out other possible sources, although their significance is not discussed. Neither this approach, nor assessments of its relevance for the ‘final argument’, do justice to the elaborate detail and complexity of this passage, which seem oddly superfluous if one follows the traditional interpretation. The challenge remains to account for the significance of its individual details.

Moreover, in addition to traditional questions about this passage’s relationship to the ‘final’ argument, there is also a puzzling discontinuity within its more immediate context. For although Socrates’ insistence on the importance of soul and rationality

---

29 Lennox, 1985, is an exception; along with certain others. See n.1, above.
30 Vlastos, 1973, for example, in his important and controversial article ‘Reasons and causes in the Phaedo’, rejects a teleological interpretation of the final argument and suggests that it describes relationships of logical entailment as opposed to causation. These ideas have been heavily contested, for example by Wiggins, 1986, who denies that the Forms themselves are causes, but supports a teleological view. Although everything is caused by the Good, this is not intelligible to mortals and can only be understood to a degree through its ‘intelligible determinations’, the Forms. Finally, in a recent article of 1998, Sedley restates the case for seeing the Forms as causes and as an ontological rather than epistemological category, having suggested in a 1989 article that the desired teleology actually manifests itself to a certain degree in the Phd.’s myth.
31 Lennox, 1985, 201-2. Although Lennox disputes both positions, he does present his own ideas as to why we should assume the relevance of teleology for the deuteros plous.
32 E.g. Rowe, 1993, 237-8; Burnet, 1911, 98; Geddes, 1863, 113f.; Loriaux, 1975, 82 and 85.
33 Cf. Ooms Renard, 1999, 115, who comments on the ‘pseudo-explanation’ at 98c5-d6: ‘Notice the extraordinary sophistication of this account, usually hurriedly summarised as “material”.’
would be likely to make a theory of causation based on \( \nuo\upsilon\varsigma \) seem significant and attractive, the ‘Anaxagoras episode’ is effectively sandwiched between two closely cohering sections, without obvious relevance to them. Lennox calls it ‘an apparently parenthetical discussion of Anaxagoras’ and says ‘the radical discontinuity between the Anaxagorean excursus and the rest of the exploration of the \( \alpha\nu\tau\iota\iota \) of generation and destruction is clear, and clearly self-conscious’.\(^{34}\) Immediately preceding this ‘Anaxagoras episode’ Socrates begins his autobiography with a discussion of various physical and mathematical theories, some of which might be associated with figures such as Empedocles and Alcmaeon, as well as Anaxagoras.\(^{35}\) This is followed by the ‘Anaxagoras episode’ which then leads into what Socrates calls his ‘second-sailing’. Beginning with the rejection of colour and shape as causes of beauty (100c10-e3), the ‘second-sailing’ then moves on to examples (100e8-101b8)\(^{36}\) which all relate back to first part of the autobiography (96d8-e4).\(^{37}\)

In this way, the Anaxagoras episode ostensibly stands apart from both its immediate and wider context, and seems to challenge its readers to uncover its place within the dialogue as a whole as well as the significance of its own argumentation.

### 7.3.2 The significance of \( \nuo\upsilon\varsigma \)

I propose that the key to much of the episode’s importance lies in fully understanding its concept of \( \nuo\upsilon\varsigma \). Until the closing moments the focus on \( \nuo\upsilon\varsigma \) draws the parts of this passage together, with all the varying causal explanations presented as correctly or incorrectly attributed to \( \nuo\upsilon\varsigma \). Moreover, \( \nuo\upsilon\varsigma \) also suggests a link with the rational soul, which has been such an important concept earlier in the dialogue.

We would do best to begin by pointing out and clarifying \( \nuo\upsilon\varsigma \)’s various roles here. The first can be seen within Socrates’ statement of Anaxagoras’ views: \( \nuo\upsilon\varsigma \varepsilon\sigma\tau\iota\upsilon\nu\varepsilon\).
Yet νόστς is not simply the cause of cosmological order, but has other important dimensions, which are revealed through the explanations themselves, as well as the puns on this term within the passage.

Socrates claims that his inference that a cosmic νόστς would work towards what is best led him to believe that he had found a teacher about the cause of realities κατὰ νόστν ἐμαυτῷ (97d7). Despite Burnet’s view that such a pun would be ‘frigid’, the way Socrates states his approval for Anaxagoras is usually taken to involve a pun on the Anaxagorean νόστς. Another very similar pun is then found when Socrates criticises Anaxagoras for positing spurious causes such as air and aether for the ordering of πράγματα: ὥσπερ ἄνδρα τῷ μὲν νῷ οὐδὲν χρώμενον (98b8). Even commentators who acknowledge these puns do not explain their significance. Yet such puns imply that Socrates is concerned with both the cosmic and individual human νόστς and is suggesting a possible link between them.

Correspondence between the cosmic and personal νόστς is an idea explored in a number of Platonic dialogues, and Plato’s inclusion of both in the discussion here also emerges when Socrates considers what constitutes the correct explanation for remaining in prison, beginning ὡσπερ ἄν εἰ τὰς λέγων ὧτι Ἐσκράτης πάντα ὅσα πράττει νῷ πράττει...(98c4). This shows that νόστς is to be seen as the instrument of moral judgement and also strengthens the connection between νόστς, representing individual rationality, and soul.

A further point, of crucial significance, comes from these ideas of νόστς as personal intellect. When Socrates uses νόστς in contexts such as those above, he suggests that it plays a part in the individual’s reasoning and decision making. By saying ταῦτα δὴ λογιζόμενος ἄσμενος ηὐρίκεναι ὑμῖν διδάσκαλον...κατὰ νόστν ἐμαυτῷ

38 Burnet, 1911, 104.
39 See e.g. Gallop, 1975, 174, who notices both puns and claims, contra Burnet, that they are ‘in keeping with Socrates’ ironical treatment of Anaxagoras. Cf. Sprague, 1994, 53; Rowe, 1993, 235; Geddes, 1863, 112.
40 E.g. T1.47b: ἵνα τὰς ἐν οὐρανῷ κατιδώτες τοῦ νοῦ περιόδους χρησάμεθα ἐπὶ τὰς περιφορᾶς τὰς τῆς παρ’ ἡμῖν διανοήσεως, ἐφυγενὲς ἐκεῖναις ὀφθασ... Cf. e.g. T1.30b; Philb.28d-30d, and Harte, 1999, 394, on this passage: ‘Socrate établit un parallèle entre l’intelligence humaine, couronnement du corps humain animé, et l’intelligence divine, couronnement encore plus glorieux du corps cosmique animé’.
he implies that the points he makes here are consistent with what he himself feels to be rational. Thus, if the term describing Socrates' personal reasoning, it should be manifest within the very process of reasoning in the passage as a whole, and can be further understood from analysing the composition of the argument. To put it another way, the term represents not only Socrates' topic of discussion, but also his thought processes, a clearer understanding of how it fulfills its causal role is also to be found within the way in which his argument is structured.

7.4 Style and based reasoning

Taking both content and structure of argument in this passage as being an indication of what does or does not involve, we can now move on to trace the particular contributions of the main types of argument. This is largely bound up with examining how Plato imitates his predecessors' style to demonstrate his criticisms and also to construct his own position. At some points the allusions and criticism are specifically aimed at Anaxagoras, while at others the style evokes a more general impression of the type of writing found in Presocratic prose. There are three main parts to my discussion, dealing with: repetition of key terms; repetition of certain syntactical, semantic, and lexical structures; and the possible allusiveness of Socrates' 'sitting' example (98c5-d6).

7.4.1 Key-word repetition

My first comments are on key-word repetition, which constitutes one element of Plato's argumentation. Such repetition is subtly reminiscent of Anaxagoras' own style and a related aspect of his argumentation (see Chapter 5). Much of his argument progresses through the restatement of key words along with the assertion

---

41 Cf. White, 1989, 160: "The dimension of mind that arranges and causes all things is in some sense consonant with the mind of Socrates himself". Apart from this point, White's arguments have little in common with mine.
of further characteristics and points, rather than using what we might recognise as patterns of inference and proof characteristic of argumentation.\textsuperscript{42} The nature and power of Anaxagoras' νοῦς is given as a self-evident assertion, then supported and strengthened through incantatory repetition.\textsuperscript{43}

As in Anaxagoras, the large amount of 'key-word' repetition in the Phaedo passage contributes to the emphasis and expansion of what Socrates himself presents as a self-evident truth: namely the integral connection of νοῦς, universal order, and the good. This is especially the case in the first part of the 'Anaxagoras episode', in which Socrates outlines his expectations of Anaxagoras' book (97b8-98b6). When compared to other parts of the Phaedo, the amount of 'key-word' repetition is exceptionally high, meaning that a few significant lexemes are repeated at numerous points throughout. Moreover, the general repetitiveness of the passage is further enhanced by the relatively small vocabulary used here.\textsuperscript{44}

The notable examples of key-word repetition in this passage are: νοῦς; κοσμέω and its compound διακοσμέω; πᾶς; αἴτιος and its cognates; and βέλτιστος/ἀμείνων. νοῦς, κοσμέω, αἴτιος, and πᾶς are also interconnected and all used in close conjunction.\textsuperscript{45}

Plato, like Anaxagoras, uses a nexus of significant words to transmit his ideas and includes certain Anaxagorean key-words along with some of his own. Although three of the repeated lexemes, νοῦς, κοσμέω, and πᾶς, are also prominent in Anaxagoras, the terms αἴτιος and its cognates along with βέλτιστος/ἀμείνων are a Platonic addition. Just like Anaxagoras, Socrates seems to rely on repetition of key-terms to make his central point.

The question of what legitimises the attribution of normative structure to νοῦς as a cause can be answered with reference to the very connection of νοῦς, κοσμέω, and

\textsuperscript{42} Cf. e.g. Schofield, 1980, 4-6.
\textsuperscript{43} E.g. Deichgräber, 1933, 353 and passim.
\textsuperscript{44} This passage's 'lexeme-token ratio' is 0.52 (see 4.1.2), significantly lower than in the others (four of the remaining passages have ratios ranging from 0.69-0.73, while the final ratio was 0.79), and indicates a lesser degree of lexemic variation.
\textsuperscript{45} E.g. 97c1-5.
πᾶς, which is so central to this passage and recalls Anaxagoras’ own πάντα διεκόσμησε νοῦς. For the Greeks, appears to have been a normative term, suggesting good order. A clear testimony to such usage is the beginning of Gorgias’ famous *Encomium of Helen*, where the term signifies something like ‘the good appropriate to each thing’:

κόσμος πόλει μὲν εὐανδρία, σώματι δὲ κάλλος, ψυχῇ δὲ σοφία, πράγματι δὲ ἄρετή, λόγῳ δὲ ἀλήθεια, τὰ δὲ ἐναντία τούτων ἀκοσμία.

For Plato κόσμος has a similar normative sense, representing a whole whose elements are arranged in the best possible way. For example, at *Philebus* 64b, having enumerated all the necessary elements for the mixture which constitutes the best life, Socrates call this κόσμος τις ἀσώματος ἄρξων καλῶς ἐμψυχού σώματος. According to Harte, the use of κόσμος here confirms ‘le parallèle implicite entre l’ordre cosmique et l’ordonnancement de la bonne âme humaine’. This suggests that, just as there was an association of cosmological and personal νοῦς in the *Phaedo* passage, so the use of κόσμος here might also be seen to evoke a connection which Plato sees between cosmological and human order.

---

48 Cf. McCabe, 1994, 68: ‘The [Socrates’] objective then is what we might call cosmic teleology - the thesis that the whole cosmos is tied together in a single structure; because it is structured, it is good’. The normativity of kosmein is also noted by Menn, 1995, 2: ‘to put things in order is to put each of them where it is best for it to be’. However, although not perfectly clear, Menn still seems to see νοῦς’ normativity as responsible for its ordering role, rather than vice versa, since he (2) says that ‘to know that S is P because of nous depends on knowing that it is best for S to be P, and indeed this dependence is analytic. Moreover, he later suggests (17) that Socrates’ reason for expecting Anaxagoras to give explanations in terms of the best is because (given the connection between nous, sophia, and phronesis): ‘from the beginning, when Plato considered the possibility of explanation through nous, he had intended nous as a virtue. This is presupposed in the *Phaedo*, in Socrates’ disappointment with Anaxagoras’.
49 Cf. Harte, 1999, 385 and *passim*; and Lennox, 1985, 217, on the *Timaeus*.
51 This goes against e.g. Lennox, 1985, 198-204, who sees normativity as stemming solely from νοῦς, while κόσμος is neutral, with the result that he talks about ‘a good κόσμος’, rather than simply κόσμος.
At other points, the normativity of κόσμος is retained, although its cosmological aspects are not mentioned. So, at Gorgias 506d-e, as part of the argument to prove that the temperate soul is good, Socrates claims that it is the κόσμος appropriate to each thing, which makes it good. Here the focus is the soul, although implements, bodies, and all living things are also mentioned as entities for which this principle is true. Similarly, at Republic 443e, achieving order (κοσμευόμενος) within the self is presented as one of the necessary steps towards becoming just.

Furthermore, the κόσμος which νοῦς confers is not localised, but universal, as is established and emphasised through the repetition of πάς in conjunction with κόσμος and νοῦς. Thus νοῦς brings universal normativity, and its essential connection with normativity extends throughout its complete sphere of activity. As the passage progresses, what it means for νοûς to play such a role will be clarified, which forms an important reason for νοûς’ suitability as an ordering principle in itself.

So, if it is universal order which implies normativity, perhaps we can offer a retranslation of the crucial, but ambiguous phrase τὸν γε νοῦν κοσμοδύντα πάντα κοσμεῖν καὶ ἐκαστὸν τιθέναι ταύτῃ ὁπῇ ἀν βέλτιστα ἑκαὴ (97c5-6), which is usually translated as something like ‘the mind in arranging things arranges everything and establishes each thing as it is best for it to be’. In this case the repetition of κοσμευόμενος seems puzzlingly tautological. If, however, we take the participle as causal, and the καὶ as epexegetic, this would then give us ‘mind, since it orders all things, orders insofar as it arranges each thing in whichever way would

52 Gorg. 506e: κόσμος τις ἀπά ἐγενόμενος ἐν ἐκαστῷ ὁ ἐκαστον οἰκεῖον ἀγαθὸν παρέχει ἐκαστὸν τῶν ἄτυχων. Cf. 504a2ff.
53 Gorg. 506d.
54 On the connection between κόσμος and virtue cf. also e.g. Chrm. 159b3; Phdr. 259b2.
56 It is important to include πάντα within the causal clause, since this makes clear that it is universal order which leads to the normative arrangement of each component contra e.g. Menn, 1995, 2, who translates the phrase: ‘nous, when it orders [kosmoun], orders all things and puts each one of them where it is best for it to be’.

Chapter 7 199
be best', a translation which makes sense of the double κοσμέω as well as clearly supporting the view that κοσμοῦτα πάντα is responsible for normativity.

What, then, of the key-words in the Platonic passage which are not used by Anaxagoras? Along with βελτιωτός/ ἀμείνων, the term αἰτιός and its cognates stands out from the other key-words within this passage as being distinctively non-Anaxagorean. From the way in which Plato both changes Anaxagoras’ πάντα διεκόσμησε νοὸς το νοὸς ἐστιν ὁ διακοσμῶν τε καὶ πάντων αἰτίος and appears to use αἰτίος interchangeably with κοσμέω, αἰτίος seems to be either integrally connected or synonymous with κοσμέω. So Plato appears to suggest that Anaxagoras’ use of κοσμέω commits him to the notion of αἰτία, while at the same time emphasising his failure to acknowledge this through the proliferation of αἰτίος-words in this passage as compared to their absence in Anaxagoras’ own works.

Once again, Plato subtly manipulates Anaxagoras’ language to show that, even if his words suggest correct inclinations, he failed to attain the truth. For if we take αἰτία to denote ‘reason’ or ‘cause’ it might initially seem that Anaxagoras himself made the connection between causation and order, since his νοὸς both established order and set in motion the processes necessary to change in the cosmos. Yet for Plato it will emerge from the ‘second sailing’ that the kind of order which is related to a cause (αἰτία) is one with two metaphysical levels, in which the absolute distinctness of primary entities is essential to their acting as causes. In Anaxagoras’ cosmos, however, there is a condition of ὅμοιον πάντα, in which all entities are composed of the same type of matter and, with the exception of νοὸς, there is no absolute separation. So Plato’s emphasis on αἰτία in his account of Anaxagoras seems to point to inconsistencies in the latter’s philosophy, since it suggests that Anaxagoras’ talk of universal order commits him to an account of causation which his physics

---

57 Alternatively, the causal sense of κοσμέω could still be retained even if καὶ was not taken to be exegetic, and would simply give the second part of the sentence as ‘orders and arranges each thing...’.
58 This translation also points to the fact that universal order implies the best position of each individual constituent, which will be shown below to be an important aspect of this concept here.
59 Cf. Menn, 1995, 2: ‘so long as Anaxagoras does not explain why the different material components of the world are in their proper order, he is making no real use of nous as a cause.
61 See p.219ff.
could never support. Even if it is implied by certain terminology, true αὐτίκα could never be a part of Anaxagorean physics.

This is made clearer within Socrates' account of the spurious causes given by Anaxagoras and the parallel examples in the passage which follows, where the keyword repetition of αἴτιος and its cognates continues. Here Socrates denies that Anaxagoras' airs, aethers, and waters, are causes (οὐδὲ πνας αἴτιας: 98b9) and says that the parallel cases give causes, but neglect to give the true causes (Phd. 98d6-e1) which Socrates then outlines.

Yet αἴτιος is not the only prominent term in the ‘Anaxagoras episode’ that is noticeably absent from Anaxagoras himself; the other significant example is βέλτιστος/ἀμείνων. Just as with αἴτιος, the implied connection between βέλτιστος/ἀμείνων and κοσμεῖω suggests that Anaxagoras' ideas about universal order must have been mistaken. For while they compelled him towards terminology which itself implies teleology, his physics itself made this impossible. This is also emphasised by the second part of the ‘Anaxagoras episode’ since βέλτιστος/ἀμείνων, which has dominated the previous passage, does not occur within the account of spurious causes (98b7-d8), and only reappears when Socrates outlines the true cause for his actions (98e2).

A final point to notice is that Plato has changed the aorist indicative of Anaxagoras' phrase, πάντα διεκόσμησε νόης, for a present participle in νοης ἔστιν ὁ διακόσμητος τε καὶ πάντων αἴτιος. In some ways, this play of tenses is reminiscent of his dropping of ἦν in the 'argument from opposites'. Here, however, the present participle perhaps represents Socrates' desire for a conception of νοης whose ordering role is constant.62

So, to conclude, it seems that Plato uses the Anaxagorean device of key-word repetition, in order to introduce and emphasise the essential interconnections between νοης, universal order, and normativity in causation, and to show their incompatibility

---

62 Cf. Loriaux, 1975, 77, who suggests that the use of the present participle suggests the stable and definitive role of νοης.

Chapter 7 201
with Anaxagorean physics, as well as strengthening the connection between cosmos and individual, both in terms of order and rationality.

7.4.2 'Argumentationsstil'

Another key aspect of style in this passage, as I pointed out in Chapter 5, is the widespread use of the 'Argumentationsstil' or 'scientific style', so characteristic of Anaxagoras and other Presocratic prose. This is especially so at the beginning (97b8-98b6), where Socrates outlines his philosophical expectations of Anaxagoras' book. Here, stylistic allusion is more general than with the key-word repetition, and seems reminiscent of Presocratic prose in general,\(^63\) rather than Anaxagoras exclusively.

The main feature of such a style, as I outlined in Chapters 4 and 5, is structural as well as lexemic repetition.\(^64\) Along with the syntactic continuity conferred by the indirect discourse, a strong degree of logical interconnectedness within the passage is accompanied by repetition of clause structure, on a semantic, syntactic, and formal level, and this results in a degree of stylistic continuity which is rare in the *Phaedo*. Semantically, there is a repeated pattern of a given cause or condition followed by reasoned inference. As a whole the passage is largely made up of conditionals or simple reported thought, preceded by a short phrase denoting cause, and these are also interspersed with a couple of explanatory γδρ clauses. Hypotaxis prevails, clauses are neither exceptionally long nor short, and the word order is unremarkable, appearing to reproduce the logical order of the train of thought. Moreover, while the passage's syntactic complexity differentiates it from the simple narrative sequentiality of historical prose narratives, its other features such as lack of variation also distinguish this stylistically from the periodic structure associated with Attic oratory.

These combined features foreground the structure, and bear many similarities to aspects of the Presocratic prose of Anaxagoras, Zeno, Melissus, and Diogenes of

\(^63\) Of course, some features are also shared with Presocratic verse writers. However, it is chiefly the conjunction of key features within prose which interests me here.

\(^64\) On key-word repetition and the general lack of lexemic variation, see n.44.
Apollonia. If the key-word repetition discussed above forged the necessary links between νοῦς, universal order, and normativity, it is the prominent structure of argumentation, which now demonstrates more clearly what the structure of this νοῦς comprises. In the 'peroration' Socrates gave various reasons for rationality's (φρόνησις) normativity and through key-word repetition he has suggested here that νοῦς’ ordering powers are another reason. As he then explains what would constitute an ordered explanation, he is simultaneously setting out patterns of νοῦς-based explanation and thus showing why this provides a suitable model for order.

The features of ‘Argumentationsstil’ in the ‘Anaxagoras episode’ do also differ from those in the Presocratics. For example, the type of conditionals found in Presocratic prose are almost exclusively counterfactuals, used to argue the impossibility of a premise in the protasis, by showing that the resultant apodosis depicts an impossible state of affairs. So, for instance, Anaxagoras argues ἐὰν γὰρ ἐφ' ἐαυτοῦ ἢν, ἀλλὰ τεῳ ἐμέμεικτο ἄλλῳ, μετείχεν οὖν ἀπάντων χρημάτων, ἐὶ ἐμέμεικτο τεῳ.65 The structure is similar to that of hypothetical inversion, common in oratory, in which the falsity of the state of affairs presented in the apodosis proves the falsity of the protasis. In all these cases the process of inference establishes the impossibility of the initial premise.66 In logical terms these conditionals can be seen as modus tollens arguments: if p then q; not q; therefore not p. We could analyse the Anaxagorean example as: if νοῦς was mixed with something it would share in all things; νοῦς does not share in all things; therefore νοῦς is not mixed with anything.

In the ‘Anaxagoras episode’, however, Socrates does not argue through counterfactual conditionals, but from protases taken to be true, to the truth of the apodoses: as in ἐὰν τοῦθ' οὕτως ἔχει [i.e. if νοῦς is the cause of all things]. τὸν γε νοῦν κοσμοῦντα πάντα κοσμεῖν καὶ ἐκαστὸν τιθέναι ταύτη ὑπὴ ἂν βέλτιστα ἔχει (97c4-6). Even in those cases which reveal Anaxagoras’ failings by implication, the structure of the conditionals is the same. So, in καὶ ἐὰν μέσῳ φαίνει ἐλναί αὐτήν, ἐπεκδηγήσεσθαι ὃς ἐμεινὸν ἢν αὐτήν ἐν μέσῳ ἐλναι

65 E.g. Anaxag.B12 Cf. e.g. Meliss.B8 and ZenoB2. For an analysis of this structure of conditional see Wakker, 1995, 154, who says that such a conditional, in which the implication goes from the apodosis to the protasis, is only to be found in argumentative patterns.

66 Even a rare example such as Meliss.B6, ἐὰν γὰρ ἐπειράτα ἐλη, ἐὰν ἐλη ἄν, the reason for this being the case is still presented in terms of a counterfactual: ἐὰν γὰρ δύο ἐλη, οὐκ ἄν δούσαι ἐπειρά ἐλη, ἄλλ' ἔχοι ἄν πείρατα πρὸς ἄλληλα.
Socrates argues that claiming [earth] to be in the middle implies an obligation to explain why it is better for it to be in the middle.

Unlike the Presocratics the underlying logical structure of Socrates' arguments is modus ponens: if $p$ then (should be) $q$; $p$; therefore (should be) $q$. My last example could then be analysed as follows: if he says that it is in the middle he [should] explain why it is better for it to be in the middle; he does explain why it is in the middle (implied); therefore he should explain why this is better.

Essentially, there is no substantial difference between the structure of the modus tollens and ponens arguments. Yet modus tollens, beginning with 'if $p$ then $q$', refutes $p$ through denial of $q$, while modus ponens takes the opposite approach, positing $p$ in order to argue for $q$. In this way, the former is more suited to functioning as an instrument of refutation, the latter more conducive to gradual elaboration of a larger system, by establishing rather than refuting propositions. The points which are accepted can be developed into a coherent system so that the structure of argument evokes the idea of a perfectly coherent system so important for the concept of ύσαν, order, and cause here.

However, there is also a further latent implication in the rhetoric of the modus ponens, which is that Anaxagoras did not in fact fulfil the obligations laid on him by the argument. When Socrates argues that, if Anaxagoras claimed that the earth was in the middle he should then explain why this position was better, we also know that there is an unspoken 'but he did not' in Socrates words. In this way it has similar force to rhetorical questions where the speaker asks whether the converse of a proposition is true, implicitly leaving no choice but to give the negative answer, and thus emphasising the truth of the proposition. Once again, then, Socrates is using the methods of Anaxagoras and other physicists, but subtly diverging, so as to refute their ideas while offering his own alternative.

---

67 It is only the first conditional (97c4) that does not involve a modal operator.
68 In most cases, moreover, the apodosis points not so much to some fact of the matter in the physical world, as to some obligation upon the person who would explain the physical world.
69 Although much of the sequence is implicit, Socrates' prescriptions for explanation of cosmological phenomena are general and it can be assumed that Anaxagoras was explaining something like the position of the moon, so that it is fairly safe to see the second and third stages of the modus ponens as implicit.
The main point here remains the stated connection of νοῦς, universal order, and the good. Argumentation then gives a series of further points showing the type of considerations to which a physical theory motivated by such a premise might lead. Investigation of generation and destruction will be physically comprehensive, since it covers all aspects of existence, activity or passivity (97c6-d1). This comprehensiveness will also extend to an evaluative level, being explained in terms of what is best, knowledge of which also entails knowledge of the inferior (97d1-5). Explanation should be in terms of cause and necessity, saying why a particular phenomenon is better (97e3-4), both in terms of actions and experiences (98a6-7).

For Socrates such a cause, it is implied, would provide a sufficient explanation of generation and destruction: καὶ εἷς μοι ταύτα ἀποφαίνοι, παρεσκευάσμην ὡς οὐκέτι ποθεσόμενος αἰτίας ἄλλο εἴδος (98a1-2). Finally, the explanation of cause is expected to outline not only the best for each individual thing, but also a common good, so that it seems that overall coherence should also form part of such a theory. Thus comprehensiveness involves not only the separate quality and actions of the individual thing, but also its place within the system as a whole, implying Socrates’ desire for a theory of causation which is holistic on a physical, evaluative, and epistemological level.

It seems, therefore, that universal order implies absolute coherence of all elements and brings together both the ethical and physical. Since the organisational principle of a cosmos is good, universal coherence will involve understanding the goodness of each thing, both as an individual and in relation to the other constituents. As shown above, νοῦς as the cause of universal order is understood on the basis of νοῦς (‘rationality’) in the individual. If we consider the model of rationality that is appealed to in the Phaedo, it is possible to see why νοῦς would be suitable as an organisational principle within the theory of causation outlined here.

In the Phaedo the real objects of intelligence are presented as a complete set of entities, which comprise all types, whether it be ethical, physical, or

---

70 See e.g. Phd.65d12-e1, where Socrates, having mentioned ‘absolute’ justice, beauty, and goodness, then says: λέγω δὲ περὶ πάντων, διὸν μεγέθους πέρι, ἴσιόν, ἵσαος, καὶ τῶν ἄλλων ἐν λόγῳ ἀπάντων τῆς οὐσίας ὁ τυγχάνει ἑκατόν δὲ; 75c10-d4; 77a2-5; 100c6.
mathematical. Yet the notion of rationality is also to be understood from the very reasoning processes which are used by Socrates, so that an argument like the ‘argument from affinity’, which groups entities according to their essential characteristics, can be seen to suggest that rationality involves understanding the relationship of elements to each other, as does the process of recognition of qualities described in the ‘recollection argument’. Consistency is a crucial part of the *Phaedo* and of the Platonic Socratic notion of rationality. Moreover, comprehensive understanding of physical processes also extends to the realm of sensibles, as is seen in the ‘argument from opposites’.

Along with general stylistic austerity, another characteristic both of Presocratic prose writing and the ‘Anaxagoraras episode’ is the abstract noun-form consisting of the definite article and a neuter adjective. For example, Anaxagoras himself talks about τὸ σμικρὸν and τὸ μέγα, and τὸν τε διερῶ καὶ τὸν ξηρῶ καὶ τὸν θερμοῦ καὶ τὸν ψυχρῶ καὶ τὸν λαμπροῦ καὶ τὸν ζωφεροῦ. In the *Phaedo* passage the number of instances of this noun-form is very high, all comprising either τὸ + various degrees of ἀγαθὸς or χείρον; words with a special significance in this context.

Given the context and allusiveness of this passage, the use of this noun-form does not seem coincidental. Yet, even if seen as an allusion to writers like Anaxagoras, its implications are fairly general. In the earlier prose such terms are often used to represent basic and general entities. So, for example, in Anaxagoras B12, a key point of the initial separation caused by νόθω is given in terms of separating ἀπὸ τε τοῦ ἀραιοῦ τὸ πυκνὸν καὶ ἀπὸ τοῦ ψυχροῦ τὸ θερμὸν etc., while in Melissus

---

71 Cf. the inclusion of all these spheres within the ‘final argument’ (see Chapter 8 p.228). Also cf. Ch.6 p.144 and *passim*, above, on the comprehensiveness and other features of *φρόνησις*.

72 See e.g. *Phd.* 75d9-e4.

73 See 8.8.1, and e.g *Gorg.* 481bff.; *Euthphr.* 11d, 15c; and Vlastos, 1983, 53ff. on consistency in the elenchus.

74 *Phd.* 70d7-e1: μὴ τοῖνυν κατ’ ἀνθρώπων, ἡ δ’ ὅς, σκόπει μόνον τοῦτό, εἰ βούλει ἔριον μαθεῖν, ἀλλὰ καὶ κατὰ ζῷων πάντων καὶ φυτῶν, καὶ συνήθειν διαφέρει ἔχει γένεσιν περὶ πάντων ἰδιομέν ἃ ἐστὶν καὶ ἐν γένεσιν πάντα.

75 Anaxag. B3 and 4 respectively. Cf. Webster, 1952-3, 24, who claims that, ‘in its full development’ this noun-form is found in ‘the early Hippocratic writings, Anaxagoras, and Thucydides’.

76 See Webster, 1952-3, 24, who says that this noun-form, as well as signifying ‘a particular member of a class’ was also used to represent: ‘any member of a class (and therefore all members), a standard member of a class (and therefore very nearly the quality by virtue of which it is a member of the class). Cf. also Lloyd, 1966, 81, n.1.
a process of change between opposites is represented as basic to our beliefs and is expressed similarly: δοκεῖ δὲ ἡμῖν τὸ τε θερμὸν ψυχρὸν γίνεσθαι καὶ τὸ ψυχρὸν θερμὸν etc. There is then a contrast between Presocratic texts, where normative terms like τὸ βέλτιστον play no part, and Socrates’ account, where they are central to causation and a basic and general element.

7.4.3 Complexity

A final, though imprecise, stylistic allusion can perhaps be seen in the next part of the ‘Anaxagoras episode’, where Socrates discusses Anaxagoras’ causes and presents purportedly parallel examples (98b7-d8). As shown above, ‘key-word’ repetition of ἀλήθος and its cognates ensures that causation clearly remains as the focus, even though ‘pseudo-causes’ are now being outlined. The most striking feature of this passage is the long and detailed physiological description of how Socrates is able to bend his legs and thus to sit (98c5-d6), offered as a ‘pseudo-explanation’ of his reasons for not escaping from prison. Although there are no close extant parallels, one might see Diogenes’ anatomical explanations in B6 as providing an example of the kind of detailed biological explanation to which Plato alludes. Specific features, like complementary pairs of biological components or processes, are found in both passages.

The main point of this Phaedo passage appears simply to be that such explanations are false because they offer an account of Socrates’ practical deliberation in terms of the material components necessary for his actions, rather than the true moral causes. The length and detail of the hypothetical explanation seems to add no more specific criteria to his criticism, but rather to ridicule the pseudo-complexity of his predecessors’ detailed physical theories, by means of humorous exaggeration. A useful model here may be Koestler’s analysis of satire (within his points on humour), in which a situation is projected into an exaggerated or alternative format, giving the

77 Meliss. B8.
78 Given Anaxagoras’ interest in anatomy and his influence on Diogenes, it is possible that he also wrote similar passages.
79 E.g. εἴ τὼν καὶ νεύρων (Phd.98c7); ἐπιτείνεσθαι καὶ ἀνίεσθαι (Phd.98d1); τὴν ἥπατιν καὶ τὴν σπλήναν καὶ ἦν τὸ δέρμα καὶ διὰ τῆς σαρκός (Diog.Apoll.B6). Cf. Appendix II p.281, below, on proliferation of anatomical pairs in early Hippocratic treatises.
incongruity necessary to produce humour. 80 Here, humour depends on both types of transposition, as the physiological explanation is exaggerated, and given in a context where an ethical explanation would be expected.

Socrates then offers his own explanation (98e1ff.). Once again causes are simply given in terms of what seems best to the protagonists. Unlike the ‘pseudo-explanation’ which precedes it, this explanation is short and straightforward, perhaps suggesting that the former type of explanation substitutes physical complexity for a true moral cause.

Socrates implies the merits of simplicity in a number of ways. First, he criticises the spurious causes of Anaxagoras because they comprise ‘many things’ (πολλά). 81 This implies, as Ooms Renard has suggested, that causation should involve a principle of ‘economy’. 82 Similarly, at 98d8, when he gives a hypothetical parallel for such causes, they are once again described in terms of large quantities (ἄλλα μυρία τοιαῦτα αἰτιωμένος). In addition, simplicity not only concerns quantity, but also simplicity and directness in the cause/effect relationship. As Socrates moves on to the ‘safe’ cause, not only is its simplicity striking, 83 but he himself says that this belief is held ἄπλως καὶ ἄτεχνως (100d3-4) and describes the spurious alternative causes as κομψείας (101c8). 84

The variety of allusion within this passage, both to Anaxagoras and more generally to a certain range of Presocratic writing, ranges from near direct quotation to vague structural similarities. Key word repetition establishes foundational principles which, when combined with various argumentative structures, point to a correct process of reasoning, as well as indicating certain faults in the predecessors. In this

80 Koestler, 1964, 73-4.
81 Phd. 98c2.
82 Ooms Renard, 1999, 119 and 116: ‘The first hint of rejections of the first type of account (98d8) complains about the number of ἀτίμα (a hint of criticism in terms of lack of economy)’.
83 Cf. McCabe, 1994, 60-4, on the necessity of simplicity for a successful explanans and how this allows forms as opposed to particulars to serve as explanations.
84 The issue of quantity might also further such connections with the Forms, since each Form is a single item as opposed to the plurality of particulars. See e.g. McCabe, 1994, 51, who suggests that plurality refers not only to the number of particulars but, crucially for the contrast with Forms, it is also characteristic of the individual particular because of its complexity: ‘because he has many different characters, properties, relations’. This strengthens the complexity/quantity link.
way, Plato uses what he sees as the implications of Anaxagoras’ points about νοῦς in order to make claims about its role in universal structure and argue for its normativity, employing imitation to show his opponents’ faults, as well as to suggest his own principles.

Before moving on to discuss possible ways in which the ‘Anaxagoras episode’ fits into the dialogue as a whole, I will consider one further point within the passage itself. At the conclusion of this episode Socrates extends the argument to include certain theories which do not cite νοῦς as a cause (99b4ff.), complaining that they give spurious causes as opposed to the good, which really holds everything together (99c5-6). Thus, he appears to have made an unexplained leap from the claim that νοῦς-based causes depend upon the good, to the further claim that all true causation necessarily depends upon the good. If, as suggested by the traditional interpretation, the good is dependent upon νοῦς, in the absence of νοῦς there seems to be no justification for Socrates’ claim that τὸ ἄγαθον καὶ ἴδιον συνδεῖν καὶ συνέχειν (99c6). If however, it resides in the idea of a universal order, which situates each individual and arranges their interrelationships, it would seem that συνδεῖν καὶ συνέχειν are now themselves sufficient reasons for assuming normativity.

7.5 Beyond the ‘Anaxagoras episode’

We have seen that there is more to the ‘Anaxagoras episode’ than the traditional reading suggests, and that, like the ‘apology’, it works towards establishing the normativity of wisdom/rationality (expressed as νοῦς), so important throughout the Phaedo. On the whole, the pursuit of teleology appears to be abandoned after the autobiography, although in Chapter 8 I discuss briefly how one might see the teleological theme as maintained in the ‘second sailing’. To conclude the present

---

85 Although there is some controversy over whether ἐστερικτην (99c8) indicates Socrates’ abandonment of teleology, by showing, as Vlastos, 1973, 87 claims, ‘that he is still, at the time of speaking, “deprived” of the teleological aitia’, or whether, as according to Wiggins, 1986, 3, contra Vlastos, the ‘deprivation’ was in the past and does not preclude the search for teleology in the ‘second sailing’.

86 For interesting suggestions as to how teleology is incorporated see also e.g. Lennox, 1985, 202ff., who argues that the deuters plous and final argument should be taken together. The fact that the first Forms mentioned in the final argument are the beautiful and the good (100b5ff.) also suggests that the cause of normativity might remain a concern. Cf. Lennox, 1985, 203, on the use of such forms ‘to

Chapter 7

209
chapter I shall propose that Plato is still engaging with Anaxagoras in the first parts of the ‘second sailing’, in a way which can have a significant effect on the interpretation of this section.

7.5.1 ‘Like into like’

Socrates' ostensible abandonment of teleology together with a thematic shift makes the apparent discontinuity between the ‘Anaxagoras episode’ and its immediate context very marked, but there has been little attempt to explore in detail what significance this discontinuity might have outside of the immediate context. As well as questions about how this passage fits into its wider context, there is the question of whether and how it is connected to the earlier Anaxagorean allusion in the ‘argument from opposites’.

As I said above, the view that no significant connection exists between the ‘Anaxagoras episode’ and its immediate context derives largely from ostensible changes in subject matter, since the sections before and after this episode concern not cosmology and universal teleology, but individual questions about height and number. So it appears to be sandwiched between two sections which fit closely together, while itself unrelated to these.

However, even if the principal concerns of the ‘Anaxagoras episode’ seem absent from its surrounding passages, there are ways in which one can see Anaxagoras himself as the connection between them. Socrates’ intellectual autobiography begins with his early belief that growth comes about through eating and drinking:

\[
\text{έπειδ'άν γάρ ἐκ τῶν σιτίων ταῖς μὲν σαρξὶ σάρκες προσγένωνται, τοῖς δὲ ὀστισὶ ὀστὰ, καὶ οὕτω κατὰ τὸν αὐτὸν λόγου καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις τὰ αὐτῶν ὁλκέλα ἐκάστοις προσγένηται, τότε δὴ τὸν ὀλίγον ὄγκου δυτὶ ὕπτερον πολίν γεγονέναι, καὶ οὕτω γλυκεσθαι τὸν σμίκρον ἀνθρωπον μέγαν. (Phd. 96c9-d5)\]

exemplify the deuterōs plous'. Furthermore, if, as suggested above, the ‘Anaxagoras episode’ moves towards an ideal of simple causation, the apparent simplicity of the causes posited in the final argument could perhaps be taken to exemplify this idea. See Ch.8 p.270, below.
As others have noted, these ideas are extremely reminiscent of Anaxagoras, a close parallel being πῶς γὰρ ἐν ἐκ μὴ πρᾶξις γένοιτο θελξ καὶ σὴρξ ἐκ μὴ σαρκός; which illustrates the principle of ‘like into like’.

As the autobiography continues, Socrates discusses his concerns about how addition of one to one could cause two, when the opposite, dividing one, would have the same result. For he finds it unacceptable for opposite causes to produce the same effect (Phd.97a6-b3), given that this violates an important principle of causation: ‘if x causes anything to be F (whose opposite is un-F)...x’s opposite must not cause anything to be F’. This reliance on a notion of ‘like causing like’ is reminiscent of Anaxagorean physics, and such similarities could perhaps be seen to pave the way for the switch to the ‘Anaxagoras episode’, in spite of apparent differences in subject matter. For, although the role of νοῦς is presented as the reason for Socrates’ interest in Anaxagoras, if he was already inclining towards other aspects of Anaxagorean physics, this could provide an additional reason why Socrates was drawn to his doctrines concerning νοῦς.

Furthermore, while the ‘Anaxagoras episode’ evidently gives Socrates’ reasons for rejecting Anaxagoras’ νοῦς-based account of causation, Socrates’ attraction to Anaxagorean ideas still seems to continue into the ‘second sailing’, which is essentially dependent upon a principle of ‘like causes like’. As Sedley says, discussing this passage: ‘what is essentially the same principle that like causes like can be traced back to Anaxagoras (B10), and forward to Aristotle...and Hellenistic debate’.

So even though Plato has revealed his dissatisfaction with Anaxagoras, both in the ‘argument from opposites’ and the ‘Anaxagoras episode’, he now appears to drift back towards ideas that sound dangerously Anaxagorean, and still needs to show more closely what constitutes the differences between them. When Socrates moves

---

87 E.g. Rowe, 1993, 233.
89 Sedley, 1998, 121.
90 Sedley, 1998, 117.
on to the second part of the final argument (102b3ff.) he presents very clear reasons why Anaxagoras’ ‘like from like’ idea cannot be acceptable. Yet, even before this, in the ‘hypothesis’ passage which concludes the discussion of the ‘safe causes’, comes the first hint that Socrates’ attitude to Anaxagoras is anything but positive.

7.5.2 Who are the ἀντιλογικοὶ of 101e1?

Socrates’ explanation of the so-called ‘method of hypothesis’ in Phd. 101d2-102a1 is one of the most frequently discussed passages in the dialogue. Having suggested that such a method is ideal philosophical practice, he proceeds to compare it to the spurious methods of the ἀντιλογικοὶ, who do not care about realities (101e1-4). It is generally assumed that οἱ ἀντιλογικοὶ refers to οἱ περὶ τῶν ἀντιλογικῶν λόγων διατρίψαντες mentioned earlier, who have come to believe that there is nothing sound or stable either in λόγοι or in πράγματα (Phd. 90b9-c4).91 Certainly it is clear that both groups have a damaging effect on the progress of argument, as their names suggest. However, readers have failed to notice that certain verbal allusions suggest that Plato might also have one particular predecessor in mind, namely Anaxagoras.

In the ‘hypothesis’ passage, the ἀντιλογικοὶ are those whose wisdom makes them sufficient for ‘mixing all things together’ (διοῦ πάντα κυκώντες).92 Once again, we have the Anaxagorean catchphrase ὁμοο πάντα.93 Not only has this phrase already represented Anaxagoras’ philosophy in the ‘argument from opposites’, but as the first words of his book, it would certainly have had a definite emblematic significance. In Plato the phrase only occurs here and in the ‘argument from opposites’, while in other pre-Hellenistic literature the only extant uses are in Aristotle and Eudemus, always with reference to Anaxagoras.94 Moreover, given

91 See e.g. Bostock, 1986, 186, n.9; οἱ ἀντιλογικοὶ. These people are no doubt to be identified with the people ‘bent on victory’ who are referred to at 91a2-6 as caring nothing for the truth. Plato gives us a portrait of them in his Euthydemus’. Cf. e.g. Rowe, 1993, 248; Blank, 1986, 150; Burnet, 1911, 114; Gallop, 1975, 191; Geddes, 1863, 125.
92 Phd. 101e5
93 Although the ideas expressed here could also be seen to suggest Heraclitean philosophy (e.g. B125).
94 The phrase also appears a few times in the Hippocratic Corpus: Haem.9.4; Judic. 22.4; and Mul. 44.8, 91.14, 242.15. However, in all these instances πάντα clearly refers to specific objects and is never universal.
that Anaxagoras has also been such an important figure in recent sections of the
dialogue, the Anaxagorean allusion seems unmistakeable, even though its
significance has not been noted within the modern secondary literature. This draws
our attention, once again, to the problems which would result from what Plato sees as
the paradoxical \( \delta \mu o \nu \pi \alpha \nu t \alpha \) which, as I suggested above, implies the absolute
inseparability of opposites. In this way it prefigures the next passage, in which
Socrates will categorically deny that absolute opposites can ever tolerate each other’s
presence and so deliver his final rejection of Anaxagorean physics.

Even though \( \delta \mu o \nu \pi \alpha \nu t \alpha \) here appears to be a clear reference to Anaxagoras, such
an idea could also be applicable to \( \omicron \ η περι των \ άντιλογικων \ λόγων \ διατριβαντες \), mentioned in the earlier ‘misology’ passage (Phd. 90b9). Nevertheless, there is a further aspect of Socrates’ criticisms which suggests that they
are more appropriate to Anaxagoras than to the earlier disputants. According to
Socrates the later \( \delta ντιλογικοι \) talk about the beginning (\( \delta ν \chi \eta \)) and its consequences.
For the earlier disputants beginnings hold little interest, since their sole concern is the
continuous universal flux and instability of the present (90c4-6), while talk of
beginnings would presumably entail some notion of stable identity. For Anaxagoras,
however, beginnings and their consequences are of course crucial, and \( \delta ν \chi \eta \), along

---

95 As far as I am aware, the allusion has been entirely overlooked by contemporary readers of the
dialogue, the only exception being Dixsaut, 1991, 387. However, she simply identifies the phrase as
Anaxagorean and does not discuss its significance. The failure of commentators to notice this very
definite allusion seems to stem from insufficient attention to Plato’s Greek and is reflected in their
translations. The conventional translation of \( \delta \mu o \nu \pi \alpha \nu t \alpha \) in Anaxag. B1 is something like ‘all things
together’, a translation also usually given for the explicit quotation of Anaxagoras in the Phaedo’s
argument from opposites. Nevertheless, \( \delta \mu o \nu \pi \alpha \nu t \alpha \) in the ‘hypothesis’ passage is translated very
differently: e.g. Hackforth, 1955, 136, ‘whose wisdom enables them to jumble everything up
together’; Rowe, 1993a, 248, ‘mixing up everything together’; Warrington, 1963, 152, ‘amid all the
welter of their ideas’; Gallop, 1975, 54; and Fowler, 1914, 349. By giving two such different
translations of the very same phrase these works obscure the verbal allusion in the later passage.
96 Cf. Loriaux, 1975, 104-5, who suggests, that although verbal allusions point to 90b9-c3, ‘cette
identification ne fait pas entièrement justice au texte qui nous occupe’. He suggests that it is in fact
criticising the physicists of 95eff, because of the mention of \( \delta ν \chi \eta \) and \( \delta ν \mu \mu ε ν α \). However, his
discussion gives no relevant quotation of sources and fails to spot any specific Anaxagorean allusion.
There are some other reasons for seeing these disputants as the later \( \delta ντιλογικοι \): e.g. the verbal echo,
enhanced by the description of the earlier disputants as ‘very wise’ (\( \sigma σ φωτοτατοι \)) and the later
\( \delta ντιλογικοι \) as confusing things through their ‘wisdom’ (\( \upsilon \sigma σ φιλος \)); or the fact that both groups, as
already mentioned, harm arguments. Yet it is quite possible that \( \delta ντιλογικοι \) refers to various
thinkers, so that it is not necessary to choose exclusively between Anaxagoras and the earlier
disputants. Indeed such a move would be quite typical of Plato and might help explain why
\( \delta ντιλογικοι \) is plural, even if it refers primarily to Anaxagoras.
with its cognate verbs, is common in his extant writings. For example:

καὶ τῆς περιχωρήσιος τῆς συμπάθης νοῦς ἐκράτησεν, ὡστε περιχωρήσαι τὴν ἀρχήν. καὶ πρῶτον ἀπὸ τοῦ σμικροῦ ἥρεατο περιχωρεῖν, ἐπεὶ δὲ πλέον περιχωρεῖ, καὶ περιχωρήσει ἐπὶ πλέον.

or -

καὶ ἐπεὶ ἥρεατο δ νοῦς κινεῖν, ἀπὸ τοῦ κινουμένου πάντως ἀπεκρίνετο... ⁹⁷

Moreover, from the way Plato subtly changes the tense of both of his main quotations from Anaxagoras, he seems dissatisfied with Anaxagorean beginnings, both in terms of the primordial state ὁμοῦ χρήματα πάντα, and perhaps also because Anaxagoras posits νοῦς as the original cause, but then fails to account for the continuing effect of νοῦς in causation.

A further related point is the failure of the ἀντιλογικὸν to have either one logos or thought about reality: οὐδὲ εἰς περὶ τοῦτον λόγος οὐδὲ φροντίς. Socrates has just advocated the importance of finding a single base hypothesis which provides a sufficient logos for all the hypotheses derived from it, as opposed to simply introducing many different reasons for things. So the ‘one’, εἰς, in Socrates’ criticism can be seen to imply that he finds fault with the ἀντιλογικὸν for having more than one logos, another point missed by commentators. This points fits nicely with the general picture of Anaxagoras as having several conflicting beliefs. The earlier disputants of Phaedo 90b9, on the other hand, are criticised for the very reason that they commit themselves to nothing and see all logoi as unsound and unstable.⁹⁸

There are a number of ways in which Anaxagoras seems, problematically, to have more than one λόγος. First, in very general terms, Anaxagorean physics posits both

---

⁹⁸ The phrase could also be translated as ‘no logos or thought at all’ as opposed to ‘not one logos or thought’. However, not only is the latter translation more natural but, even if we disregard Anaxagoras, an emphasis on ‘one’ rather than ‘none at all’ still seems much more relevant here.
universal order and ἀλήθεια, two incompatible λόγοι. More specifically, it is also open to criticism, along with the *sine qua non* explanations, given as causes by Anaxagoras and other physicists, for being numerous and arbitrary. For these would allow more than one λόγος of causation for single events, since the same event could be seen to result from various different *sine qua non* ‘causes’. Thus, there would be a potential plurality of λόγοι for this model of ‘causation’. In addition, these ‘causes’ do not differ substantially from arbitrary causes like ‘heads’ (100e8-b2) or ‘divisions’ and ‘additions’ (96e6-97b3) which, respectively, cause opposites and are opposite causes of the same event, once again leading to multiple and conflicting λόγοι of causation.

Finally, the view that Anaxagoras is the butt of Socrates’ criticism might also be strengthened if Echecrates’ comment on this passage is taken as a Platonic pun directed at Anaxagoras. Echecrates says that ‘Socrates made these matters exceedingly clear, even to somebody of limited intelligence’, τῷ καὶ σομικρὸν νοὺν ἔχοντι (102a5), a phrase that seems all the more significant given Socrates’ previous description of Anaxagoras as ἄνδρα τῷ μὲν νῷ οὐδὲν χρώμενον (98b7-8). Echecrates’ interruption is one of only two points where the frame dialogue breaks into the main narrative and it is certainly very striking. Usually, his words are understood as simply drawing the reader’s attention to the status of the theory Socrates has just explained, or as demarcating the end of the ‘safe hypothesis’ of causation. However, if they do reveal Echecrates’ awareness of the presence of Anaxagorean ideas, this could be seen as further confirmation of Anaxagoras’ relevance, since it is not only implied in Socrates’ words, but also clearly understood by Echecrates, a character to whom these words are reported.

For the reasons stated above it seems fair to say that there is a clear engagement with Anaxagoras in the passages discussed. Moreover, as the dialogue continues, Socrates begins to mount an argument which presents an implicit challenge to certain

---

99 Cf. e.g. Sedley, 1998, 119-20.
100 See e.g. Rowe, 1993b, 50-1; Warner, 1989a, 77: ‘Few of us like to think that our intelligence is less than feeble, thus this latter passage acts as a rhetorical device encouraging us to go along with a particularly difficult piece of argument by suggesting that to understand it is to see its validity’.
101 Blank, 1986, 149.
of Anaxagoras' ideas and will ultimately lead to a clear dismissal of his central principles.

7.5.3 The mutual exclusivity of opposites

The 'method of hypothesis' is usually taken to mark the end of the first part of the 'second sailing', in which Socrates explains the 'safe hypothesis' (101d2) of Form-participation. This is, for example τῷ καλῷ πάντα τὰ καλὰ καλὰ (100d7-8); or more generally, that each thing comes into being μετασχῆν τῆς ἱδας ὀυσίας ἐκάστου οὖ μετάσχη (101c3-4). Conventionally, the sections of the dialogue which follow the 'method of hypothesis' (102b3-107b10) are then taken to be the second part of the 'second sailing'. Known as the 'final argument' they are felt to revolve around the 'subtler answer' (105c1-2), rather than the earlier 'safe hypothesis'. Whereas the conventional reading thus posits a switch from the 'safe hypothesis' to the 'subtler answer' at 102b3, I suggest that the ideas outlined in 102b3-103e9 are not only related to the 'subtler answer', but also very important for establishing the 'safe hypothesis'. The mutual exclusivity of opposite property-instances, outlined within this section, can therefore be seen as not only the beginning of the 'final argument', but also as a continuing explanation of the 'safe hypothesis' itself.

Up to the 'method of hypothesis' the outline of the 'safe hypothesis' sounds very much like Anaxagoras' own 'like into like' principle of causation. Admittedly, in Anaxagoras this principle only assumes two particulars, whereas the 'safe hypothesis' posits two distinct ontological kinds, with participation in a Form causing a 'like' property instance to be present in a particular. However, so far the argument has been directed at refuting and replacing causation by 'unlikes' and, in spite of the differences between the Socratic and Anaxagorean accounts of causation, the former has not yet presented a reason for rejecting the latter.

102 See e.g. Bostock, 1986, 178: 'The little interlude at 102a...evidently marks a break in the argument. When we come back to our topic at 102b we begin upon the final argument for the immortality of the soul'. Cf. e.g. Rowe, 1993a, 248-9; Gallop, 1975, 192; Frede, 1978, 27; O'Brien, 1967-8, 199; Dixsaut, 1991, 387.
Yet, it now seems as if the ἀντιλογικός passage in the ‘method of hypothesis’ is actually criticising Anaxagoras. Although earlier parts of the dialogue provide some reasons for these criticisms, Socrates’ return to a critique of Anaxagoras in the ‘method of hypothesis’ can also be seen to introduce a new attack on his ideas. I propose that the next section, which establishes the mutual exclusivity of opposite property-instances, can be taken to refute those aspects of Anaxagoras’ theory not yet disproved which pose serious problems for the ‘safe hypothesis’. In so doing, Socrates adds a further point to the ‘safe hypothesis’, answering a potential objection to this theory of causation. In other words, 102b3ff. functions as a further refutation of Anaxagoras, while providing a necessary addition to the ‘safe hypothesis’ model of causation.

7.5.4 The problems of the Anaxagorean ‘like into like’ principle

The beginning of the ‘second sailing’, up to the ‘method of hypothesis’, shows that ‘like causes like’, insofar as properties in particulars are caused by the particular’s participation in the corresponding Form. While this gives an alternative to the problematic idea that something can be caused by an entity which does not ‘match’ it, it does not yet show the necessity of the ontologically distinct Forms for such a ‘like into like’ notion of causation. This is revealed in the next section, by exposing problems inherent in Anaxagorean ‘like into like’ principle, which is not based on a dualistic ontology.

This section, where Socrates discusses the relative heights of Simmias, Phaedo, and himself, can be read as exploring the ramifications of Anaxagorean physics for Socrates’ ‘safe hypothesis’ of causation. In so doing, Socrates exposes the problems of Anaxagorean ideas by considering them in the context of his own ‘safe hypothesis’. These are problems to which the ‘safe hypothesis’ itself could be seen as liable, up to this point. However, he now shows that there are clear differences between his own theories and Anaxagoras’, so the ‘safe hypothesis’ does not face the problems exposed in Anaxagoras’ system.
In the ‘puzzles’ which Socrates has dealt with so far he has considered examples of causation in at most two particulars. However, the problems to which Anaxagoras’ theories are liable will only emerge from considering the relationship of more than two sensibles. It is therefore highly significant that this is exactly what happens at 102b3, when Socrates discusses the relationships between Simmias, himself, and Phaedo.

Proving that property-instances must be distinct and non-constitutive

From the outline of the ‘safe hypothesis’ so far, it is not clear exactly how Form-participation works. Using the example of magnitude Plato now shows that a particular participating in a Form cannot actually have a property πρὸς ἑαυτὸ. In doing so he treats τὸ μέγα and τὸ σμικρὸν as referring to pairs of opposite Forms and opposite property-instances which derive from these Forms.¹⁰³

The simple hypothesis has already laid down that the cause of one thing being larger than another will in every case be the Form Largeness: τὸ μείζων πάν ἐτέρον ἐτέρον οὐδενὶ ἄλλῳ μείζων ἐστιν ἦ μεγέθει, καὶ διὰ τοῦτο μείζων, διὰ τὸ μέγεθος (101a2-4). So when it is said that Simmias is larger than Socrates, Σιμμίλαν Σωκράτους...μείζων εἶναι (102b4-5), we can assume from the safe hypothesis that the Form of Largeness will be the cause.

This is fairly straightforward with two entities, one larger than the other. However, if a third entity, bigger than both the others, is introduced, the idea suddenly becomes problematic. In the case of Simmias, we can make two points about his height relative to Phaedo and Socrates:

1. Simmias is large(r) than Socrates because of Largeness.
2. Simmias is small(er) than Phaedo because of Smallness.

In Socrates’ explanation of the safe hypothesis there have only been two types of entity, Forms and particulars, so that there is therefore no reason not to see property-

¹⁰³ Phd.102d6-8.
instances in particulars as being constitutive of the particular. If this were the case, Simmias himself would actually be made up of his property-instances, large and small, so that Simmias would be who he is (i.e. large and small) because of Largeness and Smallness, and two opposite Forms would be causes of the same outcome.

Nevertheless, as Socrates points out, it is not the case that Simmias is smaller than Phaedo and larger than Socrates by being Simmias (τὸ Σιμμάν εἶναι), but τὸ μὲν τὸ μεγέθει ὑπερέχειν τὴν σμικρότητα ὑπέχων, τὸ δὲ τὸ μέγεθος τῆς σμικρότητος παρέχων ὑπερέχου (102c12-d2). It is the presence of two distinct opposed property-instances, within Simmias which allows him to ‘be’ large in relation to Socrates and small in relation to Phaedo. These property-instances, therefore, cannot be constitutive. Clearly compresence of opposites does occur in particulars, since they can ‘be’ both large and small, relative to other particulars. Yet, without distinct and non-constitutive property-instances it would not be possible to account for the relations between different particulars which lead to compresence.

Anaxagoras, however, has only particulars and no distinct property-instances. Thus, he can only account for compresence by claiming that a particular has two oppositional properties in relation ‘to itself’ (πρὸς ἑαυτὸ):

οὕτε γὰρ τὸν σμικρὸν ἔστι τὸ γε ἐλάχιστον, ἄλλ' ἐκασσον ἅε (τὸ γὰρ ἐδώ οὐκ ἔστι τὸ μή οὐκ εἶναι) - ἄλλα καὶ τοῦ μεγάλου ἅε ἔστι μειζόν. καὶ ἴσον ἔστι τῷ σμικρῷ πλῆθος, πρὸς ἑαυτὸ δὲ ἐκαστον ἔστι καὶ μέγα καὶ σμικρῶν.104

As Schofield remarks, this fragment is ‘pretty obscure’ and its interpretation is very uncertain. Nevertheless, it seems that for Anaxagoras smallness and largeness are properties which a particular has ‘in itself’ (πρὸς ἑαυτὸ). Since matter is infinitely divisible,105 there will always be something smaller than any constituent of the world, no matter how small, and vice versa for the large. In this way, the small and the large are therefore equal in number, coextensive, and can only be distinguished in

---

104 Anaxag.B3.
105 See e.g. Anaxag. B1.
relative terms. Thus a particular will be large and small ‘in itself’ (πρὸς ἑαυτὸ). If then asked both why a thing is large and why small, the only possible answer will be πρὸς ἑαυτὸ, offering the same explanans for opposite explananda and therefore contravening an important Platonic principle.

There are clear reasons for seeing 102b3ff as concerned with such points. Stylistically, the passage is reminiscent of Anaxagoras B3. For example, Socrates uses the preposition πρὸς in phrases like σμικρότητα ἔχει ὁ ᾿Αρκάτης πρὸς τὸ ἐκείνου μέγεθος (102c4), recalling Anaxagoras’ πρὸς ἑαυτὸ δὲ ἐκαστὸν ἐστὶ καὶ μέγα καὶ σμικρὸν. More generally, ‘the small’ and ‘the large’ are very important in Anaxagoras’ extant fragments.

It is not only these ideas about magnitude which are incompatible with Socrates’ explanation of compresence, but also the Anaxagorean principle of predominance, according to which there is a portion of everything in everything (ἐν πάντι παντὸς μοῖρα ἐνεστὶ), and the identity of a particular is determined by the phenomena which predominate in it: ἔτερον δὲ οὐδὲν ἐστὶν δομοῖον οὐδενὶ, ἀλλ’ ὀτιν πλείστα ἐν, ταῦτα ἐνδηλότα ἐν ἑκαστῶν ἐστὶ καὶ ἦν. Clearly, this would preclude meaningful compresence since, even though all things, including opposites, are present, only the one thing which predominates in a particular would actually constitute its identity.

Absolute property-instances

Evidently, Anaxagorean predominance cannot account for compresence in the Platonic sense, whereby a particular could actually be said to have opposite

---

106 Cf. e.g. Hussey, 1972, 135. For possible readings of καὶ ἴσον ἑστὶ τῷ σμικρῷ πληθῶσεν see Schofield, 1975, 84, who concludes that the its ‘general interpretation’ is ‘the large and the small are alike in respect of quantity or number’.

107 The meaning of this phrase is not at all clear and various possibilities are discussed by Schofield, 1975, 85. Sider, 1981, 60, takes πρὸς ἑαυτὸ... σμικρὰν to mean that ‘the relative terms Large(1) and Small(er) meet at a point that can be considered to partake of both qualities’. However, this suggests that it is only at the certain point when something has these qualities that it will be both large and small, even though the fragment seems to imply that each thing will always have both these qualities. E.g. Anaxag. B1, 3, and 6.


properties simultaneously. However, the theory itself presents another possibility about the workings of property-instances which would be a problem for Socrates, insofar as it suggests the idea that entities could vary in the degree to which they are present in particulars. So, even if taking property-instances as non-constitutive allows for compresence without violating the principle that the same thing is not caused by opposites, there may be, as we shall see, further problems if the presence of property-instances can itself vary by degree.

Socrates says, for example, that Simmias is both large and small because he has largeness in relation to Socrates and smallness in relation to Phaedo. If, however, property-instances could vary in the degree to which they were present, it might then be the case that there was less largeness in Simmias than in Phaedo. Of course, we could still explain Simmias being smaller than Phaedo in terms of his smallness, but the option would also be there to attribute this to his lesser degree of largeness. Since it is the Form of Largeness which causes largeness to be present, the Form of Largeness (i.e. because it is present, but to a lesser degree) would then be the cause of Simmias being small(er) than Phaedo, contravening the principle that an opposite cannot cause its own opposite.  

In order to avoid such difficulties, it is necessary that Form-participation is absolute and the degree to which a property-instance is present in a particular cannot vary. It is only in this way that Socrates can state, for example, that it is exclusively the 'largeness' in Phaedo which makes him 'large' in relation to Simmias: μεγέθος ξει δ Φαίδων πρὸς τὴν Σιμμίαν σμικρότητα (102c7-8).  

112 For these principles see e.g. Sedley, 1998, 121  
113 Bostock, 1986, 181-3, raises similar issues, in order to eliminate the possibility that 'we are trying to talk of the particular degree of largeness that Simmias has'. He says that if this were the case largeness would be the same as height and would result in Simmias' height being the cause of both large and small. The problems he envisages are similar to those I describe above, which would result from property-instances varying by degree. However, Bostock's points derive from his suggestion either that a particular 'height' is a Form or that there is a particular largeness 'peculiar to Simmias'. The first of these is surely incompatible with Plato's insistence on largeness and smallness alone without a further category of 'magnitude', while the second suggestion that different largenesses are particular to individuals is once again not an option considered by Socrates. It is on these grounds that Bostock then dismisses the idea that there is a third entity, 'largeness in us', the property-instance, as well as Forms and particulars. Yet, as I have argued, it is the very issue of 'degree' which shows the need for an invariable property-instance, which is a different entity from, although present in, the particular itself.
Accordingly, the ideas in 102b3-103a3 can be seen to provide us with two more important points about Form-participation: the causation of a property in a particular does not occur through the particular taking on that property in itself (πρὸς ἐντὸ), but because of the presence of a distinct property-instance; and that participation is absolute, insofar as property-instances do not come to be present in particulars to varying degrees. These points, necessary for 'like into like' causation to work, are incompatible with Anaxagorean physics, in spite of his 'like into like' principle.

The principles outlined by Socrates here depend upon the invariablity of property-instances, and require them to derive from Forms, so as to have these characteristics. For particulars change constantly and allow compresent opposites, Forms and their property-instances. Thus, the 'anonymous objection' episode (103a4-c2) can be seen to reinforce these ideas. Having suggested the flaws of Anaxagorean physics in the initial 'argument from opposites', Socrates has returned to the topic of opposites and shown why a theory of 'like into like' which might initially appear to incline towards Anaxagoras is in fact fundamentally at odds with him. His response to the 'anonymous objection' shows the need for property-instances, though present in particulars, to be like Forms, insofar as they cannot accept their opposites.114

For Anaxagoras, with his belief in the inseparability of opposites, the homogeneity of matter, and ὅμοιον πάντα, no such distinct absolutes can exist: there can simply be no such qualities as largeness or smallness. Because of the indivisible mixture of matter within one ontological level which constitutes Anaxagoras' universe, he does not and could not posit the distinct and unchanging Forms introduced by Socrates. So despite any superficial similarities one might see between Anaxagoras and Plato because of 'like into like' causation, the *Phaedo* makes it perfectly clear, as it shows what such a conception of causation would involve, that in an Anaxagorean universe no talk of causation can make any sense.

In the passage we have been discussing (102a11-103c4) Socrates introduces a third entity to the causal process, τὸ (e.g.) μέγεθος ἐν ἡμῖν which, along with the

114 N.B. the way in which the αὐτό τὸ terminology, which previously differentiated Forms from their property-instances(102d6-7), now incorporates both (103b4-5).
Forms, has mutually exclusive opposites. The status of these ‘ἕνωτα’ has raised several difficulties, even though, as I will show in Chapter 8, they are clearly presented as a third and distinct type of entity, along with Forms and particulars.

Yet Plato does more than just add a third type of entity. On my present analysis of this section he actually argues for the necessity of these entities, in order to maintain his safe hypothesis of causation. He does this by pointing towards the problems that would result from the Anaxagorean counter-example, making the presence of this counter-example felt through the stylistic structure which makes relevant allusions to Anaxagoras both in this passage and elsewhere. In other words, seeing the Anaxagorean undertones in this passage leads us to understand more closely some of the problems which Plato is dealing with here. Conversely, it also allows us to see this passage itself as another stage in Plato’s refutation of Anaxagoras.

7.6 Conclusion

The study of allusion is conventionally an aspect of literary analysis which does not concern itself with texts written in what is considered as ‘philosophical style’. This may, in part, account for the neglect of such extensive and significant allusions within the _Phaedo_, both to Anaxagoras and to other Presocratic writers. Nevertheless, however they are classified, such authors do have a style and I have suggested ways in which allusion within this stylistic context can actually provide a rich and complex basis for philosophical argument.

Anaxagoras appears to escape the monism of the Eleatics and the perpetual flux of the Ephesians. He posits a world in which change occurs through separation and combination, and works on a principle of ‘like into like’. Moreover, his universe is ordered by a distinct entity which is, at least in name, representative of rationality. No wonder then that some of his ideas seem close to those presented by the _Phaedo_’s Socrates. Yet, at the same time, his theory of the inseparability of opposites also poses a fundamental threat to the very principle of causation on which the immortality of the soul depends.
Anaxagoras' ideas are often present in the *Phaedo*, whether implicitly or explicitly. With every allusion, however, Plato constructs his refutation of Anaxagoras and uses it to establish his own position. In rejecting Anaxagoras' *voûs*, in attacking Anaxagorean 'causation', Plato strengthens his own conceptions. As is clear from the treatment of Anaxagoras in the dialogue, where any apparent agreement eventually leads to subversion, refutation, and replacement, the *Phaedo* presents him as an attractive, but ultimately a dangerous figure.

115 Cf. Nightingale, 1995, e.g. 7 and 91, 'Plato criticizes his model even as he imitates its themes and structure'; and e.g. Ch.5 on Plato's own constructive use of the genres he criticises. However, she is only concerned with rhetoric and poetry and does not touch on possible Presocratic allusions in Plato. Moreover, she avoids 'Plato's methods and doctrines, or indeed, ...his development and practice of analytic thinking' (10)
Chapter 8

'Taking refuge in λόγοι’: language and style in the ‘second sailing’

In the last two chapters I demonstrated how style is important in setting out arguments and principles, both Plato’s own and those he rejects. Socrates’ views of φρόνησις, for example, were established through features like repetition and metaphor, while Anaxagoras’ incorrect use of νοῦς trapped him into particular teleological commitments incompatible with his metaphysics, all suggesting a close relationship between verbal expression and beliefs about reality. In addition, consideration of style revealed clear interconnections between different sections of the dialogue and so supported a holistic reading.

My aim in this chapter is once again to demonstrate the importance of language and style for the construction of argument, this time within Socrates’ δεύτερος πλοῦς, ‘second sailing’ (99d1ff.). This section, containing the so-called 'method of hypothesis' and ‘final argument’, is discussed far more than any other part of the Phaedo. Accordingly, I will not be examining un- or under-explored parts of the text, as in the previous chapters. Nevertheless, in spite of the vast amount of secondary material on the ‘second sailing’, I shall aim to show that closer attention to style can make an important difference to our understanding of this section, helping both to increase its overall coherence and to reach alternative analyses of particular points. Most significantly, I suggest that style can help us to interpret Socrates’ proof that the soul is ἀθάνατος and ἀνώλεθρος in a way which eradicates some problems conventionally seen to arise from it.

1 Cf. Kanayama, 2000, 41.
I shall also use style to examine what Socrates means by saying that his method here is \( \epsilon\nu \ \lambda\varphi\omicron\omicron\omicron \ [\sigma\kappa\omicron\pi\epsilon\iota\nu] \) (100a1-2).\(^2\) Although the precise meaning of \( \lambda\varphi\omicron\omicron\omicron \) is unclear,\(^3\) it combines an idea of ‘account’, ‘explanation’, ‘definition’, and ‘argument’, with the means of expression: ‘words’, ‘speech’, or ‘discourse’. To these one might add a notion of structure dimension, derived from an early Greek sense of \( \lambda\gamma\epsilon\iota\nu\): ‘collecting’, ‘gathering’, or ‘enumerating’.\(^4\) So the meaning of \( \lambda\varphi\omicron\omicron\omicron \) seems bound up with the language in which argument and definition are structured.

Furthermore, one might also see the phrase \( \epsilon\nu \ \lambda\varphi\omicron\omicron\omicron \), in this particular context, as carrying certain evaluative connotations, insofar as searching in this way might lead to knowledge of \( \tau\alpha \ \delta\nu\tau\alpha \). At the beginning of the ‘second sailing’ not only does Socrates use \( \lambda\varphi\omicron\omicron\omicron \), when let down by his senses, but stresses that this is in no way epistemologically inferior to using \( \epsilon\rho\gamma\alpha \) (100a1-3). Moreover, in conclusion, he suggests that following through the \( \lambda\varphi\omicron\omicron\omicron \) will yield a sufficient proof (107b6-9). As we know from the earlier ‘misology’ passage, \( \lambda\varphi\omicron\omicron\omicron \) are not self-evidently normative (e.g. 90b6ff.). Nevertheless, it seems that in the ‘second sailing’, at least, \( \lambda\varphi\omicron\omicron\omicron \) carries some connotation of methodological propriety.

The idea of a connection between \( \lambda\varphi\omicron\omicron\omicron \) and truth is also found elsewhere. Heraclitus, for example, claims that the truth about reality comes from the \( \lambda\varphi\omicron\omicron\omicron \),\(^5\) while in Plato himself there are other passages where \( \lambda\varphi\omicron\omicron\omicron \) or correct \( \lambda\varphi\omicron\omicron\omicron \) is associated with the correct use of language to accord with metaphysical truth.\(^6\)

\(^2\) Kanayama, 2000, covers similar issues, offering an interpretation of Phaedo 96-107 which also considers the meaning of ‘studying in logoi’. I read Kanayama’s article, having already formulated my own reading of the ‘second sailing’, and it is interesting to note that there are a number of similarities between the points we make. However, it is not only my dependence on stylistic points which distinguishes our views. There are also many key differences between our arguments and conclusions, which I will outline below.

\(^3\) Cf. e.g. Hackforth, 1955, 138 and Desjardins, 1990, 123: ‘One of the most pervasive terms in Plato’s dialogues, logos is perhaps at the same time one of the most ambiguous - its meaning ranging all the way from speech, statement, and definition to argument, account, discourse, structure, rationality, and even rationally structuring mind itself’.

\(^4\) Mortley, 1986, 12; Heidegger, 1959, 124. This dimension can perhaps be seen in e.g. the second proposed definition of logos at Thr.206e7ff. and less explicitly in logos as ‘the interweaving of forms’ at Soph.259e5. Cf. Fattal, 1991, 147: ‘...l’utilisation platonicienne du logos n’est pas sans se référer indirectement au fonctionnement simultanément synthétique et analytique du verbe legein homérique.’

\(^5\) Heraclit.550.

\(^6\) These ideas have been widely discussed. See e.g. McCabe, 1994, 192ff.; Mourelatos, 1973, 16 and passim.

Chapter 8 226
instance, in two apparently connected passages from the *Theaetetus* and *Sophist*, the dialogues containing the most explicit discussion of λόγος, linguistic and metaphysical impossibility go hand in hand, causing insurmountable problems for the λόγος itself.

Given the connection of the term λόγος with both verbal expression and argument, explanation, and definition, it seems that λόγος in the ‘second sailing’ has a methodological sense, meaning something like the use of discourse to construct a correct argument and account. Accordingly, by examining how language and style represent the beliefs and arguments about reality expressed in the ‘second sailing’ we may further our understanding of what Plato means by λόγος here and how they might give some degree of access to reality.

This consideration brings the two aims of my chapter together. In working through the ‘second sailing’ in order to see how style might affect our interpretation of the different stages of argument, we may see how Plato uses discourse to construct his beliefs and arguments about reality, and so further our understanding of what he means by searching ἐν λόγοις.

### 8.1 Preliminary points

I differentiate the different stages of the argument with Platonic terms, so that the first ‘simple’ theory of causation, by which the cause of a property in a particular is participation in a matching form, will be known, as in Chapter 7, as the ‘safe

---

7 Along with methodological similarities, one might also see the *Sophist* passage as supplying the *Theaetetus*’ omitted critique of Parmenides (183d11). Cf. Burnyeat, 1990, 79.

8 Plato attacks the Heraclitean Ephesians at *Thet*. 183a2ff., the Parmenidean monists at *Soph*. 244b6-e5. For the Ephesians the complete absence of stability renders both language and metaphysics meaningless, prohibiting even terms like ὄντω, ἵνα μὴ στηρίζωμεν αὐτοῖς τῷ λόγῳ (183a2-b5). The monists’ comprehensive unity apparently precludes any linguistic or metaphysical distinction and results in the positing of paradoxical self-contradictory properties: e.g. the Parmenidean ἐν τῷ πάντω ἐλαίναι is inconsistent with τῷ ὁθῶν λόγῳ, namely that τὸ ἐν must truly be without parts (*Soph*. 244e2ff.). Cf. McCabe, 1994, 145ff. and 200ff., on these passages. Cf. also e.g. *Ti*. 49b-e, where the difficulties, caused by elemental changeability, in our account of the universe are expressed in terms of the linguistic problem of what to call these elements. We mistakenly refer to unstable elements with e.g. τοῦτο or τόδε, but should only use τοῦτον.

9 E.g. 100d4-6.
hypothesis'. By contrast, I refer to the theory which deals with causation by non-opposites as the 'subtler answer'.

8.1.1 Style in the 'second sailing'

Although the stages of the 'second sailing' are not stylistically homogeneous, there are certain stylistic features and trends which predominate throughout and bring it closest, in very general terms, to the style I have named 'verbal minimalism'. Chief amongst these features is a strong degree of verbal and structural repetition, which varies between arguments whose stages of progress are accompanied by small changes in structure, and arguments using a sequence of examples to illustrate the same point, where the structure is more or less repeated and the subject changed. In this way the reader's attention is drawn to structure, in the former case to its changes, in the latter to its continuity.

In very general terms the progress of the argument is clearly laid out and divided into stages, with phrases and particles often marking the beginning or end of a phase, and particles used to indicate logical connections between units or sections. There is a proliferation of nouns formed from τό + neuter adjective, ranging from physical terms like τό θερμόν and τό ψυχρόν (e.g. 103c11ff.) to mathematical, τό περιττόν and τό ἀρτόν (e.g. 104b1-3), to ethical, τό δίκαιον and τό ἀδίκον (e.g. 105d16-e1), so that, even in terms of vocabulary, we see elements of structural repetition. This is especially true of the many α-privative substantives, a number of which appear to be very rare or even neologisms. Moreover, the vocabulary is generally repetitive and, along with structural and lexemic repetition, there is a near complete lack of clear-cut imagery in the 'second sailing'.

---

11 105b8-c2.
12 E.g. 104d1ff.
13 E.g. 105b8ff.
14 E.g. 105b5-6; 105e8-10; the use of ὀρθόκεφαλέα in 104c11; Echocrates' and Phaedo's conversation at 102a4-10; ἅπα in e.g. 102b11 or 105e6
15 E.g. γὰρ in 102b8, 103b2, 104d5, 106c3; ὀῦν in 104d1; ὅπα in 104c7, 104e1, 105d3; τοῖς ὑπνύμοις in 104b6, 104e7; ὅκατα in 106b1, 106c9 etc.
16 A possible exception is ἄπειρωσθεῖν (e.g. 102d9), a rare verb, first used in Herodotus to denote the withdrawal of an army before an enemy invasion (Hdt.9.13 and 14), and then found only in this section of the Phaedo, once in both Plato's Laws (Leg.785b1) and Hippocrates (Hp.loc.hom.33).
Included in this part of the *Phaedo* is my earlier Passage IV (105b5-106a1) and many of the features I have just outlined were those which I identified, in Part I, as characteristic of Passage IV. Not all characteristic features of Passage IV predominate throughout the ‘second sailing’. For example, recurrent and striking ellipse is only prominent in Passage IV (105c10-e7) and one other section (104d12-e6), while the short question and answer style is mixed in the ‘second sailing’ with longer continuous speeches. Nevertheless, Passage IV also has the least clear generic affiliations of all six passages in Part I and, though perhaps to a slightly lesser degree, this stylistic distinctiveness is also true, in various ways, of the ‘second sailing’ as a whole.

As I explained in the last chapter, 102b4ff. can be seen to allude to Anaxagoras in certain ways and the τό + neuter adjective noun-form is typical of the Presocratics, while the clustered α-privatives of 105d13ff. might recall Parmenides. Yet on the whole, the passage is a distinctively Platonic mix of structured repetition and careful variation, with sections like 105c8ff. unusual, even from a Platonic point of view. Certain specific features can be pinpointed as unusual: extreme ellipse; novel α-privatives; structures like ὁ ἄν τί ἐν τῷ σώματι ἐγγένηται [θεών] ἐσται, repeated at 105b8ff. There are also terms like δέχομαι, which not only have an unusual application in this section, but are also repeated continuously.

Through repetition and distinctiveness, then, attention is drawn to the stylistic structure. Moreover, a number of points are also made in linguistic terms, suggesting the importance of language in this section. Nevertheless, it might still seem that my analysis of the ‘second sailing’ does not focus so straightforwardly on style as the

Other recurrent terms here with possible military associations, like δέχομαι, ὅπωμένω, ἐπιφέρω, and προσέχομαι, might then also then be seen to tie in with any martial undertones. Nevertheless, in spite of Burnet's widely accepted comments that 'the metaphors are military throughout' (Burnet, 1911, 102., Cf. e.g. Hackforth, 1955, 155; O’Brien, 1967-8, 204), the general usage of these other terms is so broad that they cannot be restricted to the solely military sense which would lead to their clear classification as deviant (vehicle) terminology. Furthermore, even if some implication of hostility is retained, the terms themselves are used so many times here, that they soon become naturalised within the passage. Questions about their precise meaning are part of a wider uncertainty concerning the precise meaning of many aspects of the argument in general.

17 Although it does not constitute so significant a deviation from its normal usage as to constitute a clear case of imagery. See n.16, above.
previous two case studies. In one respect, this stems from the vast amount of secondary literature written on this passage. At many stages, in order to engage with this, I have had to break into my own analysis and address certain viewpoints within their own terms of reference. Yet, there is another reason. As I will explain below, the 'second sailing' fits together into a tightly cohesive structure, within which a full explanation of individual aspects can only really be given in terms of the overall structure both of particular sections and the 'second sailing' as a whole. This has made it far more difficult than in the previous chapters to comment on the specific significance of individual stylistic points, without offering simultaneously an broader overview of the argument.

8.1.2 Causes or explanations?

There has been considerable debate over whether 'the second sailing' deals primarily with 'causes' or 'explanations', the former taken as having an ontological basis, the latter epistemological. My own understanding of the argument incorporates both these aspects, as long as explanations are based on an underlying reality. For, if this is the case, the cause/explanation distinction is essentially one of emphasis and not substantive. Nevertheless, I shall use 'cause', since this emphasises the metaphysical aspect and avoids the dangers of the 'second sailing' being viewed as purely pragmatic.

Furthermore my conception of 'cause' is broad, departing from the modern notion of 'cause' as 'efficient cause', and involving no assumption of antecedence. I

18 See e.g. Sedley, 1998, 121 n.7 and 122: 'They constitute less an epistemological than an ontological category'. Cf. also e.g. Rowe, 1993b. and Ooms Renard, 1999.
20 Explanation, unlike causation; can be seen as either 'real' or 'pragmatic'. As Ruben, 1990, 21-3, explains, 'real explanations' only exist by virtue of 'the way the things in the world which they are about really are'. By contrast, the 'explanatory pragmatist' sees explanation as entirely 'audience-variant', with ontology playing no role. Cf. also Hankinson, 1998, 4: 'Causes are actual items, events, agents, facts, states of affairs; explanations, on the other hand, are propositional'.
21 Ruben, 1990, 46.
22 If 'causation' does not involve antecedence, it will be freed from Aristotle's objection that the effects caused by Forms should not be intermittent (GC 335b.18-21). Cf. Fine, 1987, 79-81.
follow Sedley in taking a 'cause' to be an item which 'has some characteristic which
made it all along such as to bring about the effect'.

8.2 ‘Synonymy’ and ‘Form-participation’: the ‘safe hypothesis’ (100b1-102a9) as a
single λόγος

In Chapter 7, I discussed how one might see the ‘safe hypothesis’ as a single λόγος
of causation, unlike the accounts given by other physicists, such as Anaxagoras. Yet
Socrates still presents the hypothesis with several different formulations, giving us,
effectively, some degree of synonymy between varying expressions of the same
principle; stylistic variation combined with semantic continuity.

8.2.1 Flexible terminology in the account of the ‘safe hypothesis’

At the outset of the ‘second sailing’ Socrates outlines the ‘safe hypothesis’,
presenting the Form/particular relationship as the simple dependence of particular on
matching Form. The relationship, whose precise nature is not specified, is
represented by several formulations, including the verb μετέχειν, the nouns
παρουσία and κοινωνία, and the datives τῷ καλῷ and μηγέθει. The same words
describe both Form and particular, but with small linguistic variations. Thus, in οὐδὲ
δι᾿ ἐν ἄλλο καλὸν εἶναι ἡ διότι μετέχει ἐκείνου τοῦ καλοῦ (100c5-6) an
adjective represents the particular, an adjectival substantive, τὸ καλὸν, the Form.
Later, the substantive is both Form and particular, with the former singular, the latter
plural: τῷ καλῷ τὰ καλὰ γίγνεται καλὰ (100e2-3). What the language clearly
shows is that Socrates sees causation as the direct ‘effect’ of Form on particular, by
which a ‘like’ Form causes a ‘like’ particular, however this occurs precisely. It is
this relationship, between ‘like’ Forms and particulars, which I describe as

24 Although I shall be touching on aspects of the so-called ‘method of hypothesis’ at 101d1-102a1
(100a3-7 is often seen as connected) and have already discussed parts in Ch.7, I will not be discussing
it in great detail as a separate section. For I am trying to stress the continuity, interconnectedness, and
methodological significance of the ‘second sailing’ as a whole, without seeing one particular part as
being the significant statement of method.
dependence between temporal things and eternal Forms...’.
26 Cf. Sedley, 1998, 115, on the variation of Platonic expressions conveying cause in general.
‘matching’. Admittedly, Socrates’ ‘assertion’ (διςχυρίζομαι) that τὸ καλὸ
πάντα τὰ καλὰ καλὰ (100d7-8), could be taken to demonstrate a preference for
this particular formulation. However, the fact that he does not then stick to this
phrasing suggests that he is asserting the certainty of a ‘like’ causes ‘like’ principle,
rather than advocating correct terminology.

It seems then that the varied formulations here emphasise the importance of the ‘like
into like’ principle over any detailed explanation of the process,27 a reading
corroborated by the end of the list of possible formulations, if this controversial
phrase is read as καὶ ὅπως προσαγορέουμενη (100d6). Nevertheless, even the
alternative conjectures, προσγενομένου and other forms of προσγιγνομαι,28 could
be taken to indicate that the principle is certain, whatever the exact nature of
participation.29

So, it seems that no specific terminology encapsulates the precise working of
participation. However, in spite of his varied verbal formulations, Socrates implies
that he, unlike the ἀντιλογικὸ, has a single account of causation, εἰς λόγος
(101e4).

27 Cf. Rowe, 1993b, 57 and 61. However, while Rowe says that participation’s exact nature is not
outlined here, he claims that the different formulations actually represent distinct explanatory
hypotheses which would give further explanations of how participation works and that the best of
these would provide a λόγος for the Form-participation hypothesis, a course of action recommended
(101d6ff.), but never carried out. Pace Rowe, it seems unlikely that the missing logos of Form
participation ([ὑπόθεσεις] τῶν ἄνωθεν βελτιστῆς, 101d8) is any of these formulations. For this would
imply that the extended explanation of Form-participation is prior to the Form-participation principle
itself. Moreover, it also appears that further explanation of this principle is actually given in the
‘second sailing’. For the ways in which the points made after the ‘method of hypothesis’ augment this
explanation, see e.g. 7.5.4, above and p.252, below. Even Rowe himself suggests that the more
‘subtle’ answer supplements the ‘safe’ by ‘showing how a particular object comes to be occupied by
the Form in question’ (Rowe, 1993b, 67). On the controversy over what would constitute the ‘higher’
hypothesis see e.g. Kanayama, 2000, 51ff. and for other views on ἄνωθεν see Blank, 1986.
28 See e.g. Rowe, 1993b, 56 n.16; and the OCT.
29 Cf. Vlastos, 1973, 86 n.30, on προσαγορεουμένη as indicating the uncertainty of the precise nature
of ‘participation’. He adds that, even if προσγιγνομαι is read: ‘the difference will not be great..., and
will not affect at all the important thing in the citation, so. the avowal of uncertainty in εἰς ὅπως ἀδή
cαὶ ὅπως’. Pace Rowe, 1993b, 56, προσγιγνομαι does not seem to imply the superiority of one
particular formulation.
8.2.2 Why have different formulations?

If the 'safe hypothesis' of causation is so clear and invariable, even with the details unstated, why does Plato present such a range of expressions, rather than a single formulation? In terms of how style corresponds to beliefs, it appears then that there can be synonymy between differing verbal expressions and that some underlying structural continuity transcends the differences. This suggests that particular words and phrases are not so significant for a λόγος as the structure into which they are combined.

One might take this thought a step further, extracting not only points about the composition of λόγος, but also reasons why Socrates might see λόγος as connected with reality. What the synonymy gives us is expressions with different elements, but a common principle. Likewise the 'safe hypothesis' of causation is universally true. Whether we are talking about what makes one person taller than another or ten more than eight (100e8-101b8), the cause will be a 'like' Form. No matter what precise elements are involved, the structure of causation remains the same.

8.3 The introduction of ἐνορτά (102a10-103a7): fixed and changing terminology

At the end of Chapter 7, I showed how one might see the section discussing the respective heights of Simmias, Socrates, and Phaedo (102a10-103a3) as an expansion of the 'safe hypothesis', which demonstrates the necessity of distinct, 'non-constitutive' and 'absolute' property-instances. I will now consider how this passage also leads into and establishes important points for the 'subtler answer'.

There has been considerable debate over whether phrases like τὸ ἐν ἡμῖν μέγεθος (102d7-8) or talk of τὸ μέγεθος possessed by Simmias (e.g. 102c2-3) imply that there is a third type of entity and, if so, what type of entity it is and how it relates to Forms and particulars. Style in this section can be seen to shed some light on these issues.
8.3.1 Introducing a third type of entity (102a10-d4)

In Chapter 7, I proposed that this section demonstrates the need for a third type of entity,\(^{30}\) distinct property-instances which are present non-constitutively in particulars, so that opposite causes do not produce the same result. The existence of this entity is stressed through various formulations. A phrase like οὐ γάρ ποὺ πεφυκέναι Σιμμίαν ὑπερέχειν τοῦτῳ, τῷ Σιμμίαν εἶναι, ἀλλὰ τῷ μεγέθει δὲ τυγχάνει ἔχων (102c1-3) clearly shows that Simmias possesses distinct 'largeness'. Similarly, Socrates and Phaedo are not small because Σωκράτης ὁ Σωκράτης ἐστὶν (102c3-4) and Φαίδων ὁ Φαίδων ἐστὶν (102c7-8), but because of 'smallness'.

Also introduced here are the terms ἔλδοσ and ἐπωνυμία (102b1-3), where the former denotes Forms, the latter the predicate attached to individuals who have certain property-instances through Form-participation. Socrates possesses both 'smallness' and 'largeness' in relation to Simmias and Cebes respectively: ἐπωνυμίαν ἔχει σμικρός τέ καὶ μέγας εἶναι (102c11-12). The ἐπωνυμία, which is evidently not essentially linked to individuals and can be compresent with its opposites,\(^{31}\) will be an important term in distinguishing the relationship between different types of entity.

8.3.2 ἔννοτα and Forms: the 'withdraw or perish' option (102d5-103a3)

While Socrates can admit compresent opposites and have the 'eponyms' 'large' and 'small' simultaneously, there are two types of entity which cannot: αὐτὸ τὸ μέγεθος, presumably the Form 'Large', and τὸ ἐν ἡμῖν μέγεθος, its property-instance (102d6-9). Thus, this stage of the argument implies unambiguously the existence of three different kinds of entity: particulars, Forms, and those which I shall call ἔννοτα from hereon.\(^{32}\) ἔννοτα come to be present in particulars and give the particulars certain characteristics. I use the term ἔννοτα,\(^{33}\) indicating only that

---

\(^{30}\) See Ch.7 p.224, above.

\(^{31}\) On the term 'compresence', as used here and throughout this chapter, see Ch.7 n.7, above.

\(^{32}\) Given that these ἔννοτα are clearly distinguished from Forms, I am not using terms like 'immanent Forms', in order to avoid confusion.

\(^{33}\) Cf. Frede, 1978, 40 n.6, for the term ἔννο. 
they are entities which come to be in things, as with τὸ ἐν ἥμιν μέγεθος, and are distinct from both Forms and particulars, without other commitments as to their precise nature.34

Neither Forms nor ἐνοῦτα can withstand the compresence of opposites, and it is here that Socrates first introduces the ‘withdraw or perish’ alternative, explaining what happens to them when an opposite approaches. He claims that the Form and ἐνοῦ ‘Large’ ἦ ψεῦδει καὶ ὑπεκχωρεῖν ὅταν αὐτῷ προσῆ ὄ τὸ ἐναντίον, τὸ σμικρόν, ἢ προσελθῶντος ἐκεῖνον ἀπολλεῖναι (102d9-e2). Whereas Forms are indestructible and eternal, ἐνοῦτα are characterised by coming to be only in things. Thus, it seems that Forms would flee when an opposite approaches, while ἐνοῦτα, unable to exist outside of the particular in which they are instantiated, would perish.

The ‘withdraw or perish’ opposition recurs throughout the ‘second sailing’ and, despite slight changes of expression, it is always presented in terms of opposing alternatives, being destroyed or yielding and fleeing. For example: ἦτοι ἀπέρχεται ἦ ἀπόλλυται (103a1-2); ἦ ὑπεκχωρεῖσιν αὐτῷ ἦ ἀπολέσθαι (103d8); and ἦτοι ἀπολλύμενα ἦ ὑπεκχωροῦντα (104b10-c1).35 Given that ἐνοῦτα alone appear to be at issue as the argument progresses, commentators have worried in case only the ‘perish’ option is real. Hackforth’s view that the ‘withdrawal’ option does only apply to soul and ‘is apparently brought in to provide for that case’,36 has come under

34 The nature of what I call ἐνοῦτα is very controversial and widely discussed. On the debate in general and for further references, see Gallop, 1975, 195; and Fine, 1986, 76 n.7. Hackforth, 1955, 150 n.1, posits ontologically distinct ‘immanent forms’: ‘it is immanent form - characters like τὸ ψυχρόν which can approach and reside in concrete subjects that Socrates has been and is still concerned with...’. Cf. also e.g. Vlastos, 1973, 83; Frede, 1978, 35. There have been various objections to such views. See e.g. Fine, 1986, 76, who calls ἐνοῦτα ‘immanent characters’, but sees them not as ‘a distinct ontological category from Forms, but (parts of) Forms themselves, when they are in things’. Kanayama, 2000, seems to suggest that the ‘subler aitiai’ which come to be present in e.g. bodies, are particulars (71-3), and clearly distinguishes them from Forms (70). My ἐνοῦτα are in some ways close to O’Brien’s (1967-8, 201-2) ‘particularizations’ which, like Forms, cannot become their opposites, but are nevertheless ontologically particulars. Yet O’Brien’s ‘particularizations’ are very clearly not a third type of entity, but special particulars which, for some reason, cannot admit their opposites: ‘There will be no ‘third thing’, no fieriness in fire that is not particular fire and not the form of fire’. By contrast, I see the ἐνοῦτα as clearly conceived of as a third type of entity which, despite its potential destructibility, cannot simply be some type of particulars, given that particulars themselves are characterised by the compresence of opposites (see e.g. McCabe, 1994, 37ff.). Moreover, even if our interpretations of this point are similar, there are several substantial differences between our overall analyses which I will detail ad loc. below.

35 Cf. O’Brien, 1967-8, 204: ‘Plato’s language makes it clear, here and throughout the argument, that ‘withdraw or perish’ offers a true alternative’.

heavy fire. Certainly, if the ‘withdraw’ option was actually real for the soul alone, the ‘withdraw or perish’ opposition would appear question-begging. Yet, given that Forms and, as we shall see later, the gods, would ‘withdraw’ rather than ‘perish’ on the approach of opposites, these concerns can be dispelled. The ‘withdrawal’ of these entities thus legitimates the opposition, and the first occurrence of the opposition (102e9-10) clearly applies to Forms as well as ἔνοντα, even if Forms are not focused on explicitly in later stages of the ‘second sailing’.38

8.3.3 The ‘anonymous objection’: ἔνοντα, Forms, particulars, and eponymy (103a4-103c6)

According to the ‘anonymous objection’ (103a5-10) Socrates’ recent claims that, for example, τὸ μέγεθος could never admit τὸ σμίκρον and become other than it is (102d7-e3), conflict with the earlier ‘argument from opposites’, which depicts change as a transition between opposites. Socrates responds by giving his clearest explanation of the distinction between his three types of entity. The ‘argument from opposites’ dealt with particulars (πράγματα), whereas they are now concerned with ἔνοντα (τὸ ἐν ἣμιν) and Form (τὸ ἐν τῷ φύσει: 103b5), through whose presence particulars acquire their ἐπωνυμία. It is evident that three distinct types of entity are being posited here, supporting the suggestion made in the previous section.

The ‘anonymous objection’ also has more general ramifications for the function of style in argument. Whereas the exposition of ‘safe hypothesis’ included different verbal formulations with equivalent meanings, the ‘anonymous objection’ episode makes the very opposite move, as similar expressions vary in meaning, according to context. First there are the general verbal likenesses between the formulations of the two theses confused by the anonymous objector. The ‘argument from opposites’ proposes that, for example, ἐκ βραδυτέρου τὸ θάττον [γενήσεται] (71a3-4), so

37 E.g. O’Brien, 1967-8, 204, objects that, if Hackforth is correct, ‘withdrawal’ would amount to ‘perishing’, rendering the distinction superfluous. Cf. Gallop, 1975, 195, who also criticises Hackforth’s view: ‘in view of the repeated stress upon it [i.e. the withdrawal/perish distinction], and its wide range of application..., it seems better to find distinct interpretations for each option, if possible’.
38 Of course, the idea of Forms ‘withdrawing’ might, in itself, seem strange. However, this can be resolved by understanding ‘withdrawal’ not so much as physical withdrawal in the context of the Forms, but as not accepting [the opposite] and yet not perishing. This would seem to account for the important aspects of the ‘withdrawal’ option.
that opposites (expressed by the τὸ + neuter adjective form) come about (γλυκεσθαί) from their opposites. Socrates later point is that τὸ σμικρῶν τὸ ἐν ἡμῖν οἷκ ἔθελει ποτὲ μέγα γλυκεσθαί (102e6-7). Both contexts refer to a change (γλυκεσθαί) in an entity (the adjectival substantive). Admittedly, the ‘argument from opposites’ mentions πράγματα at one point (71a10), and Socrates does later specify that he is concerned with opposites ἐν ἡμῖν (102d7;102e7). Yet until Socrates responds to the ‘anonymous objection’, the distinctions between them are not clearly laid out, so that their verbal similarities may well lead to or at least augment their confusion with each other.

Sameness and difference: terminology and the link between ἐνοντα and Forms

These ideas already suggest how style indicates another point about λόγος and reality. Similar expressions vary in meaning according to context, just as the qualities of particulars in the earlier ‘recollection argument’ were also presented as context-dependent. Moreover, Socrates’ response to the ‘anonymous objection’ contains another perhaps more significant example of how similar or even identical terms and expressions can have different meanings.

In qualifying the expressions, Socrates cleared up the objector’s confusion between πράγματα and ἐνοντα. However, Socrates’ response also provides a very pointed example of a verbal formulation which has undergone an unexplained change in meaning. He has stated, shortly before, that neither Form (αὐτὸ τὸ μέγεθος), nor ἐνον (τὸ ἐν ἡμῖν μέγεθος) will admit their opposites (102d6-9), using the already familiar αὐτὸ τὸ expression to denote Forms. Nevertheless, in his subsequent response, which verbally echoes this statement, the αὐτὸ τὸ formulation, far from distinguishing Forms from ἐνοντα, now clearly designates both: αὐτὸ τὸ ἐναντίον ἐαυτῷ ἐναντίον οἷκ ἀν ποτὲ γένοιτο, οὔτε τὸ ἐν ἡμῖν οὔτε τὸ ἐν τῇ φύσει (103b4-5).

---

39 See e.g. 74b7-9: ἃρ' οὖ λίθοι μὲν ἰσοὶ καὶ ἥλια ἐνοτε ταὐτὰ δυνα τῷ μὲν ἰσα φαίνεται, τῷ δ' οὖ.
40 See e.g. 74c7, where αὐτὸ τὸ ἰσον distinguishes the Form from equal particulars and cf. e.g. 75c11-d1.
Why this sudden switch in the scope of the \( \alpha\upsilon\tau\omicron\ \tau\upsilon \) terminology? In opposition to \( \epsilon\nu\nu\omicron\tau\alpha \) at 102d6-9, it now incorporates \( \epsilon\nu\nu\omicron\tau\alpha \) as well as Forms and is antithetical to particulars (\( \pi\rho\acute{\alpha} \gamma\mu\alpha\tau\alpha \)). As applied to Forms the definitive pronoun \( \alpha\upsilon\tau\omicron\ \tau\upsilon \) presumably indicates something about their pure and essential nature - the Form of the good is 'the unchanging Good itself', as opposed to particular instances of goodness, prone to change and destruction.

When it first appears, then, at the point where Socrates introduces the 'withdraw or perish' option, \( \alpha\upsilon\tau\omicron\ \tau\upsilon \) distinguishes Forms from \( \epsilon\nu\nu\omicron\tau\alpha \), because the latter come to be within particulars and can admit destruction (102d6ff.). Thus, if one point of \( \alpha\upsilon\tau\omicron\ \tau\upsilon \) is to indicate permanence, it is well suited to the Forms/\( \epsilon\nu\nu\omicron\tau\alpha \) opposition, given that the key difference between them is the latter's destructibility.

By contrast, in Socrates' response to the 'anonymous objection' the important distinction is between entities which admit their opposites and those which do not. Here, Socrates stresses similarities rather than differences between Forms and \( \epsilon\nu\nu\omicron\tau\alpha \), neither of which accept their opposites and which are both opposed to particulars, since these accept compresent opposites. Thus \( \epsilon\nu\nu\omicron\tau\alpha \) are on the Forms side of an \( \alpha\upsilon\tau\omicron\ \tau\upsilon/\pi\rho\acute{\alpha} \gamma\mu\alpha\tau\alpha \) opposition and \( \alpha\upsilon\tau\omicron\ \tau\upsilon \) can be seen to indicate the essential nature of Forms with respect to non-acceptance of opposites, a characteristic shared by the \( \epsilon\nu\nu\omicron\tau\alpha \). So the changing scope of \( \alpha\upsilon\tau\omicron\ \tau\upsilon \) draws attention to how \( \epsilon\nu\nu\omicron\tau\alpha \) can be defined in terms of both crucial differences and similarities to Forms. Style reflects the actual relationship between these two types of entity, given that the application of \( \alpha\upsilon\tau\omicron\ \tau\upsilon \) to the Forms' reflects the basis for, on the one hand, their distinctness from, and on the other, their similarities to, \( \epsilon\nu\nu\omicron\tau\alpha \).\(^\text{41}\)

---

\(^{41}\) O'Brien, 1967-8, 209, points out this dual usage of \( \alpha\upsilon\tau\omicron\ \tau\upsilon \), and says that here the 'particularization' which cannot accept its opposite, is being likened to the Form in this respect, and is therefore indicated with the Form terminology. In spite of apparent similarities between our positions, O'Brien takes all examples of the phrase elsewhere to refer, unequivocally, to Forms.
8.3.4 Summary

From the end of the 'method of hypothesis' to the 'anonymous objection' there are a number of new points. While the 'safe hypothesis' involves Forms and particulars, we are now given ἐνοντα, a third type of entity, which come to be in particulars and are like Forms, because of their non-acceptance of opposites, like particulars, because of destructibility. On the approach of opposites, Forms 'withdraw' and ἐνοντα 'perish'.

Style, then, can signify clear differentiation, as when distinguishing the three different kinds of entity or establishing the 'withdraw or perish' option. However, the flexibility of αὐτὸ τὸ and, to a lesser extent, the stylistic similarities between this passage and the 'argument from opposites', have also clearly shown particular words and structures to have a significance, which is not fixed, but context-dependent. So, λόγος seems to depend upon the particular structure and context of its individual elements and, in this respect, once again mirrors Socrates' account of reality. We have only to think, for example, of the equal sticks and stones at 74b8-9, or of the later 'pseudo-causes', like Socrates' limbs, whose role varies with context (98c5ff.).

8.4 Non-opposites and 'essential' opposites: the 'onomy' relationship

Socrates has now made space for ἐνοντα, which come to be in particulars and cannot accept their opposites. So far, however, his examples have only explicitly involved the oppositional property-instances τὸ μέγεθος and τὸ σμικρὸν. Yet, given that soul is not an opposite (nor a property-instance), in order to demonstrate the relevance of ἐνοντα for the soul, he will need to show that they include non-opposites (and a wider range of substances).

8.4.1 Non-opposites and 'essential' opposites (103c7-e1)

This section introduces four distinct substances: fire, heat, snow, and cold. The question and answer θερμὸν τα καλές καὶ ψυχρὸν; ἐγώγε (103c11-12) makes it clear that heat and cold, like the earlier large and small, are viewed as substances.
Although heat differs from fire and cold from snow (103d2-3), they are nevertheless connected so that snow will not accept the opposite of cold, heat, nor fire cold, but will ‘withdraw or perish’ on their approach. Thus, although not spelt out explicitly, Socrates suggests that certain non-opposites (e.g. snow) are ‘essentially’ linked to particular opposites (e.g. cold) insofar as the non-opposites (e.g. snow) will not receive the opposites (e.g. heat) of their ‘essential’ opposites (e.g. cold). 2

At this stage it is not entirely clear exactly what type of entities Plato has in mind and commentators often see this uncertainty as extending throughout many of the subsequent examples in the ‘second sailing’. 3 Up to this point Socrates has discussed what we would call properties, as opposed to substances. When he then introduces fire and snow, they are sometimes taken to be Forms, but more commonly to be physical particulars, 4 seemingly on the assumption of a property/substance distinction. Given that property-instances in the ‘second-sailing’ are clearly treated as substances, they can, however, be grouped along with fire and snow, as different kinds of ἐνομία. It is non-acceptance of opposites which distinguishes them from particulars. So it seems that fire and snow together with heat, cold, large and small, can at least be categorised as ἐνομία, rather than particulars. 45

8.4.2 The ‘onomy’ relationship (103e2-104c10)

Socrates has made clear that certain non-opposites are connected with particular opposites so that the former will not accept the opposites of the latter. He then goes

42 I will be using the term ‘essential’ without its usual philosophical implications, to denote this aspect of the relationship between certain opposite and non-opposite ἐνομία.
44 So e.g. Rowe, 1993a, 253, says that snow etc. must be either property-instances or Forms, but not particulars. Yet here and on the argument as a whole, the most common view appears to be that the ‘second sailing’ concerns a mixture of entities and that, while three and oddness are Forms or property-instances, snow and fire etc. are physical particulars: e.g. Bostock, 1986, 188, says that it concerns a mixture of ‘forms’, ‘forms-in-something’, and ‘physical stuffs such as fire and snow’; Fine, 1987, 95, suggests that a thing which ‘brings along’ an opposite ‘can, but need not, be a Form’; Hackforth, 1955, 162 especially n.3; Frede, 1978, 33-4; Hankinson, 1998, 94.
45 If we are trying to establish parallelism between e.g. fire and large, we might also ask whether there are Forms of fire and snow, just as are clearly posited of large and small (e.g. 102d6). The question of what phenomena have Forms is an important issue in Rep.X and Parm.130ff. (see e.g. McCabe, 1994, 79-80), though never firmly answered. In the Phaedo, it is left very open. Although instances when Forms are clearly at issue discuss only Forms of qualities (e.g. 65d4ff.; 78d3ff.), Forms of physical substances such as snow are at no point precluded.
on to expand upon and clarify their relationship, describing it in terms of a shared 6voµa.

A certain thing’s 6voµa is held not only by that thing itself, but also by a non-opposite which ἔχει ...τῆν ἔκεινου μορφήν ἀει (103e4-5). Socrates’ first example involves the opposite odd (τὸ περιττόν) and three (ἡ τριάς), although he soon brings in other odd numbers similarly related to τὸ περιττόν, as well as moving on to the relationship between even numbers and τὸ ἀρτιον (103e6-104b5). Thus the relationship between a non-opposite and its ‘essential’ opposite is ‘onomy’, with the former always sharing the 6voµa of the latter. Each of the odd numbers is always περιττός, each of the even always ἀρτιος, different though each is from τὸ περιττόν and τὸ ἀρτιον.

Socrates then adds that not only will opposites not accept their opposites, but also non-opposites will not accept the opposites of their ‘essential’ opposites. Instead, non-opposites will ‘withdraw or perish’ on their approach, so that three, for example, will not tolerate the presence of the even (104b6-c10).

*What type of entities have 6νοµατα?*

As I mentioned when discussing fire and snow, the question what type of entities are at issue here is controversial. I propose that ‘onomy’ specifically characterises how related 6νοµατα inhere in particulars, and that it is this specific relationship between 6νοµατα which is being discussed throughout this section (103e2-104b10). Accordingly, I need to give reasons why 6νοµατα are the exclusive focus here, as opposed to the Forms and particulars which many commentators also take to be involved in this passage.

First, why suppose that Plato is concerned here with 6νοµατα as opposed to Forms? The passage establishes the principle that certain non-opposites have ‘essential’ opposites and will not accept the opposites of these. Even though Forms will not, as the earlier argument shows (e.g. 102d5ff.) accept their opposites, they are absolutely
pure, simple, and independent,\textsuperscript{46} so that it would make little sense to talk of them having even an ‘essential’ relationship with other Forms. The subsequent argument strengthens the case against a focus on Forms, as it becomes clear that the non-opposites and opposites under consideration actually enter and occupy particulars.

If this is the case, however, one may well be puzzled by αὐτὸ τὸ ἐἴδος (103e3), given that the αὐτὸ τὸ terminology is perhaps most closely associated with Forms. Thus, O’Brien argues that μὴ μόνον αὐτὸ τὸ ἐἴδος ἀξιοῦσθαι τοῦ αὐτοῦ ὄνοματος ἐλς τὸν ἁλ χρόνον (103e2-4) definitely refers to the Form, claiming that it corresponds to the earlier αὐτὸ τὸ μέγεθος, which is clearly distinguished from τὸ ἐν ἡμῖν μέγεθος (102d6-8). However, as I showed above, the αὐτὸ τὸ terminology can elsewhere be taken clearly and significantly to include ἐνοντα (103b4-5), and cannot be seen exclusively to refer to Forms.\textsuperscript{47} Likewise ἐἴδος, which might also be understood specifically to denote Forms, has a range of meanings and does not necessarily exclude ἐνοντα.\textsuperscript{48}

Another apparent difficulty in this passage arises from the qualifications ἐλς τὸν ἁλ χρόνον and ὑστανπερ ἦ in:

\[
\muὴ \muὸνον \alphaὐτὸ \tauὸ \epsilonἰδὸς \alphaξιοῦσθαι τοῦ αὐτοῦ ὄνοματος \epsilonἰς τὸν ἁλ \chiρόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἄλλο τι ὃ \ἐστι μὲν οὐκ ἐκεῖνο, ἔχει δὲ τὴν ἐκεῖνον μορφήν ἁλ, ὑστανπερ ἦ (103e2-5).
\]

O’ Brien argues that ἐλς τὸν ἁλ χρόνον refers exclusively to αὐτὸ τὸ ἐἴδος, while ὑστανπερ ἦ is in opposition to this and applicable to ἄλλο τι…. Since only Forms have permanence, αὐτὸ τὸ ἐἴδος at least must denote Forms.\textsuperscript{49} If the phrase

\textsuperscript{46} Cf. McCabe, 1994, 64: ‘They [i.e. Forms] are... quite simple..., so that they have no properties at all. They are just “themselves by themselves”, just one.

\textsuperscript{47} Even though O’Brien, 1967-8, 209, has noticed this earlier broadened application of αὐτὸ τὸ (see n.41, above), he still maintains, without justification, that the term here refers unequivocally to Forms.

\textsuperscript{48} For the varied meanings of ἐἴδος see e.g. 73a2, 76c12, 79a6, 98a2, 100b4, 106d6. Moreover, for example, in 102b1, where τὸν ἐἴδου certainly appears to refer to Forms, ἐνοντα have not yet been introduced into the account of causation at all, so that we cannot see it as a clear way of distinguishing Forms from ἐνοντα. Cf. Hackforth, 1955, 150, who says that the phrase αὐτὸ τὸ ἐἴδος refers to ‘immanent forms’, even though “it might seem natural’ to take it as signifying ‘transcendent forms’. He also cites 104c7 as an example where ἐνοντα clearly refers to ‘immanent’ and not ‘transcendent’ forms.

\textsuperscript{49} O’Brien, 1967-8, 213.
really is distinguishing between things which have their name 'for all time' as opposed to those which share the μορφή of these, 'whenever they exist', it is easy to see why the first part would be seen as referring to Forms. Yet, given that the examples which follow clearly show that the important distinction here is between 'essential' opposite and related non-opposite, it seems highly unlikely that a Form/particular distinction would be invoked at this point. Furthermore, since Socrates subsequently suggests that not only is τὸ περιττὸν always (ἀεὶ) said to have its name, but also other things which share this name (103e6-104a3), it does not appear that he is indicating a 'persistence' based distinction between these pairs of entities.

An alternative reading of 103e2-5 is available, and would support this view. If, as is quite natural, we take the whole of ἀξιοῦσαι τοῦ αὐτοῦ ὀνόματος εἰς τὸν ἀεὶ χρόνον as applicable to the subject in both parts of the antithesis, it would also refer to ἄλλο τι...Consequently, εἰς τὸν ἀεὶ χρόνον, far from precluding and being in opposition to ὁματερ ἦ, would then appear actually to be compatible with it. The phrase would then mean that both αὐτὸ τὸ ἔλθος and ἄλλο τι...always have the same ὀνομα, whenever they exist, a reading which fits in perfectly with opposite and non-opposite ἐννομα, since these have no permanent existence, being destroyed by the approach of their opposites.

Along with αὐτὸ τὸ ἔλθος, other terms have also been construed as referring to Forms. Notably, O'Brien claims that here and elsewhere a singular noun, like ἡ τριάς, denotes the Form and plural numbers like τὰ τέταρτα the particulars. However, even if linguistic usage varies between the two halves of this passage, the contrasting halves are actually so closely parallel that it seems highly unlikely that the second, ostensibly a demonstration of precisely the same principle as the first, should concern entirely different types of entity:

50 Grammatically it is possible to take ὁματερ ἦ to refer collectively to the two neuter subjects αὐτὸ τὸ ἔλθος and ἄλλο τι...
52 This is supported by the use of αὐτῷ at the beginning of the second part.
This view is strengthened by the fact that the corresponding phrases ὁ ἡμισυς τοῦ ἀρτιοῦ ἀπας and ἂν ὁ ἐπερ τὸ ἄρτιον ὅμως ἔκαστος ἄυτῶν ἄρτιος ἔστιν ἄει. (104a7-b4)

Hence it seems improbable that Forms are the focus here, and there are also good reasons for discounting particulars. αὐτὸ τὸ (103e3) immediately suggests that particulars are not at issue, a view supported by the fact that the non-opposites and their 'essential' opposites clearly have fixed ὀνοματα, whereas particulars are characterised by their changeability and acceptance of compresent opposites, unlike substances sharing an ὀνομα (104b6-c3).

So given that, as I have shown above, there are also good reasons for supposing that the earlier parts of this section are concerned solely with ἔννοια, there seems to be no sufficient linguistic evidence here for seeing these lines as dealing with Forms or particulars rather than ἔννοια.

8.4.3 'Onomy' and 'eponymy'

This is the second description of a relationship between entities in linguistic terms within the 'second sailing'. Socrates said earlier that particulars derive ἑπωνυμαί from their ἔννοια and participation in the Forms, a very different relationship from that between entities sharing the same ὀνομα, which is exclusive to ἔννοια. We can therefore distinguish between 'eponymy'/'onomy': the former denotes the non-essential presence of ἔννοια within particulars; the latter the invariable relationship between non-opposite ἔννοια and their 'essential' opposite ἔννοια.

53 O'Brien, 1967-8, 218, does notice the parallel, but dismisses it, by saying that the linguistic distinction becomes 'firmier' as the argument continues.
54 See e.g. the description of sensibles at 79a9-10 as μηδέποτε κατὰ ταύτα. Cf. e.g. 80b4.
55 See e.g. 102a6 and c11ff and n.34, above.
56 See 103b7ff. and 102b3ff. respectively. See also p.237, above.
As the argument continues, the ‘onomy’ relationship will also help to establish a more expansive understanding of how Form-participation occurs.

As far as I am aware, this ‘eponymy’/‘onomy’ distinction has not been discussed. Frede, one of the few who discuss ‘eponyms’, says that the ‘“eponymy” criterion’ is found at both 103b8-9 and 103e, failing to notice that the former deals with ἐπωνυμίαι, the latter with δοματα. She goes on to say that ‘eponymy’ is ultimately insufficient because it does not distinguish between essential and accidental properties, when, in fact, the unnoticed distinction between ‘onomy’ and ‘eponymy’ suggests a version of the essential/accidental opposition itself.

δοματα and ἐπωνυμίαι are both types of predicate. Attributing δοματα to an entity indicates fixed and permanent characteristics and relationships in ἐνοντα, while ἐπωνυμίαι are the transitory names acquired by particulars. Yet the verbal structure of δοματα and ἐπωνυμίαι is the same. The ἐνον three, for example, is odd (ἐστι περιττός: 104b2), while the claim that Σιμμίαν Σωκράτους ... μείζων ἦνα (102b5) means that Simmias has the ‘ἐπωνυμία’ μέγας. The significance of predication is therefore, as with other stylistic points, dependent on its context. For predicating an adjective of a particular noun could denote either an ‘essential’ or a transient attribute. This ambiguity also goes beyond the verbal level, highlighting a possible confusion in how we understand actual entities. For seeing Simmias to be large, we might suppose this to be a quality he has essentially, by virtue of being Simmias, rather than having this quality through the presence of an ἐνον, large. Clarification of the ambiguity between predicates may then lead to a greater understanding of the entities they describe.

8.5 Defining ἔνοντα: structure and ambiguity (104c11-105b4)

Having outlined the relationship between non-opposites and their ‘essential’ opposites, insofar as the former will not tolerate the compresence of the latter,

---

57 Frede, 1978, 37. Cf. Ooms Renard, 1999, 135-40, who also claims that the same underlying ‘eponymy principle’ is present both in 102b and 103e.
58 Frede, 1978, 37: ‘“Eponymy” as such is not sufficient, because...all things can be called after their properties, even if they are only accidental ones’. 

Chapter 8 245
Socrates now defines the kind of entities involved (104c11-12), and expands his explanation of how these interact with particulars. Strangely, the style can be seen to create some degree of confusion, given that the repetition of certain stylistic structures suggests a continuity and parallelism of meaning, while a coherent interpretation of the passage depends upon recognising that the significance of particular terms and phrases actually changes from line to line. This recognition can only be achieved through consideration of the structure as a whole.

8.5.1 What kind of entities are at issue here

At 104 c11 Socrates asks βούλει ὅν...ὁρισώμεθα ὑποῖα ταῦτα ἐστιν; Presumably, ὑποῖα ταῦτα refers to the final items of his previous point, ἀλλ' ἄττα τὰ ἐναντία οὐχ ὑπομένει ἐπίνοια, as opposed to τὰ ἐλθὶν τὰ ἐναντία (104a7-9). Accordingly, he is apparently offering to define the non-opposite ἐνούντα of the previous passage, which share the δύναμιν of an 'essential' opposite ἐνοῦν and will not accept its opposite, although not being opposites themselves.

Socrates begins by explaining their function in relation to the particulars in which they come to be present: τάδε εἶν ἃν, ἃ ὅτι ἃν κατάσχη μὴ μόνον ἀναγκάζει τὴν αὐτοῦ ἱδέαν αὐτὸ ἑοχεῖν, ἀλλ' καὶ ἐναντίον αὖ τῷ ἄεὶ τινος (104d1-3). This line contains several difficulties, as suggested by Cebes' τρές ὑμεῖς. Not only is there the question of ἱδέα's precise meaning, but the grammar is also unclear, and there has been considerable debate over which of ἃ and ὅτι are subject and object of κατάσχη. Either alternative is problematic. For although αὐτοῦ appears to refer to the subject and αὐτὸ the object, both are singular, while ἃ suggests that one should be plural.

ἀ� seems to be the subject of κατάσχη, referring back to ἀλλ' ἄττα in 104c8, the non-opposite ἐλθὶν which do not accept opposites. As long as we accept that αὐτοῦ

39 I follow the 1995 OCT in reading αὖ τῷ (104d3) rather than the main manuscripts' αὐτῷ. On the implausibility of αὐτῷ see e.g Gallop, 1975, 236; Rowe, 1993a, 256: 'The MS reading αὐτῶ (d3) is impossible; Robin's τῷ (= τῶν) is the best available solution'. Moreover, αὖ τῷ is not an emendation, but a legitimate (re)interpretation of the inherited original, or putative original, sequence ΑΥΤΟΙ, the (Byzantine) interpretation of which as αὐτῷ has no independent weight.

Chapter 8 246
(104d2) refers to the subject of κατάσχη, the apparent contrast between τὴν αὐτοῦ ἱδέαν and ἐνντιόν αὖ τῷ ἀεὶ τινος, which the subject of κατάσχη is said to bring (104d1-3), suggests that the subject of κατάσχη must be a non-opposite. This also suggests that ἱδέα, which describes an opposite at 104b9, is not restricted to opposites, but pertains to both opposites and non-opposites. Finally, it is not implausible that the subject could shift between plural (αὐτοῦ) and singular (αὐτοῦ), which would resolve the grammatical difficulty.

One might then translate 104d5-7 as: ‘so, Cebeς, would these be the kind of things which, whatever they [occupy], compel it not only to have their own form, but also (the form) of something opposite to something [i.e. an ‘essential’ opposite].’ This would make sense of Socrates’ next point, about ἡ τῶν τριῶν ἱδέα (104d5-7). Here the previous point seems to have been condensed so that, rather than the ἱδέα coming from occupation by a non-opposite ἐνοῦ, the ἱδέα itself now does the occupying. A comparison of both points suggests that, despite ambiguities in the precise sense of ἱδέα and κατέχειν, the crux is that occupation by a non-opposite ἐνοῦ such as three means that the occupied particular will be occupied by both a non-opposite and its related ‘essential’ opposite.

Some of the stylistic parallels here therefore appear illusory or deceptive. For despite strong parallelism between 104d1-3 and 104d5-7, many of the verbal similarities are misleading, implying semantic similarity where there are, in fact, differences. We have already seen, for example, how the precise sense of ἱδέα wavers. Yet ἱδέα is not alone. ἄ ἄν ἡ τῶν τριῶν ἱδέα κατάσχη (104d5-6) is similar to the previous ἄ διπτ ἄν κατάσχη (104d1), suggesting a parallelism between the two instances. However, whereas at first, notwithstanding certain difficulties, ἄ seems to be the subject, grammar dictates that in the second phrase ἄ must be the object of κατάσχη, since ἡ τῶν τριῶν ἱδέα is obviously the subject. Thus, the non-opposite ἐνοῦτα remains as the grammatical subject in both phrases.

---

60 This view is widely accepted, by e.g. O’Brien, 1967-8, 215-6; Gallop, 1975, 202; Bostock, 1986, 186; Rowe, 1993a, 256. They all offer reasons for rejecting the idea that διπτ is the subject and αὐτοῦ refers to the object of κατάσχη, as suggested by e.g. Hackforth, 1955, 151.
61 See e.g. Gallop, 1975, 202, and Bostock, 1986, 185-6.
62 Cf. Kanayama, 2000, 68-9 contra those who take ἄ at 104d1 and 5 as semantically parallel.
All in all, and, in spite of certain ambiguities, retaining the non-opposite ενοντα as the subject of these lines allows an interpretation which is coherent both internally and in relation to the preceding and following sections. ὡσπερ ἄρτι ἐλέγομεν (104d5) supports this reading, explicitly connecting these words with the passage where ἡ τριάς and τὸ περιττόν exemplified the ‘onomy’ relationship between non-opposites and their ‘essential’ opposite ενοντα. This link is also suggested by the reappearance of μορφή in Socrates’ next remarks (104d10), a term used only here and in the first explanation of ‘onomy’, where Socrates says that something (on my reading a non-opposite ενον) which shares another’s δομα, even though different from it, has τὴν ἐκείνου μορφήν ἀεί (103e5).

8.5.2 Clarifying the relationship between ενοντα and particulars

I now want to focus on two important points. The first is the way that a new ‘technical’ sense is acquired by the α-privative form of adjective. Although the significance of this sense is not fully recognisable immediately (104e5), it will become important later in the argument. The second point is the clarification of the ενοντα/particulars relationship in this section’s summary (104e7-105b3).

ἀναρτιος ἄρα ἡ τριάς (104e5) concludes the arguments about ἡ τῶν τριῶν λέεα, beginning at 104d5. Being an ἀναρτιον seems to involve the following: compelling the thing it occupies to be odd (10d5-6) and never accepting the τάτα of the even. So when three is, in conclusion, described as ἀναρτιος, the α-privative adjective appears to encapsulate the ideas that it brings its essential ‘opposite’, the uneven, and will not allow the compresence of that negated by the α-privative. As I said above, this sense of α-privative terms will soon become significant.

Socrates now gives his definition of what kind of things are non-opposites, but still do not accept opposites. Both in his recapitulation of the question and his answer (104d6-105a5) he says that non-opposites always ‘bring along with’ them their opposites: οἷον νῦν ἡ τριάς τῷ ἀρτίῳ οὐκ οὕσα ἑναντία οὐδέν τι μᾶλλον αὐτῷ [τῷ ἑναντίου] δέχεται, τὸ γὰρ ἑναντίου ἀεὶ αὐτῷ ἐπιφέρει. The verb
ἐπιφέρειν, introduced here, conveys the important aspects of the relationship between non-opposite and 'essential' opposite ἐνοντα, and particulars.

105a2-5 is a clear final summary, consistent with my interpretation of this section's earlier parts. Not only do opposites not accept their opposites (μη μόνον τὸ ἐναντίον τὸ ἐναντίον μη δέχομαι), but also those things which bear opposites to whatever they approach (ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐκείνο, δὲ ἂν ἐπιφέρῃ τι ἐναντίον ἐκείνα, ἐφ' ὃτι ἂν αὑτὸ ἢ). The bearer itself (αὐτὸ τὸ ἐπιφέρον) would never accept the opposite of the thing being borne [by it] (τὴν τὸν ἐπιφερομένου ἐναντιότητα μηδέποτε δέχομαι). A number of points are left unclear, like the precise relationship between the non-opposite and 'essential' opposite ἐνον and how exactly ἐνοντα come to be within particulars. Nevertheless, the conclusion clarifies the idea that non-opposite ἐνοντα bring 'essential' opposite ἐνοντα to particulars and will not accept the presence of the latters' opposites.

Gallop suggests that there is an absence of 'systematic doctrine' here.63 Certain terms do appear to vary in meaning, while others remain consistent, but with aspects of meaning left unclear. Nevertheless, on linguistic grounds it still seems possible to maintain that throughout this section the subject is ἐνοντα and to reach a consistent interpretation of the passage which is also compatible with its wider context. To do this, one must follow the structure closely, understanding terms and phrases only in relation to the other parts of the passage as a whole. While this may not yield a full elucidation of terms like κατέχειν or ἐπιφέρειν, it still sheds light upon the crucial aspects of their meaning in the immediate context and also on their role within the passage as a whole. The structure of argument here therefore suggests another point about searching ἐν λόγοις: the importance of overall coherence, rather than the fixed significance of individual elements, reflecting the same ideas about the necessity of coherence for an ordered universe found in the earlier 'Anaxagoras episode'.

---

63 Gallop, 1975, 195-6.
64 See Ch.7 p.206, above, and also 8.8.1, below.
8.6 'The subtler answer': α-privative terms and the proof that the soul is ἀθάνατος (105b5-e10)

Having made various points about how ἐνοντα come to be present within particulars, Socrates now incorporates these into his 'subtler answer'. Here, by relying on the special sense of α-privative terms first established in the preceding section, he is able to offer a proof that the soul is ἀθάνατος. This is one side of the proof Cebes earlier claimed to be necessary if one is to be justifiably confident when death approaches: ὅτι ἐστιν ψυχὴ παντάπασιν ἀθάνατον τε καὶ ἀνώλεθρον (88b5-6).65

8.6.1 Why the answer is κομψοτέρος and 'safe' (105b5-c7)

In this section Socrates proposes a second account of 'causation', his κομψοτέραν (subtler) answer. This is the idea that the presence of a non-opposite within a particular brings about the presence of its essential opposite, just as fire brings about heat in a body. As is widely acknowledged, it seems strange that Socrates describes this answer as κομψοτέραν, given that he has previously used that term pejoratively, when criticising the spurious causal entities posited by others to explain phenomena like the coming-into-being of two: τὰς ἐς σχίσεις ταῦτας καὶ προσθέσεις καὶ τὰς ἀλλὰς τὰς τοιαύτας κομψειὰς (101c7-8). It seems unlikely that Plato intends his κομψοτέραν answer as literally a 'subtler answer' which displaces the earlier 'safe' hypothesis. To solve the problem, both Rowe and Ooms-Renard suggest that it actually augments the original hypothesis, by supplementing the explanation of how Form-participation occurs, without adding extra entities in the manner of the physicists criticised by Socrates.66

κομψοτέραν, then, can be taken to mean more complex, but not superior. The idea of complexity does link the 'subtler answer' to the other physicists,67 although there are also clear differences. Hackforth understands κομψοτέραν as 'cleverer' without

---

65 Cf. Socrates' later recapitulation of Cebes' point: ἄξιος ἐπιδειχθῆναι ἡμῶν τὴν ψυχὴν ἀνώλεθρον τε καὶ ἀθάνατον οὕσαν (95b9-c1).
irony and claims that the account of causation is 'carried a stage further' here.\textsuperscript{68} However, although the 'subtler answer' expands upon the explanation of Form-participation, there are no substantial reasons for taking it as a refinement or replacement theory of causation itself, and it seems more likely to be a derivative account of the phenomena which occur because of simple Form-participation causation.\textsuperscript{69} The language is very different from that with which causation was clearly indicated in the 'safe hypothesis'. As Ooms-Renard points out, αὐτὰ is not used in the 'subtler answer',\textsuperscript{70} and its last appearance in the 'second sailing' is at 101c4. Moreover, the 'subtler answer' does not involve any of the formulations used earlier to signify causation,\textsuperscript{71} but introduces a new and distinct expression: ὅ ἀν τί ἐν τῷ σώματι ἐγγένηται θερμόν ἐσται (105b8-9).\textsuperscript{72} This simply suggests that the presence of something in a body means that another related thing will also be present, but does not state that the former \textit{causes} the latter in the same clear way as the account of causation in the 'safe hypothesis'.

Yet one might also see κομψός as having a more precise sense than simple 'expansion'. In the earlier 'hypothesis' passage κομψεῖας characterised the pseudo-causes of 'wiser' people (101c6-9), who posit a multitude of different explanatory entities. By contrast, Socrates has a single account of causation (εἰς λόγος), based on a simple one-to-one mapping between Form and particular. Moreover, if we go back further, to the 'Anaxagoras passage', one of the reasons Anaxagoras' 'pseudo-causes' were criticised was because of their plurality.\textsuperscript{73}

For κομψός to have connotations of plurality would make sense in the context of the 'subtler answer'. For, while the single λόγος of the 'safe hypothesis' apparently depends upon a direct one-to-one relationship between its constituents, the 'subtler

\textsuperscript{68} Hackforth, 1955, 158 and 161. Cf. e.g. Hankinson, 1998, 94, who sees Plato's 'subtler causes' as 'a non-trivial account of causal explanation', as opposed to the 'charge of triviality' to which the safe cause is open; Bostock, 1986, 184ff.; Vlastos, 1973, 102ff.

\textsuperscript{69} Cf. e.g. Gallop, 1975, 211: 'the new answer does not supersede the old "safe" one in terms of Forms, but supplements it, by showing how a particular object comes to be occupied by the Form in question'; Rowe, 1993b, 67.

\textsuperscript{70} Ooms Renard, 1999, 143. Even so, Kanayama, 2000, still refers to the entities discussed in the 'subtler answer' as 'subtler aitiai' (see e.g. 69).

\textsuperscript{71} For a list of these see Sedley, 1998, 115; and p.232ff., above.

\textsuperscript{72} O'Brien, 1967-8, 223, gives a good translation: '[what is it that], whatever things it comes to be in, in its body, the same thing will be hot'.

\textsuperscript{73} See Ch.7 p.209, above.
answer' incorporates what could be seen in various respects as several λόγοι. Most simply, it involves multiple principles, like the mutual exclusivity of opposite ενοντα and how certain non-opposite ενοντα share an opposite’s δομα. Furthermore, according to the ‘subtler answer’, the presence of a number of non-opposite ενοντα could be understood as explaining the presence of an opposite. For example, three, five, and other odd numbers, all lead to the presence of the odd (104a7-b2). The ‘subtler answer’s dependence on a number of λόγοι could then be a reason for its description as κομψοτέραν, since plurality is a characteristic it shares with the physicists’ pseudo-causes.

However, although this ‘secondary’ account of ‘causation’ derives from the primary direct Form/particular relationship which constitutes the real ατία, there is, as Socrates says, a degree of ‘safety’ in the ‘subtler answer’: λέγω...ἐκ τῶν νῦν λεγομένων ἄλλην ὅρων ἀσφάλειαν (105b6-8). For the ‘subtler answer’ rests on the idea of ‘onomy’, insofar as non-opposite ενοντα are connected with opposites in such a way that the presence of the former in a particular will invariably necessitate the presence of the latter. As commentators like Rowe and Fine have suggested, the ‘subtler answer’s safety clearly does not derive from specifying “necessary” conditions for causation. For the odd’s presence does not necessitate the presence of three, even though three “causes” the odd to be present.74 Nevertheless, some ‘safety’ still derives from the invariability of the ‘onomy’ principle, because the ‘subtler answer’ rules out causation of opposites by opposites.75 In these ways, it is not, as Rowe and Fine suggest, liable to the same objections as the earlier ‘pseudo-causes’.76

75 Cf. Kanayama, 2000, 73ff.
76 Rowe, 1993b, 66-7, claims that ‘safe’ must be ironic because several non-opposites can bring the same opposite and the method is therefore ‘indistinguishable from the one which led to the puzzles of 96-7’. Fine, 1987, 97, goes further, proposing that the ‘subtler answer’ ‘allows some explanations involving opposites’, and citing Gallop’s example of ‘fever’ and ‘the opposite of fever - hypothermia’ as able to explain illness. However, ‘fever’ in the ‘subtler answer’ passage is treated as a non-opposite which leads to an opposite, ‘illness’, so that this problem would not arise. Moreover, if ‘hypothermia’ were also included in the passage it would probably be treated as another non-opposite, akin to ‘fever’, insofar as both entail the presence of ‘illness’.

Chapter 8 252
The significance of the \( \alpha \)-privative form

At 104e5 Socrates concluded that the three is uneven (\( \delta \nu \alpha \rho \tau \iota \sigma \circ \varsigma \ \delta \rho \alpha \ \tau \rho \iota \delta \varsigma \)) in an argument which appears to imply that, if something is called \( \delta \nu \alpha \rho \tau \iota \sigma \circ \varsigma \), it will always bring the odd, its 'essential' opposite, to whatever it occupies, and will never accept the compresence of the even, the opposite of its 'essential opposite'. From various points above, we can also draw the further inference that, should the odd, the opposite of its 'essential opposite', approach, the \( \delta \nu \alpha \rho \tau \iota \sigma \circ \varsigma \) thing will either 'withdraw or perish' (e.g. 104c1).

In this earlier section the only \( \alpha \)-privative term is \( \delta \nu \alpha \rho \tau \iota \sigma \circ \varsigma \), describing the even. However from the 'subtler answer' passage it emerges that certain properties are attributed not only to \( \delta \nu \alpha \rho \tau \iota \sigma \circ \varsigma \), but to \( \alpha \)-privatives in general. The first example here, \( \delta \nu \alpha \rho \tau \iota \sigma \circ \nu \) (105d15), refers back to the earlier section. Yet the point is soon expanded to incorporate others:

\[
\tau \delta \ \delta \iota \kappa \alpha i \circ \nu \ \mu \iota \ \delta \chi \omicron \omicron \nu \omicron \nu \ \kappa \alpha i \ \delta \nu \ \mu \omicron \sigma \nu \kappa \circ \nu \ \mu \iota \ \delta \chi \xi \epsilon \tau \kappa \alpha i \circ \nu ;
\delta \mu \omicron \upsilon \circ \omicron , \ \epsilon \phi \eta , \ \tau \delta \ \delta \delta \iota \circ \kappa \omicron .
\]

(105d16-e1)

This seems to imply that the earlier points about opposites and non-opposites applied to \( \tau \delta \ \delta \nu \alpha \rho \tau \iota \sigma \circ \nu \) are indeed true of \( \alpha \)-privatives in general. Something which cannot accept the compresence of the opposite of its 'essential' opposite (and, by implication, will 'withdraw or perish' should this happen, and will also compel its 'essential' opposite to be present in whatever it occupies), is known by a term formed from an \( \alpha \)-privative and the adjective applied to the opposite of its 'essential' opposite. For example, whatever is unable to accept the opposite \( \tau \delta \ \delta \iota \kappa a \iota \circ \nu \) will be known by a term made up of the \( \alpha \)-privative and \( \delta \kappa a \iota \circ \nu \), namely \( \delta \delta \kappa \omega \circ \nu \).\textsuperscript{77}

\textsuperscript{77} Cf. Gallop, 1975, 215 and Kanayama, 2000, 82: \( \delta \nu \alpha \rho \tau \iota \sigma \circ \nu , \ \delta \delta \kappa \omega \circ \nu , \ \delta \mu \omicron \upsilon \circ \omicron \) are simply terms given to 'what does not admit the Form of the even/ the just/ the cultured'. Cf. also 83 on 'the idiom of "\( \alpha \)-G" ...[as introduced] to apply to what rings up the \( F \) and occupies other things'. While I am pleased to see that, in drawing attention to the special function of the \( \alpha \)-privative form, I agree with
A novel usage

So far a variety of linguistic structures have not only contributed to the structure of the argument, but have also represented different relationships between entities. Here, morphological phenomena, the recurrent α-privative compounds, take on such a role. Thus Plato seems to attribute a novel and specific sense not solely to a specific lexeme, but to a general lexemic form. Effectively, he is technicalising a linguistic form in a way crucial to the passage’s argument. The attribution of this ‘technical’ α-privative to adjectives from such varied lexical fields reflects how, for Socrates here, such diverse entities all fit into the same ‘causal’ structure.

Various features bring out the novelty and significance of this form. The general structure of 105dff., within which the α-privatives are systematised, is distinctive, without clear extant parallels, as I showed in Chapter 5. Furthermore, although strings of α-privatives are fairly common, especially in verse,78 and Prier sees the cluster in Parmenides B8 as indicative of an ‘archaic’ trend,79 there are no extant examples like the Phaedo’s systematisation of this compound. Several of the α-privative lexemes here are either very rare or actually unique to Plato within surviving literature,80 so that he not only gives the form itself a new specialised sense, but is possibly even creating new lexemes to fit into this system. These are ᾧφυκτος, ἀνάρτιος, and ἀθερμος, all appearing only in this passage, as well as ἀνώλεθρος, which is extremely rare.81

Kanayama, the latest on the ‘second sailing’, there are many crucial differences between our understanding of this function. For example, Kanayama seems only to allow for Forms and particulars, seeing α-privative terms as referring to those things which cannot admit opposite Forms. He also suggests (82) that e.g. being ἄνδρικος does not necessarily indicate that something is ‘odd’. On my analysis, a term like ἄνδρικος refers either to an essential opposite or to the non-opposites linked to it in an ‘onomy’ relationship, meaning that they will always be ‘odd’. Moreover, our understanding of the final proof is very different. See n.87, below.

78 Cf. Ch.5 p.125, above.
79 Describing Parm B8., Prier, 1976, 109, writes that ‘these symbolic characteristics are all formed, except one, with the archaic alpha privative prefix’.
80 See Ch.4, p.85, above.
81 Cf. Gallop, 1975, 215: ‘at 106a3-10 “un-hot” and “un-coolable” translate words coined by Plato to parallel “im-mortal”’.

Chapter 8 254
The specialised meaning of ἀνάρτιος, the first of the α-privatives used here, is made particularly prominent. The later examples (105d13ff.) feature the positive and negative form of the same stem, such as τὸ δικαιον/τὸ δικον and μουσκίκων/ἀμουσον (105d13-e1). By contrast, prior to the introduction of ἀνάρτιος at 104e5, the opposite of ἄρτιος is known as περιττός. So Socrates' switch to ἀνάρτιος to conclude his points about ένοντα not accepting the compresence of opposite ένοντα might suggest that the α-privative form denotes more than the straightforward opposition conveyed by pairs such as περιττός and ἄρτιος.

The soul is ἀθάνατος

The α-privative form signifies that the entity to which it is applied cannot accept the presence of that negated by the α. From the earlier sections, we can also infer that, when the latter approaches, the former will either 'withdraw or perish'. Although the α-privative terms are based on opposition, they are also applicable to those non-opposites that bring 'essential' opposites to particulars and do not accept the opposites of these (just as three is ἀνάρτιος). So a term like ἀνάρτιος applies not only to the odd, but to all odd numbers: they are linked by an δομα. Thus, once it is accepted that the soul always brings life to a body (105d3-5), the transition to calling the soul ἀθάνατος follows.

On my analysis Socrates' conclusion that the soul is ἀθάνατος implies that when the soul is present in a body life is also necessarily present and, accordingly, death cannot be admitted. Admittedly, the precise nature of the soul is not evident. However, this passage presents the soul's actions as at least closely analogous to ένοντα. For example, the soul is said to 'occupy' (κατέχειν) a thing and 'bring' (ἐπιφέρω) life (105d3). This recalls 104d1-105a5, where κατέχειν refers to an ένον as present in a particular and ἐπιφέρω to how the presence of a non-opposite entails the presence of its connected opposite.82

82 Cf. Hackforth, 1955, 162, on how this argument must be concerned with [immanent] forms: 'surely the use of the word κατέχειν in 105d3 is...conclusive;... it is inconceivable that it could mean there anything other than what it meant at 104d1, namely the occupation of a subject by an immanent form'. However, I do not agree with Hackforth that soul is an 'immanent form'.
Given the restricted sense of α-privative terms, this stage of the argument has only shown that if a body has a soul it will also have life and will not admit death without both the former either ‘withdrawing or perishing’. This all depends on the points established earlier, which dictate that the presence of certain non-opposite ενούτα in particulars means that ‘essential’ opposite ενούτα will also be present, and that neither non-opposite nor opposite ενούτα will admit ενούτα opposite to the latter, but will either ‘withdraw or perish’.

So far, then, the ‘second-sailing’ has satisfied the first of Cebes’ demands, having provided a proof that the soul is ἀθάνατος. In addition, it has given a clearer indication both of how particulars take on characteristics, and of how life, death, and soul are related. However, the issue of ‘indestructibility’, being ἀνωλεθρος, has still not been mentioned, and there has certainly been no argument to show that the soul has this property. All Socrates has shown is that the soul will not remain in a body if death enters, but will ‘withdraw or perish’. The very careful language in which this argument is established makes it clear that Socrates means no more than this when he talks about the soul being ἀθάνατος.

8.7 The soul as ἀνωλεθρος (105e11-107b10)

Socrates now sets out to fulfil Cebes’ second demand (88b5-6), by offering proof that the soul is ἀνωλεθρος. The standard criticism of his argument here is that it depends on the question-begging assumption that being ἀθάνατος entails being ἀνωλεθρος, and actually offers no independent proof that the soul is ἀνωλεθρος. However, my understanding of ἀθάνατος derived from the preceding sections allows us to see the two terms as having significantly different meanings. Exploiting these two meanings, Plato is now able to offer a proof that the soul is ἀνωλεθρος, which is distinct from the proof that it is ἀθάνατος, given in the previous section.

8.7.1 The meaning of ἀνωλεθρος and its distinctness from ἀθάνατος

At 105e11 Socrates embarks on a lengthy proof that the soul is ἀνωλεθρος. Yet he is often accused of taking ἀθάνατος to imply ‘indestructibility’, in line with its
conventional sense, allowing him simply to make the assumption that an δάνατος soul will also be ἀνωλεθρος, without adding any substantive new points. Yet, if one can show that the two terms have very distinct meanings here and that proofs are given not only for the soul being δάνατος but also ἀνωλεθρος, it may be possible to dismiss such accusations.

The usual solution seems to be to claim that, although both terms indeed convey indestructibility, there are nevertheless clear and important differences between the types or aspects of indestructibility that they signify. However, these readings run into difficulties, because of their insistence that δάνατος conveys indestructibility and that, accordingly, δάνατος refers to the destruction of the soul.

By contrast, my earlier analysis points to an alternative understanding of δάνατος, according to which, once present in a body, the soul (being δάνατος) precludes death’s presence, and death will only be admitted if the soul ‘withdraws or perishes’. In accordance with the sense of α-privative terms established through usage in the ‘second sailing’, δάνατος means only the inability to accept the compresence of death and carries no implication of indestructibility. Moreover, other aspects of the ‘subtler answer’ passage also point towards such a conclusion. Socrates asks ‘what is it that, whatever body it comes to be in, that body will be

---

83 On this conventional sense see e.g. Gallop, 1982, 208.

84 A common suggestion is e.g. that δάνατος refers to the soul’s destruction on separation from the body, while ἀνωλεθρος denotes some other type of destruction of the soul. Hackforth, 1955, 163: ‘the adjective δαινατον signifies no more than soul’s immunity from that particular kind of extinction which might be supposed to befall it when it parts company with the body. The succeeding page (106a-c), in which it is argued that soul is ἀνωλεθρος (ἀδαπαχρον) as well as δαινατον, starts from the implied assumption that there are other possible kinds of extinction’. Cf. e.g. Frede, 1978, 30. Yet, as O’Brien, 1967, 100-3, rightly objects, Socrates only seems to be concerned with the worry about whether destruction of the soul could occur on separation from the body (cf. 91d5-7). By contrast, O’Brien, 1967-8, 100-3, suggests a permanence based distinction, with δάνατος meaning that the soul survives separation from the body, while ἀνωλεθρος means that this is ‘always’ the case. Yet he also adds that ἀνωλεθρος here ‘has no new content that would justify a fresh train of argument’. There is, however, no clear textual evidence for the permanence based distinction. Moreover, the idea that ἀνωλεθρος signifies ‘always escapes destruction’ as opposed to ‘sometimes’, seems very strange, if we consider Socrates’ points at 105e11-c7, where he considers the possibility that e.g. τὸ άναφρον might be ἀνωλεθρος. For if O’Brien’s idea is correct, in order to preserve the parallelism and inferential structure of the argument, it would seems necessary for terms like τὸ άναφρον and τὸ ἰβωκτον to convey some notion of ‘indestructibility’ as well.

85 Bostock, 1986, 191, concedes that Socrates ‘is perhaps aware that he is not using these words [i.e. δάνατος and other α-privative terms] in quite their usual sense’. However, he takes to mean that ‘souls cannot die and still exist’ and suggests that, in the ἀνωλεθρος point, δάνατος ‘is taken in its usual sense’.

Chapter 8 257
alive?’ (105e8), to which Cebes replies ‘the soul’. Clearly, they are discussing how life arises in a body, not in a soul. Therefore, given that ὑάνατος is introduced as the opposite to life, it appears that it likewise refers to the death of body, as opposed to the destruction of soul. If we take ὑάνατος purely to indicate that soul cannot be present in a body simultaneously with death, there will then be room for a very distinct meaning of ἀνώλεθρος.\(^{87}\)

ἀνώλεθρος, just like ὑάνατος, appears to have a special sense, deriving from the understanding of ‘destruction’ and ‘existence’ established in the ‘second sailing’. In the ‘second sailing’ Socrates has repeatedly pointed out that those entities which cannot accept the compresence of opposites (or opposites of ‘essential’ opposites, in the case of non-opposites) will either ‘withdraw or perish’, on the approach of these opposites. The term used for ‘perishing’ is ἀπόλλυμι,\(^{88}\) so that being ἀνώλεθρος seems to indicate a capacity for withdrawal from a particular and independent existence. For ἐνοῦτα, entities which come to be present in particulars, being ἀνώλεθρος would mean surviving the approach of their opposite, having withdrawn from the particular. This is the crucial point behind the second stage of the ‘subtler answer’ argument (105e11ff.): that something ἀνώλεθρος will ‘withdraw’ rather than ‘perish’ when its opposite approaches the particular in which it is present. So, given that ὑάνατος simply means that the soul and death can never be compresent in a body, Socrates clearly still needs to show that soul is ἀνώλεθρος, by proving that it (a

---

\(^{86}\) Translation taken from O’Brien, 1967-8, 225.

\(^{87}\) Yet even Kanayama, 2000, 84-5, who insists earlier that α-privative terms simply denote the non-acceptance of the negated opposite and that ὑάνατος accordingly means “not admitting death” (82, see my n.77, above), ultimately moves away from this strict sense of ‘death’ and ‘being ὑάνατος’, back towards the more conventional account and, problematically, equates destruction with bodily death. Kanayama says that we cannot take ὑάνατος to imply indestructibility, not simply because Socrates has only so far shown that it means either ‘withdrawing or perishing’ when death enters a body, but because we are ignorant about death. He suggests that if, for example, Callicles’ view of death as the loss of physical pleasure is correct, destruction can only come from this and not from bodily death. Kanayama can only entertain this view if he dismisses his earlier view that the soul being ὑάνατος means it cannot accept death, since clearly a body which does not pursue physical pleasures (and is therefore ‘dead’ on Callicles view) can still have a soul. Pace Kanayama, it is very clear that ‘death’ in the ‘second sailing’ refers to bodily death. Accordingly, since it seems that Kanayama is thinking of bodily death as ‘destruction’, once we have dismissed his suggestion that ‘death’ could have other senses, he offers no real alternative to ὑάνατος. This much is clear in his final point, ‘the question of why whatever is ὑάνατος is indestructible boils down to the question why what always brings up life is indestructible’, since ὑάνατος here refers precisely to just what ‘always brings up life’.

\(^{88}\) ἀπολλύμενα (102e2); ἀπόλλυμα (103a2); ἀπολέσθαι (103d8); ἀπολλύμενα (104c1).
non-opposite) will ‘withdraw’ rather than ‘perish’ when death (the opposite of its ‘essential’ opposite) comes to a living body.

This fits well with the presentation of individual points, such as:

\[
\text{el µèn tò ðávánatos kai ðavólethron } \varepsilon \sigma \tau \iota \nu, \; \text{ðavnavov } \psi \upsilon \chi \tilde{\eta}, \; \delta \tau a\nu \tau o\sigma \; \varepsilon \tau \iota \; \alpha \upsilon \tau \iota \nu \; \iota \tilde{\eta}, \; \alpha \pi ð\sigma \lambda \varsigma \theta \sigma \iota \varsigma \alpha i (106b2-3).}
\]

Here ðavólethros evidently adds something different to ðavánatos. However, on the traditional reading, which takes ðavánatos as the soul’s destruction, both terms will mean that the soul cannot be destroyed by death’s approach, although the Greek suggests that only ðavólethros should have this meaning. By contrast, if ðavánatos actually indicates only that something cannot be compresent with death, then the phrase makes sense, since ðavólethros adds that, on the approach of death, not only would a thing not remain, but it would ‘withdraw’ and still exist.

This understanding of ðavánatos and ðavólethros is also consistent with the points which Socrates makes about the other a-privative ëvontα (106d11-c8). Socrates says that ðavánatos µèn γαρ δη ἐκ τῶν προειρημένων οὐ δέχεται [i.e. ἡ ψυχή] οὔσ’ ἐσται τεθνηκιά...(106b3-4) and gives parallels such as three and odd not becoming even. In response to the imagined objection that the odd would simply be destroyed on the approach of the even (106b7-c2), Socrates then makes it clear that the a-privative does not imply indestructibility. For ëvontα like τά τρία and τὸ περιττὸν may well be ἀνάρτια, but are not also indestructible: τὸ γὰρ ἀνάρτιον οἷκ ἰνωλεθρόν ἐστιν (106c3-4). Equally, by implication, in the parallel case of soul, even if the point that soul and ἡ ἐρία are ðavánatos has already been demonstrated, their indestructibility (being ðavólethros) remains to be proven. This
makes sense of Socrates' next main point:

οὐκόν καὶ νῦν περὶ τὸν ἀθανάτου, εἰ μὲν ἡμῖν ὁμολογεῖται καὶ ἀνώλεθρον εἶναι, ψυχῇ ἂν εἰ ἔτι πρὸς τῷ ἀθάνατῳ εἶναι καὶ ἀνώλεθρος· εἰ δὲ μὴ, ἄλλον ἂν δέοι λόγου (106c9-d1).

When non-opposites and their 'essential' opposite ἐνοῦτα are approached by their opposite, unable to tolerate its compresence, they will perish. This is the case for τὸ ἀνάρτιον and, by implication for other sorts of ἐνοῦτα: περὶ πυρὸς καὶ θερμοῦ καὶ τῶν ἄλλων οὕτως διεμαχόμεθα (106c6-7). If Socrates is to prove that the soul is ἀνώλεθρος he must show that, unlike these ἐνοῦτα, it will 'withdraw' and continue to exist, as opposed to perish, when death, the opposite of its 'essential' opposite, comes to the body in which it is present. The soul, then, is ἀθανάτος. Yet this does not show that it is also ἀνώλεθρος, and Socrates will need a separate proof.

A final point about ἀνώλεθρος is its distinctness from the other α-privative terms in the 'second-sailing'. For the latter, this linguistic form indicates that, if the opposite ἐνοῦτα approach, the thing referred to by the α-privative will withdraw or perish (e.g. τὸ ἀρτιον approaching τὸ ἀνάρτιον). Yet it seems that ἀνώλεθρος itself refers not to one of a pair of opposite ἐνοῦτα, but to a thing's ability to avoid the 'perish' alternative. Another special feature, as compared with the other α-privatives, is that it is never used in isolation, but is always added to another α-privative. For example, there is its first appearance is in the protasis, εἰ τῷ ἀναρτίῳ ἀναγκαῖον ἢν ἀνώλεθρῳ εἶναι, as a term potentially predicated of τὸ ἀνάρτιον. No other α-privative terms are predicated of each other and, indeed, it would make little sense if they were. For the fact that, for example, three is ἀνάρτιος indicates its connection with an 'essential' opposite, the odd, whose opposite it cannot tolerate. Three simply is three and comes to a particular along with the odd. It would make little sense to suggest that it was also ἄφυκτος or ἄθερμος. It is only ἀνώλεθρος which could be added and represented as an additional property, added to other α-

---

89 This is consistent with my view of the 'second sailing' from 103c7 as clearly concerned with ἐνοῦτα. For an ἐνοῦ like the Three or the Odd the α-privative ἀνάρτιος means that they will not be present in a body at the same time as τὸ ἀρτιον, but will 'withdraw' or 'perish'. Yet, ἐνοῦτα do not have separate existence outside of particulars and so are not ἀνώλεθρος. Hence the earlier point that ἐνοῦτα have certain ἰδίαιτα, ἑταμπέρ ἢ (103e5).
privatives, since it connotes imperishability on the approach of an opposite and not the bringing of another ένον.

8.7.2 The proof that the soul is ἀνώλεθρος:

By 106d1 the difference between ἀδάνατος and ἀνώλεθρος is clear. Up to now Socrates' points about soul rest on the similarities between it and ένοντα. However, to prove that the soul is ἀνώλεθρος he will have to show the difference between them.90

Socrates introduces the very final stage by claiming that if τὸ ἀδάνατον is also ἀνώλεθρον, this would be sufficient proof that the soul is ἀνώλεθρος. However, without this, ἀλλὰ ἂν δέοι λόγου (106d1). Cebes simply replies that no further λόγος is needed, since τὸ ἀδάνατον, being ἄδιον, could never admit 'destruction' (φθορά). It is here that many commentators accuse Plato of appealing to the conventional understanding of ἀδάνατος and thus assuming it implies ἀνώλεθρος, without supplying further proof. As Bostock says:

Cebes takes it to be just obvious [italics his] that whatever is immortal will also be imperishable; no further argument is needed. ...That is obvious if the word “immortal” is taken in its usual sense. This is confirmed by the next line, where he adds that the immortal, “being everlasting”, will surely not admit destruction. That is, he simply takes it for granted that the immortal is everlasting...I conclude that Plato has not in fact seen that further argument is required, because he too is taking the word “immortal” in its usual sense.91

However, the fact that Cebes requires no further proof does not mean that Plato's Socrates or Plato himself shares this opinion.92 For, although the argument so far does suggest that, if τὸ ἀδάνατον is also ἀνώλεθρον, so too must the soul be ἀνώλεθρος, it also clearly implies that this has not yet been proven.93

---

92 Cf. e.g. Frede, 1978, 31, who says that 'Socrates not simply accepts Cebes' assent that the deathless is indestructible, but...'.
93 Socrates nowhere implies that, within the 'second sailing' ἀδάνατος is being seen as either synonymous with or implying ἀνώλεθρος. It is true that no clear distinction is made between them by Cebes at 88b5-6 or by Socrates at 95c1, when he recapitulates Cebes' words, and it seems that Cebes may well see them as synonymous, an idea corroborated by the present passage (106d2-4). Yet this does not imply that Socrates or Plato have the same view (cf. Hackforth, 1955, 100 n.3, on ἀδάνατον and ἀνώλεθρος as 'used synonymously' at 88b, although he does not mention that Cebes is in fact speaking). O'Brien, 1967-8, 98, sees Socrates' definition of death as ψυχής δεθρός (91d-7) as
So it seems that the proof that ἄθανατον is ἀνώλεθρον will be found in Socrates’ next comments:

ο δὲ γε θεὸς ὄμαι, ἐφι σωκράτης, καὶ αὐτὸ τὸ τῆς ζωῆς ἔδος καὶ εἴ τι ἄλλο ἄθανατον ἐστιν, παρὰ παύτων ἀν ὄμολογηθεὶ μηδεποτε ἀπόλλυσθαι (106d5-7).

The challenge remains to find a way of showing how the θεὸς point proves the soul’s indestructibility without simply deriving this from its being ἄθανατος (as ἄθανατος is used here), and without assuming that an appeal to religion is necessarily independent of argument.

Let us accept, once and for all: ἄθανατος, as used by Socrates within this argument, refers simply to that which does not allow the compresence of death; with no implication of indestructibility. If, however, there is something else which, like the soul, is ἄθανατος (in the sense in which the word is used in the ‘second sailing’), and also ἀνώλεθρος, this will show that being ἄθανατος implies being ἀνώλεθρος.

It is here that Socrates suggests that ὁ θεὸς is both ἄθανατος and ἀνώλεθρος.

One might object that simply showing the existence of something both ἄθανατον and ἀνώλεθρον is not enough to prove a necessary connection between the two, by which all ἄθανατα would also be ἀνώλεθρα. However a-privative terms, as used in

understood throughout the ‘second sailing’. However, at this point Socrates is actually summarising Cebes’ concerns and presents this definition as a point to be refuted, rather than his own belief. Here, I am in agreement with Kanayama, 2000, 82, who points out Plato’s very explicit distinction between the two terms.

94 In an effort to ‘save’ the argument there have been various attempts to show that the appeal to ὁ θεὸς and τὸ τῆς ζωῆς ἔδος makes a substantive contribution to the argument at this point. Frede, 1978, 31-2 for example, sees the significance as their common characteristic of being ‘essentially alive’. Clearly, as Frede suggests, Socrates is making a point about their common essential indestructibility. Her view relies upon the idea that it is the soul’s essential ‘deathlessness’ which implies ‘indestructibility’, because ‘destruction for a living being is its loss of life’ (she claims that this is true for any living being). However, the resultant identification of ἄθανατος with ἀνώλεθρος leads to the problems discussed above and still leaves Plato guilty of the ‘obvious mistake’ from which she is trying to exonerate him: ‘assuming that deathlessness=indestructibility=everlastsingness’.

95 Some older commentaries suggest that this ‘appeal to religious faith’ represents a departure from ‘argument’: e.g. Taylor, 1926, 206. Cf. Hackforth, 1955, 164: ‘it may be that beneath the surface there is an appeal to religious faith’. He does, however, see this ‘appeal’ beginning with Cebes’ use of ἄδικον.

Chapter 8 262
the 'second-sailing' indicate not just that an entity has a certain property, but give its key characteristic, in virtue of which it is either indestructible or perishable, given that only the approach of the negated term could bring about its destruction. So if the gods cannot be destroyed it is because death cannot destroy them and they are indestructible in virtue of being ἄθανατος. Hence, we can infer that being ἄθανατος implies ἀνώλεθρος.96

*The relevance of the 'affinity argument'*

Socrates' justification here comes from the earlier 'affinity argument'. There, he posited 'two types of being, the visible and invisible' (79a6-7), the latter being unchangeable, indestructible, and divine, and comprising god(s) and the Forms (see e.g. 80b1-3). Clearly, it is the latter type which could be described as ἀνώλεθρος. One might suppose that this, in itself, stands as an argument that the soul is ἀνώλεθρος, since it is this type to which the soul is most similar. Moreover, Socrates also describes 'invisible' being as ἄθανατος (e.g. 79d2 and 80b1).97 However, there are various reasons why it is only the indestructibility of τὸ θεῖον in the 'affinity argument' which directly supports the soul's indestructibility.

Why then, can Socrates not simply infer the soul's indestructibility from the indestructibility of the Forms in this passage? It may well be the case that, within the 'affinity argument', which distinguishes two types of being and does not mention ἕνοντα, the soul is 'most like' the Forms (80a10-b3). In the 'second-sailing', however, up until the ἀνώλεθρος point, it is ἕνοντα to which the soul seems most similar, with no apparent grounds for assuming that the soul does not, just like ἕνοντα, admit destruction. In other words, although the soul might resemble the Forms in such respects as purity, it could be more like ἕνοντα in an incapacity for independent existence.

---

96 To put it another way, one might add that, if τὸ ἄθανατον is ἀνώλεθρος, this can only be in virtue of being ἄθανατον, because it would not make sense to predicate any other ἀ-privative terms of it, in virtue of which it could be either destructible or indestructible (we would not say that soul was e.g. ἀνδρότος).

97 E.g. 79d2 and 80b1, where he describes the 'invisible' as τὸ μὲν θεῖω καὶ ἄθανάτῳ καὶ νόητῳ καὶ μονοειδείς καὶ ἀδιαλύτῳ καὶ δὲι ὑσαντως κατὰ ταύτα ἕνοντα ἐαυτῷ.
Furthermore, \( \text{dOdvaTos} \) is used in two different senses in the 'affinity' and 'final' arguments, and we cannot infer from the description of the indestructible 'invisible being' as \( \text{dOdvaTos} \) in the former that \( \text{dOdvaTos} \) in the latter also implies indestructibility. In the 'affinity' argument \( \text{dOdvaTos} \) appears to be connected with permanence and indestructibility: \( \text{δει \ όν καλ \ δόνατον καλ \ ωσαύτως \ ξ'ου} \) (79d2).\(^{98}\) In the 'second sailing' it implies nothing about permanent existence.\(^{99}\)

Since Socrates presents not only Forms but also \( \text{τὸ \ θεῖον} \) as unchangeable and permanent in the 'affinity' argument, it seems safe to assume the indestructibility of \( \text{δ θεῖος} \). There are reasons why the indestructibility of \( \text{δ θεῖος} \) in the 'affinity argument' can be seen as relevant to the soul in a way that the Forms are not.\(^{100}\) Most importantly, it can be assumed that, for Plato, \( \text{δ θεῖος} \), like the soul, is also \( \text{dOdvaTos} \) in the 'second sailing' sense, given that a defining feature of the gods, often referred to as \( \text{οί \ dOdvaTOs} \),\(^{101}\) is that they do not accept death, in opposition to mortals.\(^{102}\)

So god and soul both seem essentially \( \text{dOdvaTos} \), insofar as neither can tolerate the compresence of death. In the case of God \( \text{τὸ \ δOdvaTOV} \), as the word is used in the 'second sailing', is also \( \text{dνάλεθρον} \). From this it can be inferred that the same can be said of the soul. Thus, the affinity argument shows that things like Forms and the gods do not perish. The 'second sailing' shows why death must constitute the separation of the soul from the body; connects the 'essential' deathlessness of souls with that of the gods; and therefore, through the implicit assumption of the 'affinity' argument's claim that the gods are indestructible, can also posit that 'essential'

\(^{99}\) It would make no sense to call Forms \( \text{dOdvaTos} \) in this way. For this would signify that they cannot be present along with death. Yet Forms are entirely independent of all other entities.
\(^{100}\) O'Brien, 1967-8, claims that the 'indestructibility of souls in the last argument differs from the indestructibility of forms as it were genetically' and is unrelated to the 'rich complex of ideas' associated with forms in the 'affinity argument'. Although I share his view that the indestructibility of Forms in the 'affinity' argument does not prove the soul's indestructibility, \textit{contra} O'Brien I propose that the 'affinity argument' model of indestructibility is, by means of \( \text{δ θεῖος} \), associated with soul in the 'final' argument.
\(^{101}\) Cf. Rowe, 1993a, 263: 'standardly, \( \text{oί \ θεῖοι} = \text{oί \ dOdvaTOs} \).
\(^{102}\) See e.g. the 'affinity' argument, where \( \text{τὸ \ θεῖον} \) is opposed to \( \text{τὸ \ θυτὸν} \) (80a3 and 8-9) and \( \text{τὸ \ νέφωτον} \) (80b1-3).
deathlessness implies indestructibility. Taken together, then, they offer the proof that
the soul is both ἄθανατος and ἀνέλεθρος.\(^{103}\)

Finally, what of the relationship of the soul to the Forms? In some respects the soul
seems to have similarities with the ἐνοῦτα, insofar as it comes to be present in
particulars, along with life, whose ἐνούμα it shares and whose opposite, death, it will
not accept. However, the soul is not destroyed by being uninstantiated in the body, a
feature which distances it from the ἐνοῦτα and brings it closer to the Forms
themselves. O'Brien sees it as a ‘dilemma’ that the ‘conclusion’ (i.e. the proof that
the soul is ἀνέλεθρος) rests on establishing the soul’s difference from the ἐνοῦτα to
which it has been linked in the previous arguments.\(^{104}\) However, the two sides to the
soul which emerge from the different stages of the argument are not inconsistent and
simply reflect its mixed nature. Given the characteristics of souls, shown by the
different stages within this argument, this mixed nature should hardly be
surprising.\(^{105}\)

8.8 What is λόγος?

In the ‘misology’ passage (89c11-91a6) Socrates suggests that λόγοι can be true.\(^{106}\)
At the beginning of the ‘second sailing’, he then says that he will use λόγοι to seek
the truth about reality, a method no more indirect than using ἔργα (99e4-100a3).
One of my aims in this chapter has been to consider what is meant by searching ἐν
λόγοις, and so to establish the meaning of λόγοι, explaining how they can convey
the truth and why they are so central to the ‘second-sailing’.

Our consideration of how language and style represent the beliefs and arguments
expressed in the ‘second sailing’ has given some indication of what constitutes λόγος

103 Of course, one might argue that the question is now why we should accept the affinity argument as
proof of the god's indestructibility. However, even if we still have an explanatory circle, now that it
has been broadened to incorporate the principles of the 'affinity' argument, we might at least hope that
there is sufficient material for it to be large rather than vicious.
104 O'Brien, 1967-8, 106.
105 Cf. Bostock, 1986, 188-9: 'No doubt it [i.e. the soul] is intended to be something invisible and
incorporeal like a form, but also something that is a particular Individual [italics mine] like a lump of
snow'.
106 See 90b8; e9; d9ff.
and how different aspects of this λόγος can be seen to reflect Socrates' understanding of reality. In effect, we already have some ideas as to why Socrates might see inquiring ἐν λόγοις as presenting an account of reality and (therefore) as methodologically sound. By bringing together the separate points, we can now reach a more general picture of what is involved in the use of λόγοι.

8.8.1 λόγος and consistency

One of the standard senses attributed to λόγος by Socrates is, of course words: the very words in which something is expressed; and the importance of verbal features in the ‘second sailing’ is highlighted, for example, by the way that key relationships are indicated with ‘naming’ terminology, δόμος or ἐπωνυμία, and the way that the α-privative noun form takes on a special sense.

Nevertheless, it is also clear that the mirroring of reality by the λόγος derives from more than a particular sense of individual words and phrases. From the very outset of the ‘second-sailing’ Socrates shows the necessity for caution about language, pointing out that it can be deceptive: διμολογεῖς τὸ τῶν Σιμμαίων ὑπερέχειν Σωκράτους οίχ ὡς τοῖς ῥήμασι λέγεται οὕτω καὶ τὸ ἀληθὲς ἔχειν; (102b8-c10).

That individual words, phrases, or structures themselves do not refer in a fixed way to reality is also suggested in other ways, for instance through the many verbal ambiguities within the ‘second sailing’. 107 I have already discussed the flexibility in meaning of the αὐτὸ τὸ formulation, and to this one could add the case of ἀδιάνατος, used very differently here from its earlier more ‘conventional’ sense in the ‘affinity argument’. Other important terms also have this element of multivocity. 108

107 In seeing the language as functioning in this way, my argument runs contrary to Vlastos, 1973, 109, who laments the lack of ‘lucidity’ which Plato could have achieved, “had he availed himself, as Aristotle was to do, of the expository device of philosophical lexicography!”
108 E.g. Socrates criticises the ἀντιλογικοὶ for talking about the ἀρχὴ and τὰ ἐκ ἐκείνης ἀφήμηνων (101e2-3), despite having described his own enterprise in the ‘second sailing’ with cognates of these very terms: ἀλλ’ οὖν δὴ ταύτη γε ἄρμησα (100a3) and καὶ εἴμι πάλιν ἐπ’ ἐκείνα τὰ πολλάριστα καὶ ἄρχομαι ἀπ’ ἔκεινων (100b4-5). Thus, for Socrates, rather than actual beginnings, the terms seem to denote first principles and deduction within intellectual inquiry.
Conversely, Socrates’ use of ‘synonymy’ also suggests that individual words, phrases, or formulations, do not constitute λόγος. This is particularly clear in the discussion of the ‘safe hypothesis’ where, although varied formulations express a single principle, Socrates implies that this is to be seen not only as a single ὑπόθεσις, but also as εἰς λόγος (101e4).

So it seems that λόγοι are something to do with overall verbal structure and the way that particular features fit into the whole, rather than simply words considered individually. Throughout the ‘second sailing’ it is the passage’s stylistic structure which holds the key to its understanding, but only when taken as a coherent whole.

The idea that reasoning in λόγοι depends on how elements fit together suggests that true λόγοι will be consistent, a view supported by several instances where methodological points about argument are explicitly made in terms of λόγοι. For example, one reason why (Socrates claims) Simmias’ λόγος that soul is ‘harmony’ must be rejected is that it does not ‘harmonise’ with the ‘recollection argument’, already accepted as true (91e5-92a5):

οὕτως οὖν σοι ὃς λόγος ἐκείνῳ πῶς συνῆσαι;  
οὐδαμῶς, ἔφη, ὁ Σιμμίας.  
καὶ μήν, ἢ δ' ὅσ, πρέπει γε εἴπερ τῷ ἄλλῳ λόγῳ συνεφαίρει ναί καὶ τῷ περὶ ἀρμονίας (92c3-6)

Similarly, at the beginning of the ‘second sailing’ Socrates will take as true those things which are consistent (συμφωνεῖν) with the strongest λόγος (100a4-5), while in the ‘hypothesis’ passage he advocates examining whether the consequences which are posited of a hypothesis are consistent with each other, εἰ σοι ἄλληλοις συμφωνεῖ τῇ διαφωνεῖ (101d5-6), and seems to suggest that, if they are, there will be a single λόγος.\textsuperscript{109}

\textsuperscript{109} Cf. Kanayama, 2000, 64, on συμφωνεῖν as indicating consistency. But e.g. Gentzler, 1991, 266, objects to the ‘consistency’ reading here, insofar as consistency does not per se imply truth. However, as I shall argue below, there are reasons why Socrates might take the consistency of λόγοι here as providing a reason for seeing them as true.
If true λόγοι are consistent and false inconsistent, this cannot vary by degree, since even the smallest degree of inconsistency means that, as a whole, there is no consistency. This could then explain why, in the ‘misology’ passage, Socrates points out that, whereas very few men are either extremely good or bad, this is not the case for λόγοι (90b4-5). This implies that the majority of (or even all) λόγοι are at one or other of these extremes, a view which fits in with the ‘consistency’ reading of λόγος.

Furthermore, Socrates presents the argument as conclusive (106e8-107a1), endorsing Cebes’ suggestion that it is sufficient and correct, οὐκοῦν ἐγὼ γε...ἐξω παρὰ ταῦτα ἀλλο τι λέγειν οὐδὲ πι ἀποστείν τοις λόγοις (107a2-3). He responds to Simmias’ concerns by telling him that, if he follows through the first hypotheses sufficiently, he will follow the λόγος as far as humanly possible and will be fully satisfied (107b4-9). This is the only place in the Phaedo where Socrates suggests that an argument is fully satisfactory. Yet, he leaves us to draw our understanding of how it achieves this status from the passage itself.

The consistency required of correct λόγοι is also reflected in the general style of the ‘second sailing’, insofar as many individual features are used in so novel or changeable a way that understanding depends upon piecing together a consistent interpretation of all the elements. Yet the coherence and consistency of the ‘second sailing’ extends beyond its immediate context. At the end of Chapter 6, I suggested that a comparison of Socrates ‘apology’ and the ‘argument from opposites’ in their wider context indicates that arguments should establish and take account of, not only the underlying structure and principles of processes, but also the qualities of the entities which such processes involve. It seems that here, in the ‘second sailing’, these two elements are finally brought together into one coherent whole. For in a style which can be broadly termed ‘verbal minimalism’ it lays out the structure of causation, but its interpretation also depends upon understanding the qualities of the

---

110 This is corroborated by the way that λόγοι are depicted as either true or false (90b8). Socrates is doing more than ‘hinting’ that there are many bad λόγοι, as Hackforth, 1955, 107, suggests.
112 Cf. e.g. Sedley, 1995, 17, on the cogency of the final argument.
entities involved, if we are to demarcate their roles within this process and their interrelationships.

As is suggested by Socrates’ initial intention to look for τὴν τῶν δυνατῶν ἀλήθειαν with λόγοι (99e6) and by his final endorsement of the ‘second sailing’ as conclusive and satisfactory (106e8-107b9), it seems that true λόγοι do reflect Socrates’ beliefs about reality. They do this through the verbal structure of argument and the consistency of a correct λόγος.

Although this understanding of λόγος is to a certain extent based upon its conventional meaning combined with certain explicit comments concerning λόγος, it is chiefly constructed by the language and style of the ‘second sailing’, and the way that the cohesion of its overall structure, both internally and in its relation to other parts of the dialogue, holds the key to its interpretation. The ‘second sailing’ clearly shows the significance of style for the interpretation of its arguments, and demonstrates the importance of reading the dialogue holistically.

8.9 Teleology

In the ‘intellectual autobiography’ Socrates criticises Anaxagoras because his νοὸς-based theory of causation is not teleological. His criticism then extends to other physicists, insofar as the causes they posit bear no relation to ‘the good’ (99c1-7). Yet, as I have discussed in Chapter 7, the issue of teleology seems to disappear after this episode in a way which commentators have found extremely puzzling. There are, however, ways in which one might see the issue of teleology as present in the ‘second sailing’, the first stemming from points made in the ‘apology’, the second from the ideas about order, rationality, and normativity, suggested by the ‘Anaxagoras episode’.

From the ‘apology’ it appears that normativity is attributed to the qualities: purity; uniqueness; comprehensiveness; distinctness; simplicity; and singularity.113 These emerge as valuable both per se and epistemologically, and so may provide a reason

113 See Ch.6 p.159, above.
for seeing ‘the good’ as implicitly involved in the ‘second sailing’. After all, it is the uniqueness of the Forms which provides the basis for the ‘second sailing’ as a whole, and the simplicity of the Form/particular relationship which is reflected in the style of the formulations of the ‘safe hypothesis’. This simplicity is most visible in the phrase Socrates uses to express that which he asserts with certainty, τὸ καλὸν πάντα τὰ καλὰ καλὰ (100d7-8), where the principle is reduced to its most basic and simple linguistic formulation. No other terms intrude into the description of the direct and unique relationship between matching Form, particulars and resultant property, except for πάντα, which stresses that the principle is true for all particulars. Even when the argument moves on to the ‘subtler answer’, it still relies on the simplicity, distinctness, and unchangeability of Forms, reflected in the incapacity of their derivative ἐνούτα to be compresent with their opposites.

In the criticism of Anaxagoras, Socrates gives an explanation of what a νόησ- based account of cosmological causation should look like. The teleology implied by κοσμεώ is reflected in the characteristics of a νόησ-based system, based on universal coherence, covering all aspects of existence, activity, or passivity (97c6-d1). Individual elements have significance in terms of their place within the system as a whole and the way they help to expand upon connections between the other elements, while there are also certain self-evident foundational premises. Socrates states that such a causal account would, for him, be a sufficient explanation of generation and destruction (98a1-2) and, in many ways, these features correspond to the concept of rationality developed within the overall argumentation of the Phaedo, especially in the ‘second sailing’. For the ‘second sailing’ presents an entirely coherent system, which covers all ontological types and whose components make sense in the way in which they fit together. The foundational premise on which the argument is based, and which is simply accepted, is the existence of the Forms. Moreover, it is also striking that the ‘second sailing’ is the only argument in the Phaedo which Socrates explicitly describes as adequate (106b), even though he has earlier presented the imagined νόησ-based teleological account as satisfactory.

Yet, even if the consistency of the ‘second sailing’ resembles the teleological νόησ-based theory of causation anticipated in the ‘Anaxagoras episode, the normativity of the latter account explicitly relies not only upon the consistency of the whole, but
also on the individual and common good of its elements. These factors are ostensibly missing from the 'second sailing' and one might well argue that consistency does not in itself imply normativity. However, one of Socrates' earlier comments, at the close of the 'Anaxagoras episode' (99c3-5), suggests that a causal account can only be consistent, if it is teleological. He criticises those who διότων άν ποτε ισχυρότερον καλ άθανατώτερον καλ μάλλον ἀφαντα συνέχουτα ἐξευρεῖν, καὶ άληθὸς τὸ ἀγαθὸν καὶ δέον συνδεῖν καὶ συνέχειν οἴδεν οἴσυται. The clear implication is that the good is necessary for universal coherence. Therefore, given that the 'second sailing' provides a satisfactory and consistent account of causation, one might infer that there must be an underlying element of teleology in it, and that it is the consistency of the λόγος which leads not only to its epistemological legitimacy, but also to its normativity. This would then provide a reason for seeing the theory of causation outlined in the 'second sailing' as teleological, on the basis of its claim to consistency and simplicity, even without explicit reference to value.

114 Cf. Ch.7 p209., above.
115 Cf. Kanayama, 2000, 99, for an alternative account of why the 'second sailing' might be teleological.
Conclusion

As modern readers of Plato, it is difficult for us to appreciate fully the stylistic diversity, complexity, and innovation within the *Phaedo*. To do so, we need to move beyond translation, going back to the Greek and paying attention to its structure, sound, and variety; trying to understand, as far as possible, the dialogue's literary context, so as to recognise the extent of both its indebtedness and originality. My primary aims in this thesis have been, quite simply, to show that this is a worthwhile and even necessary part of interpreting the *Phaedo*, by demonstrating the significance of style for its arguments.

Although I have only discussed certain parts of the *Phaedo*, it seems sufficiently clear that taking style into account can help towards our understanding of individual sections, both in themselves and their relationships with each other, and can point us towards a more holistic reading of the dialogue. Stylistic analysis provides a means of understanding disparate sections on the same terms and, accordingly, helps to reveals their connections. Yet it can only do so if the methodology and terms of reference employed are adequate for the task.

I have aimed to produce a methodology that is sufficiently sophisticated and comprehensive to deal with all modes of discourse within the *Phaedo*, including several features which play no substantial part in conventional stylistic analysis, such as the many structural phenomena that are so important within my interpretation. Often it is these which have yielded the most interesting results. Similarly, in my discussions of generic affiliations, I have treated all genres as relevant. In many cases it is Plato's use of genres usually ignored or treated separately from wider stylistic investigations, such as early philosophical writing, which has once again produced some of the most significant conclusions.

In broader terms, I have tried to develop a methodology and approach which could be of use in examining wider questions concerning the role of style in philosophical discourse. Inevitably, my thesis has simply scratched at the surface. Nevertheless, I hope that it has at least paved the way for further investigation of the *Phaedo* itself;
Platonic works in general; and other philosophers, especially ‘hybrid’ writers like Lucretius and Nietzsche, but perhaps even those whose style is more ‘conventional’. Thus, it might facilitate a more general systematisation of how style functions within philosophical argument.

As readers of Plato, we must surely be struck by his stylistic mastery, even if we cannot fully appreciate it. What I have tried to do is to offer an approach which recognises the philosophical significance of style and so begins to move towards establishing what might be called a ‘poetics’ of argument.
Appendix I

Parallel structures in the six passages

Key

P - pair
L - list
R (j) - juxtaposition repetition
R (s) - successive clause or unit repetition
R (r) - ring composition
R (k) - key-word repetition
P1 - pleonasm
SE - sound effect used as a parallel structure

Passage I

αὕτη ἡ ὅρθη πρὸς ἀρετὴν ἀλλαγὴ + ἡ ἑκεῖνο μόνον τὸ νόμισμα ὀρθὸν
69a6/I.1 + 69a9/I.4: P; R (s); SE

ἡδονάς πρὸς ἡδονάς 69a7/I.2: P; R (j); SE

λύπας πρὸς λύπας 69a7/I.2: P; R (j); SE

φόβον πρὸς φόβον 69a8/I.3: P; R (j); SE

μεῖζω πρὸς ἐλάττω 69a8/I.3: P

cal τούτου [μὲν πάντα] καλ μετὰ τούτου (69b1/I.6): P; R (j); SE

ῶνομένα τε καὶ προηγασκόμενα 69b1/I.6: P; SE

μετὰ φρονήσεως + χωριζόμενα δὲ φρονήσεως 69b3/I.8 + 69b6/I.11: P; Rep (s)

καὶ προσγιγνομένων καὶ ἀπογιγγομένων 69b4/I.9: P; SE

χωριζόμενα δὲ φρονήσεως καὶ ἀλλαττόμενα ἀντὶ ἄλληλων 69b6/I.11: P

ὁδὲν ἱγιέσι οἶδ' ἀληθὲς ἔχει 69b8/I.13: P; P1

tὸ δ' ἀληθὲς τῷ ὄντι 69b8/I.13: P; P1

ἀμύητος καὶ ἀτέλεστος 69c5/I.18: P; P1; SE

κεκαθαρμένος τε καὶ τετελεσμένος 69c6/I.19: P; P1; SE

κατὰ γε τὸ δυνατὸν οὐδὲν ἀπέλπισον ἐν τῷ βίῳ ἄλλα παντὶ τρόπῳ

προμεθήσθην 69d3/I.24: P; P1

Appendix I 274
δρόθης προφυμήθην καὶ τι ἡνύσαμεν 69d5/I.25: P; Pl
Συμμία τε καὶ Κέβης 69d7/I.28: P
οὐ χαλεπῶς φέρω οὐδ' ἀγανακτῶ 69e1/I.30: P; Pl
ἐκεῖ οὐδὲν ἤττον ἢ ἐνθάδε 69e2/I.31: P
dεσπόταις τε ἄγαθοις ἐντεύξεσθαι καὶ ἔταιροις 69e2/I.31: P
ιμῖν πιθανώτερός εἶμι ἐν τῇ ἀπολογίᾳ ἢ τοῖς Ἀθηναίων δικασταῖς 69e3/I.32: P

ἡδονᾶς πρὸς ἡδονᾶς καὶ λύπας πρὸς λύπας καὶ φόβου πρὸς φόβου 69a7/I.2: L; SE
cal ἄνδρεα καὶ σωφροσύνη καὶ δικαιοσύνη καὶ συλλήβδην ἀληθὴς ἀρετὴ 69b2/I.7: L; SE
cal ἡδονῶν καὶ φόβων καὶ τῶν ἄλλων πάντων τῶν τοιούτων 69b5/I.10: L; SE
ἀνδραποδόδησθε τε καὶ οὐδὲν ὑγιὲς οὐδ' ἀληθῆς ἔχῃ 69b8/I.13: L; Pl
cal καὶ ἡ σωφροσύνη καὶ ἡ δικαιοσύνη καὶ ἡ ἄνδρεα 69c1/I.14: L; SE

ὁρθή 69a6/I.1; a10/5; d3/24; d5/27: R (k)
ἀρετὴν 69a7/I.2; b3/8; b6/12: R (k)
ἀλλαγή 69a7/I.2; a8/3; a10/5; b6/11: R (s)
φρόνησις 69a10/I.5; b3/8; c2/15: R (s)
tῷ ὄντι 69b2/I.7; 7/12; c1/14; c4/17: R (s + k)
cal ἄνδρεα καὶ σωφροσύνη καὶ δικαιοσύνη 69b2/I.7; c1/14: R (s)
ἀληθῆς 69b8/I.13; b8/13; b3/8: R (j + s)
kάθαρσις 69c1/I.14; c3/16; c6/19: R (s)
teletάς 69c3/I.16; c5/18; c7/20; c8/21: R (s)
proubymήθην 69d4/25; d5/26: R (s)

Passage II.

ἡ δομιλία τε καὶ συνουσία 81c5/II.2: P; Pl
diὰ τὸ δὲ συνεῖναι καὶ διὰ τὴν πολλὴν μελέτην 81c5/II.2: P
βαρύνεται τε καὶ ἐλκεται 81c10/II.7: P; Pl
tοῦ ἅμως τε καὶ Ἄδων 81c11/II.8: P; SE
tα μνήματά τε καὶ τοὺς τάφους 81c11/II.8: P

Appendix I
αἰ μὴ καθαρῶς ἀπολυθεῖσαι ἄλλα τῶν ὀρατῶν μετέχουσαι 81d3/II.9: P
tὰς τῶν ἄγαθῶν αὐτὰς εἶναι, ἄλλα τὰς τῶν φαύλων 81d6/II.14: P; SE
dημοτικὴν καὶ πολιτικὴν 82a12/II.36: P; SE
σωφροσύνην τε καὶ δικαιοσύνην 82b1/II.37: P; SE
ἐθνος τε καὶ μελέτης 82b2/II.38: P
φιλοσοφίας τε καὶ νοῦ 82b3/II.39: P
πολιτικῶν καὶ ἡμερον 82b6/II.42: P
οἰκοφθορίαν τε καὶ πενίαν 82c5/II.51: P; Pl; SE
ἀτυμίαν τε καὶ ἀδοξίαν 82c6/II.52: P; Pl; SE
φιλαρχοῖ τε καὶ φιλότιμοι 82c7/II.53: P; SE

ἐμπριθές...καὶ βαρὺ καὶ γεώδες καὶ ὀρατόν 81c8/II.5: L
gαστριμαργίας τε καὶ ἡβρείς καὶ φιλοσοφίας 81e6/II.23: L
ἀδικίας τε καὶ τυραννίδας καὶ ἁρπαγάς 82a4/II.28: L; SE
tὰ τῶν λύκων τε καὶ λεράκων καὶ ἱκτίνων γένη 82a5/II.29: L; SE
ἡ που μεληττῶν ἢ σφηκῶν ἢ μυρμήκων 82b6/II.42: L; SE
ἀπέχουσι τῶν κατὰ τὸ σῶμα ἑπιθυμίων ἀπασῶν καὶ καρτεροῦσι καὶ οὐ
παραδιδόσιν αὐταῖς ἑαυτοὺς 82c3/II.49: L; Pl

ὁ ὀρατόν 81c9/II.6; c10/7; 81d4/12; d4/12: R (j +s + r)
elκῶσ 81d5/II.13; d6/14; 81e3/20; 82a1/25; b5/41; b9/45: R (s + r + k)
πλανάσσαι 81d8/II.16; d9/17: R (s)
ἐνδεδωσιν 81e2/II.19; e2/19: R (s)
μελέτην 81c6/II.3; e3/20; e7/24; 82a9/33; b2/38 R (k)
φιλ... compounds:82b10/II.46; c1/47; c3/49; c6/52; c7/53; c8/54: R (s)
ἀπιόντι 82c1/II.47; c3/49; c8/54: R (s + r)

Passage III.

ὁ διακόσμων τε καὶ πάντων αἰτίας 97c2/III.3: P
πάντα κοσμεῖν καὶ ἐκαστὸν τιθέναι ταύτη ὅπῃ ἂν βέλτιστα ἔχει 97c5/III.6:
P; Pl
πάσχειν ἢ πολέμειν 97d1/III.10: P; SE
περὶ αὐτοῦ ἐκεῖνον καὶ περὶ τῶν άλλων 97d2/III.11: P

Appendix I
τὸ ἀριστον καὶ τὸ Βέλτιστον 97d3/III.12: P; Pl; SE
πλατεὶα ἔστιν ἢ στρογγύλη 97e1/III.18: P
τὴν αἰτίαν καὶ τὴν ἀνάγκην 97e2/III.19: P/ Pl
καὶ σελήνης καὶ τῶν ἄλλων ἀστρῶν 98a3/III.24: P
καὶ ποιεῖν καὶ πάσχειν ὁ πάσχει 98a6/III.27: P; R (j); SE
τὴν αἰτίαν καὶ κοινῇ πάσι τὸ ἐκάστῳ βέλτιστον 98b1/III.31: P
tὸ βέλτιστον καὶ τὸ χείρον 98b5/III.35: P

gίγνεται ἢ ἀπόλλυται ἢ ἔστι 97c7/III.8: L
ἡ εἶναι ἢ ἄλλο ὄτι οὐ πάσχειν ἢ ποιεῖν 97c8/III.9: L
τάχους τε περὶ πρὸς ἀλήθα καὶ τροπῶν καὶ τῶν ἄλλων παθημάτων 98a4/III.25: L

νοῦς 97c1/III.2; c3/4; c5/6; 97d7/16; 98a7/28: R (s + k)
διακόσμων 97c2/III.3; 97c5/6; c5/6; 98a8/29: R (j + s)
pάντων 98c2/III.3; c4/5; c5/6; 98b1/31; b2/32: R (s + k)
ἀῤῥετος 97c2/III.3; c2/4; 97c4/5; c6/7; d7/16; e2/19; 98a2/23; a8/29; b1/31: R (s + k)
βέλτιστα, ἀγαθός, ἀμείνων 97c6/III.7; c8/9; d3/12; d4/13; e2/19; e3/20; e4/21; 98a6/27; a9/30; b2/32; b3/33; b5/35: R (s + k)
ἐπεκδιηγήσεσθαι 97e1/III.18; e4/21: R (s)
παρεσκευάσμην 98a1/III.22; a3/24: R (s)
Ἀναξαγόρου ἀναγιγνώσκοντος 97b8/III.1: SE

Passage IV.

τι ζωὴ ἐναντίον ἢ οὐδέν 105d6/IV.9: P
Τὸ δὲ δίκαιον μὴ δεχόμενον καὶ ὁ ἄν μουσικὸν μὴ δέχεται 105d16/IV.19: P; SE
ἀμοσον, ἐφή, τὸ δὲ ἄδικον 105e1/IV.21: P; SE
σῶς καὶ ἀτηκτος 106a5/IV.36: P; Pl
οὐποτ' ἄν ἀπεσβέννυτο οὐδ' ἀπώλλυτο 106a9/IV.40: P; Pl; SE

Ψυχή 105c10/IV.3; d3/6; d10/13; e4/24; e6/26: R (s + k)
θάνατος 105e9/IV.13; e2/22; e3/23; e4/24; e6/26; e7/27: R (s + k)

Appendix I 277
ποικίλη, χρώμασιν διειλημμένη 110b7/V.3: P
λαμπροτέρων καὶ καθαρωτέρων 110c2/V.6: P; Pl; SE
τὴν δὲ ὅσῃ λευκῇ γύψου ἢ χίονος λευκοτέραν 110c4/V.8: P
πλειόνων καὶ καλλιόνων 110c6/V.10: P; SE
ὑδατός τε καὶ ἀέρος 110c8/V.12: P
οὐ τοιοῦτον εἶναι καὶ ἔτι τούτων καλλίω 110e1/V.21: P
κατεδηθησεμένοι οὐδὲ διεφθαρμένοι 110e3/V.23: P; Pl; SE
σπευδόνος καὶ ἀλμῆς 110e4/V.24: P
αἰσχῆ τε καὶ νόσους 110e6/V.26: P
tὸ ὑδρὸν τε καὶ ἡ θάλαττα 111a8/V.35: P
ἡμιν ἀηρ, ἐκεῖνοι τὸν αἰθέρα 111b1/V.36: P
ἀηρ τὸ ὑδατος αφέστηκεν 111b5/V.40: P
καὶ αἰθήρ ἀέρος 111b6/V.41: P
ἄλση τε καὶ λερά 111b7/V.42: P

τὴν μὲν γὰρ ἄλουργή εἶναι καὶ θαυμαστὴν τὸ κάλλος, τὴν δὲ χρυσοειδῆ,
τὴν δὲ ὅσῃ λευκῇ γύψου ἢ χίονος λευκοτέρα 110c3/V.7: L
dεύνθρα τε καὶ ἄνθη καὶ τοὺς καρποὺς 110d4/V.16: L
tὴν τὴν λειώττα τα καὶ τὴν διαφάειαν καὶ τὰ χρώματα καλλίω 110d6/V.18: L
σάρδια τε καὶ λάσπιδας καὶ σμιράγδους καὶ πάντα τὰ τοιαῦτα 110d8/V.20: L
καθαροὶ καὶ οὐ κατεδηθησεμένοι οὐδὲ διεφθαρμένοι 110e3/V.23: L; Pl
καὶ λίθους καὶ γῆ καὶ τοῖς ἄλοις ζύοις τε καὶ φυτοῖς 110e5/V.25: L
τούτους τε ἀπασι καὶ ἔτι χρυσῷ τε καὶ ἀργύρῳ καὶ τοῖς ἀλλοις αὖ τοῖς
tοιούτους\textsuperscript{110e7/V.27}: L

πολλὰ πλήθει καὶ μεγάλα καὶ πανταχοῦ τῆς γῆς \textsuperscript{111a2/V.29}: L
καὶ ὀψει καὶ ἀκοῇ καὶ φρονήσει καὶ πᾶσι τοῖς τοιούτοις \textsuperscript{111b4/V.39}: L
καὶ φήμας τε καὶ μαντελάς καὶ αὐθήσεις τῶν θεῶν καὶ τοιαύτας

συνουσίας \textsuperscript{111b8/V.43}: L

tόν γε ἥλιον καὶ σελήνην καὶ ἀστρα \textsuperscript{111c1/V.45}: L

ποικίλη \textsuperscript{110b7/V.3} and \textsuperscript{d1/13}; \textsuperscript{d2/14}: R (s + k)

φυσικά \textsuperscript{110d3/V.15}; \textsuperscript{d4/V.16}: R (j); SE

ἀφεστάναι \textsuperscript{111b5/V.40}; \textsuperscript{b5/40}; \textsuperscript{b6/41}: R (s)

Passage VI.

eὐχερῶς καὶ εὐκόλως \textsuperscript{117c4/VI.2}: P; Pl; SE

πίνουτά τε καὶ πεπωκότα \textsuperscript{117c7/VI.5}: R (j); SE; P

κλάων καὶ ἀγανακτῶν \textsuperscript{117d5/VI.12}: P

ἡσυχίαν τε ἄγετε καὶ καρτερεῖτε \textsuperscript{117e2/VI.17}: P; Pl

ἡσυχώνθημεν τε καὶ ἐπέσχομεν τοῦ δακρύειν \textsuperscript{117e3/VI.18}: P
tοῖς πόθας καὶ τὰ σκέλη \textsuperscript{117e7/VI.22}: P

ψύχοιτό τε καὶ πήγνυτο \textsuperscript{118a2/VI.25}: P; Pl

ἀπόδοτε καὶ μὴ ἀμελήσητε \textsuperscript{118a8/VI.31}: P

tὸ στόμα καὶ τοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς \textsuperscript{118a14/VI.37}: P

φρονιμωτάτου καὶ δικαιοτάτου \textsuperscript{118a17/VI.40}: P; SE

ἀρίστου καὶ ἀλλα ὑφονιμωτάτου καὶ δικαιοτάτου \textsuperscript{118a17/VI.40}: L

δακρύειν \textsuperscript{117c6/VI.4}; \textsuperscript{c8/6}; \textsuperscript{d3/10}; \textsuperscript{e4/19}: R (s + k)

κλάων \textsuperscript{117d5/VI.12}; \textsuperscript{d6/13}; \textsuperscript{e9/7}: R (s + k)

ἐκκαλυφαμενος \textsuperscript{118a6/VI.29}; \textsuperscript{a6/29}: R (j); SE

Appendix I 279
Appendix II
The Use of Pairs and Lists

My stylistic analysis has shown that Plato's incorporation of differing types and quantities of pairs and lists is an important feature of his style, which varies along with his different modes of writing. Thus, although pairs and lists are so essential and ubiquitous a feature of Greek literature that any clear-cut classification of usage or kinds would be impossible, a framework outlining at least some major types is indispensable to a discussion of Platonic style.

There has been limited discussion concerning specific types of pairs and lists in Greek literature, with Dover's points about 'multiples' perhaps the most thorough examination. However, even Dover has very broad categories of exclusion and only analyses usage in eleven prose passages, so that his findings, while interesting, are extremely selective. I have attempted to analyse pairs and lists so as to encapsulate the main classifications of different types as well as some very general tendencies. Since pairs and lists are such a common feature in all Greek genres, I will only comment on those genre/s or author/s whose usage of pairs and lists stands out from normal usage, either because of quantity or type.

1) Pairs

In very broad terms, pairs fall into three main groups: complementary; pleonastic; and oppositional. They are often reinforced by aural parallelism, and an important distinction can also be drawn between unusual and common or clichéd pairs.

While all types of pairs are well represented in verse, quantity is rarely exceptional, except perhaps for the large use of amplificatory pairs in certain plays of Sophocles.

---

1 E.g. Fehling, 1969, 271ff., deals with the 'einfacher Kontrast', a single pair of oppositional words; Smith, 1983, assesses the distribution and function of catalogue structure within the early Hippocratic treatises, and sees lists as indicative of an 'archaic mentality' (284), although his investigation is not purely stylistic.
2 See Dover, 1997, 144ff.
3 On the differences between Dover's 'multiples' and my pairs and lists, and on the limitations of Dover's analysis, see Ch.3, p.49, above.
and Aeschylus. In epic, one can note the emergence of clichéd pairs, such as “men/gods”, “slave/free”, “word/deed”, which then occur widely throughout later literature. Apart from this there are the gnomic antitheses of Hesiod, comprising short structures with at least two pairs of corresponding terms, seen by Fehling as a Hesiodic innovation. This construction is also very prominent in Theognis, Heraclitus, and Democritus, and is often seen as a root of rhetorical antithesis.

The most extensive use of pairs is found in rhetorical and philosophical/technical prose. Oratory tends to feature the widest variety, with much pleonasm and aural parallelism, particularly homoeoteleuton; the clearest examples, no doubt, belonging to the exaggerated style of Gorgias. In general, pairs with sound effects and/or pleonasm tend to occur in parts of speeches containing the highest concentration of ‘rhetorical’ features, notably introductions and conclusions, often in conjunction with antitheses. So, for example, Antiphon incorporates a wide variety of pairs, including quite elaborate pleonasms, especially in the highly ‘rhetorical’ Tetralogies. Usher talks about Isocrates’ predisposition towards ‘amplification involving words only’, like καλῶς καὶ τεχνικῶς, and even the so-called plain style of Lysias involves many pairs.

---

4 See Earp, 1944, 102ff, on the large numbers of ‘doublets’ in Sophocles’ early plays; and 103, on the ‘excess of doublets’ in Aeschylus (cf. Earp, 1948, 84); although even in these works, the numbers of such pairs are not especially high when compared with the works of Plato.
6 See, Fehling, 1969, 94.
7 E.g. Heraclit. B. 61, ἀλασσα ἔσσωρ καθαρώτατον καὶ μιμαιρήτατον, ἰχθύσιν μὲν πότιμον καὶ συμπρόν, ἀνθρώπινοι δὲ ἄποτον καὶ δέλθριον; cf. e.g. B. 67; 111; Democrit. B. 40, οὕτω σύμμαχον οὕτω χρήμασιν εὐθαμιονότεν ἀνθρώποι, ἀλλ' ὀρθοσύνη καὶ τελοφοσύνη; 44, 58, 65, and 68.
8 See e.g. Nordern, 1915, 19ff. on Heraclitus and Democritus; but cf. Kennedy, 1963, 33-4, who says that, although antithesis can be traced to this group of authors, its development is largely attributable to the Greeks’ ‘fondness’ for ‘contrasting figures’.
9 Although the figures for ‘multiples’ with two items in Dover, 1997, 146, only represent small samples of texts, it is interesting to note the exceptionally high numbers found in the samples from Gorgias, Demosthenes, and one of the Isocratean texts.
10 For a list of pairs with pleonasm and parasisos in Gorg. B. 11, see Jouanna, 1988, 21. Cf. Kennedy, 1963, on Gorgias and on the ancient writers on Gorgias.
11 E.g. Lys. 7.1: ἢ...κάλως καὶ τοῖς μηδεν ἀδικοῦσι καὶ τοῖς πολλὰ ἀμαρτικοῦσι.
12 E.g. Antiphon 1.1 and 1.27ff.
13 E.g. 4.6: δὲ μὲν ἐδρέων καὶ παροιμῶν πάντ' ἐδρα καὶ οἴδεν ἠμύνατο.
14 Usher, 1973, 43, who does, however, point out that numbers of instances are not vast (48). Cf. Adams, 1905, 355, on Demosthenes’ fondness for pleonasm.
Early philosophical texts also include many pairs. As well as the more varied instances in Heraclitus and Democritus, for example, the plainer prose of writers like Melissus often contains clichéd oppositional and sometimes complementary pairs of physical properties or cosmological terms.\(^{17}\) There are many lists, such as \(\epsilon \lambda \gamma \delta \ e \varepsilon \sigma \tau \iota \gamma \kappa \alpha \iota \nu \omega \rho \kappa \alpha \iota \pi \rho \kappa \alpha \iota \zeta \theta \omega \nu \tau \theta \eta \kappa \omega \zeta \)\(^{\circ}\), and \(\tau \theta \omega \nu \lambda \kappa \nu \iota \tau \alpha \nu \zeta \)\(^{\circ}\), a tendency which continues within the later philosophical treatises of writers such as Aristotle.\(^{19}\) In the more 'poetic' prose of Heraclitus and Democritus, pairs are still very common, but tend to be less clichéd.

Historiography is the one prose genre in which the occurrence of pairs is very limited, especially so in the narrative sections, but also elsewhere.\(^{20}\)

Finally, the Hippocratic treatises have especially large numbers of pairs, including lists of opposing items, similar to those found in the philosophers,\(^{21}\) but also more varied types, often with pleonasm and/or sound effects. Most pronounced in \textit{On Breaths},\(^{22}\) but found as well in texts like \textit{On Art} and \textit{Ancient Medicine},\(^{23}\) this is one of the features which has led to these works being associated with sophistic or epideictic writing.\(^{24}\) The speech of the doctor Eryximachus, in Plato's \textit{Symposium}, is also full of pairs, both clichéd sequences of oppositions,\(^{25}\) and many others which are

\(\text{Appendix II} \quad 282\)
complementary or pleonastic, and so can perhaps be seen to reflect the trend towards pairs in medical writers.

As the six selected passages show, Plato's own use of pairs varies enormously. In general, however, it seems safe to say that there is a strong tendency towards pairs throughout the Platonic dialogues, which involves pairs of all types.

Lists

Like pairs, lists are, to a certain degree, common to all genres. One might draw a basic though fairly vague distinction between the distribution of tripartite lists and those with more than three components. The latter often constitute catalogues of, for example, names, places, and physical symptoms, and occur in various forms in most genres of writing. The number of components is frequently large and there is rarely symmetry or aural parallelism. Such lists are found, for instance, in epic and hymns, history, medical writing, and Old Comedy. In Old Comedy polysyndeton is common, as is asyndeton, the latter also frequent in medical and geographical texts.

Tripartite lists are especially common in oratory, often with sound effects and/or ascending structure. This tendency towards groups of three is also reflected in tripartite clause structure. In addition, Aristophanes' works contains large numbers

---

26 E.g. ἐκ πλεονέξιας καὶ άκοσμίας (188b3-4); ζώτα... ὄμοιοιαν (186e1-2); φυλακὴν τε καὶ ίάσιν (188c1-2).
27 E.g. Hes. Th.211ff.; 243; 337; h.Hom.3.30; 19.6.
28 E.g. Th.6.27.2; X.An.1.2.16; 6.6.1; HG .2.3.10.
29 Hp.Aēr 3; 7; Morb.Sacr. 1; 2; 11; VM 3; Aff.39; 25. See also Smith, 1983, on the use of catalogue structure in early medical writing.
30 E.g. Ar.Eq.252; Pax653; Ra.187; Pherercr.338.6. On lists in Aristophanes see e.g. most recently, Silk, 2000, 126ff.
31 E.g. Ach.30-1; Nu.1074; 1076; 1508; Pa341; Av.489; 632; Ra.113; 619; Eq.137; Cratin.37, 1; 72, 1; 109, 3.
32 E.g Hp.Aff.40; Epid.1.2; 1.12; Alim.25and 26 (although, according to Joly, 136, this is a Hellenistic text).
33 See Ch.5, p.127, above. In addition, asyndeton, often with aural parallelism, is also sometimes used in rhetorical/sophistic displays, as with the large amount of asyndeton at the end of Agathon's speech in Pl.Smp.197d-e.
34 On ascending structure, see e.g. Silk, 2000, 130.
of tripartite lists, often occurring singly\textsuperscript{36} but sometimes within unusually long sequences of lists or other parallel structures.\textsuperscript{37}

Another pattern of list found frequently from the fifth century on in prose is the listing of two or more specific components followed by a more general one, such as $\chi εμώνα καλ \ θέρος καλ \ πάντας \ πόνους$,\textsuperscript{38} a feature common throughout the Platonic corpus.\textsuperscript{39}

Finally one interesting form of tripartite expressions involves the three components together forming a whole. Fehling says that these are a counterpart to polar oppositions, and mentions groups like Hesiod’s complementary $\xi\thetaο\varsigma \ μέν \ κα\ θηροι \ κα\ ο\iota\omicron\omicron\nu\omicron\omicron\omicron\varsigma$ $\pi\epsilon\tau\epsilon\mu\nu\omicron\omicron\omicron\varsigma$,\textsuperscript{40} or those comprising three alternatives which make up a whole. To this we might add certain expressions of time, such as Homer’s $τά \ τ' \ \varepsilon\omicron\omicron\tau\alpha$, $τά \ τ' \ \varepsilon\sigma\omicron\omicron\mu\epsilon\nu\alpha \ πρό \ τ' \ \varepsilon\omicron\omicron\tau\alpha$,\textsuperscript{41} a formulation used elsewhere in similar forms, especially in philosophical and technical literature.\textsuperscript{42}

\textsuperscript{36} E.g. Nu.308; 982; 1133; 1322; Eq.246; 181; Cratin.82.5; Pherecr.255.2.
\textsuperscript{37} E.g. Nu.415-427, where tripartite lists are found in alternate lines; Pax717; Ra.728. (These are similar to the lists of pairs, such as Nu.1012; 1074; Pax341; Av.489; Ra.113). Cf. Silk, 2000, 130.
\textsuperscript{38} X.Mem. 1.2.1. Cf. e.g. Isoc.15.234; Hp. V M 1, Isoc.19.36; 11.38; X.Mem. 1.1.15; Lys.1.50.
\textsuperscript{39} E.g. Euthphr.13c; Chrm.159d; 161e; 165e; 173b; Crito53a; Lach.192b; 185b; Men.74a; Gorg.450d; Rep.329a; 515a; 198a; Thit.153c; Soph. 220c; Philb.16a.
\textsuperscript{40} Op.277. Fehling, 1969, 276.
\textsuperscript{41} II.1.70.
\textsuperscript{42} See e.g. Meliss.B2; 7.3; Heraclit.B30; Hp.Prog.1. Lloyd, 1966, 91, suggests that this universalising function was also an aspect of the early use of pairs.

Appendix II

284
Bibliography


Bluck, R.S. 1952. ‘Plato *Phaedo* 69a-b’, *Classical Review* N.S. 2. 4-6.


Deichgräber, K. 1933. ‘Hymnische Elemente in der philosophischen Prosa der Vorsokratiker’, *Philologus* 88. 345-351.

*Bibliography*


Elton, M. 1997. 'The role of the affinity argument in the Phaedo', Phronesis 42. 313-16.


Enkvist, N.E. 1971. 'Style in some linguistic theories' in Chatman (ed.). 53-55.


Fish, S. 1980. Is There a Text in This Class? The Authority of Interpretive Communities. Cambridge, MA.


Forster, E.S. 1927. Isaeus. Cambridge, MA.


Fowler, R.L. 1982 'Aristotle on the period (Rhet. 3.9)', Classical Quarterly 33. 89-99.


Bibliography 288


Bibliography

289
Headlam, V. 1902. 'Metaphor, with a note on transference of epithets', Classical Review 16. 434-42.
Immerwahr, H.R. 1966. Form and Though in Herodotus. Chapel Hill, NC.


Kahn, C.H. 1983. 'Philosophy and the written word: some thoughts on Heraclitus and the early Greek uses of prose', in Robb (ed.). 110-124.


Kanayama, Y. 2000. 'The methodology of the second voyage and the proof of the soul's indestructibility in Plato's *Phaedo*', *Oxford Studies in Ancient Philosophy* 18. 41-100.


Kirk, G.S. 1983. 'Orality and Sequence', in Robb (ed.). 83-90.


*Bibliography* 291


Luce, J.V. 1944. ‘A discussion of Phaedo 69a6-c2’, Classical Quarterly 38. 60-64.


*Bibliography* . 293

*Bibliography*


Rutherford, R.B. 1988. 'Plato and lit. crit.', *Phronesis* 33. 216-224


Schiller, J. 1967. 'Phaedo 104-5: is the soul a form?', *Phronesis* 12. 50-8.


Bibliography


*Bibliography* 297


Bibliography 299